10.17625/NKE.2021.026

**NATIONAL UNIVERSITY OF PUBLIC SERVICE**
**THE DOCTORAL SCHOOL OF MILITARY SCIENCE**

**LUNA SHAMIEH**

# The Impact of Counterinsurgency on Human Security in Fragile States

**Supervisor**
**Professor ZOLTÁN SZENES, CSc**

---

**Budapest, 2020**

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

First and foremost, I am extremely grateful to my esteemed supervisor Prof. Zoltan Szenes for his invaluable advice, continuous support, and patience during my PhD study. My gratitude extends to my mentor Dr. Péter Kiss who not only had an impact on the topic covered but also supported through his careful reading of this thesis. Their immense knowledge, plentiful experience, and kind help and support made this achievement possible. My appreciation also goes to my family and friends for their encouragement and support all through my studies.

This work is dedicated to my mom and dad who were relentlessly awaiting this accomplishment.

# Table of Contents

# Introduction

> "…the world is entering a new era in which the very concept of security will change – and change dramatically. Security will be interpreted as: security of people, not just territory. Security of individuals, not just nations. Security through development, not through arms. Security of all the people everywhere – in their homes, in their jobs, in their streets, in their communities, in their environment" (Axworthy, 2001, p. 19).

This change in the traditional perception of security has resulted in a change in the perception of threats to security; it affected the way responses needs to be considered "with human security as the objective, there must be a stronger and more integrated response from the communities and states around the globe" (UN, 2009, p. 2). Also, it affected the perception of the impact of insecurity; according to Nef (1999) no region in the international community is immune to the risks that affect human security of others.

With this change in the perception of security, the question arises whether the traditional or new responses are able to respond to the real needs and are they able to achieve the human security. How do peacebuilding, peacemaking, counterinsurgency, and responsibility to protect ensure security of the people?

If the state is not able to fulfil the social contract, not able to provide stability and security and fails to provide human security; then who should provide it? Human security could be missing due to unwillingness of the government to provide those securities, and their focus on the political elite. When it is a matter of unwillingness how could this be approached? Human security could be missing due to global changes that are beyond the capability of the state. Whether it is public health problems including epidemics; environmental threats including global warming or hurricanes; or economic threats with increasing prices all have an impact on human security and on the ability of the state to ensure this security. When it is a matter of lack of capacity, how should this be tackled.

Can an outsider provide human security for the people if and when the state fails? Who should be those providers and how to organize this provision? Is humanitarian intervention the best solution? Is humanitarian assistance the answer? Does the responsibility to protect provide protection? And most importantly, what do the people need and what do they really want? And

eventually, are these solutions welcomed by the people? Does a divergent community structure with community cohesion greater than the national cohesion easily breaks in cases of external support? These are all questions that should be considered when discussing human security provided through counterinsurgency or responsibility to protect.

## Academic Problem

The key problem lies with the fact that counterinsurgency through third parties in fragile states adopts strategies that are state-centric rather than human-centric. It is focused on protecting, safeguarding and guiding the state from aggression rather than protecting the lives of citizens. This is especially the case when insurgency starts after external support of regime change. Such regime change creates states that are characterized by the following:

- A fragile state that is not able to protect its citizens
- A state that lacks the trust of the citizens
- A state that is providing support for the new political elite in the country

The counterinsurgency strategy in cases of insurgency following external support of regime change is state-centric. This strategy is highlighted by the following factors:

- Number of civilians killed through the interventions exceeded the number of civilians killed before the regime change or even during the start of the insurgency.
- The extensive use of military intervention that included destruction of civilian constructions and sites.
- The government's concern to prevent insurgents from overthrowing the government as a first priority, which is intensively supported by the external counterinsurgents.

## Research Questions

Despite the debate over the definition of human security, it is agreed that any denial of human basic needs lead to frustration and aggression, which drives more conflict. The state's inability or unwillingness to provide basic needs to all the people is a main driver to people's aggressiveness.

Counterinsurgency operations have started in Iraq and Afghanistan following regime change and in Libya after responsibility to protect and regime change measures, and they raise several

questions. How did those measures affect the people? How did they start? Why did they start? Is there any similar sequence in the events? Are there any similarities between the resultants of each case? All these questions will be addressed throughout the discussions of this thesis. Specifically, this thesis seeks to answer the following questions:

1. How do the divergent community[1] structure combined with counterinsurgency following regime change in fragile states under asymmetric warfare conditions affect human security?
    a. How they affect the level of conflict?
    b. How do they affect the number of people engaged in the conflict
    c. How do they lead to a vicious cycle?

2. How does the vicious cycle affect the cohesion of the community?
    a. Does the vicious cycle increase the influx of refugees and IDPs?
    b. Does the vicious cycle increase the possibility of separatism?

3. How does the vicious cycle affect human security?
    a. How does the vicious cycle affect personal security?
    b. How does the vicious cycle affect community security?
    c. How does the vicious cycle affect political security?

## Hypotheses

Based on the research questions, the thesis sets up the following hypotheses:

1. A divergent community structure combined with counterinsurgency following regime change in fragile states under asymmetric warfare conditions degrades human security dimensions.
    a. A divergent community structure combined with counterinsurgency following regime change in fragile states under asymmetric warfare conditions lead to increase in the level of conflict.

[1] Divergent community structure means countries that are examining nonhomogeneous structures with diverse religions, ethnicities, etc. where the community cohesion is stronger than the national cohesion and the loyalty to the state.

b. A divergent community structure combined with counterinsurgency following regime change in fragile states under asymmetric warfare conditions lead to an increase in the number of people engaged in the conflict.
c. A divergent community structure combined with counterinsurgency following regime change in fragile states under asymmetric warfare conditions lead to a vicious cycle.

2. The vicious cycle diminishes the level of cohesion within the community.
    a. The vicious cycle increases the influx of refugees and IDPs.
    b. The vicious cycle increases the possibility of separatism.

3. The vicious cycle creates different centers of mass and degrades human security.
    a. The vicious cycle degrades personal security.
    b. The vicious cycle degrades community security.
    c. The vicious cycle degrades political security.

## Research Methodology

The thesis investigates the impact of counterinsurgency on human security in a particular way that studies the structure of the community, and how the heterogeneous structure combined with a regime change and the engagement of multiple players creates a new structure that is completely different from the original community structure thus leading to a deteriorated human security.

A qualitative research approach was used to help understand the phenomena and the underlying relevant factors. This method ensures a multifaceted interpretative approach that ensures analyzing the full picture and considering all the underlying factors.

The literature review guided the researcher in building the metaphor under analysis and employing all the relevant factors and variables. The metaphor is used for the transference of concepts; transfer from natural science to the socio-political theories. It compares a holistic system of natural science to a holistic socio-political system. This comparison included definitions of the different relevant variables along with the relationship between those variables.

The case study approach helped in ensuring an intensive holistic description of the context, history and socio-political system. This approach helped in analyzing the case over a prolonged

period of time. It analyzed the structure and the context of the three cases under study including Iraq, Afghanistan and Libya. The study analyzes the sequence of events: the divergent community structure in each country, how these formed a heterogeneous structure with lack of human security, the start of insurgency, regime change, and expansion of insurgency, counterinsurgency, and finally state collapse.

Analysis of the cases is based on primary and secondary data. Primary data were gathered through observation and interviews conducted in each country. Secondary data included analysis of various reports and available data in the three countries.

The in-depth structured interviews were tailored to the participant's context and situation, where the researcher encouraged elaboration through probing questions whenever needed. Ethical considerations in conducting interviews were regarded; the researcher obtained the participants' verbal consent to be interviewed. Additionally, the researcher used pseudonyms when participants requested that their names and positions not be revealed.

The interviews were transcribed and the answers were categorized under the human security dimensions. Secondary data were also analyzed under the metaphor suggested. The relevant variables under the three cases were reflected in the metaphor, in order to help answer the research questions.

## Research Structure

The thesis is divided in two parts; the first part contains the literature review and the second part included the case studies. The first part consists of four chapters; the first three chapters represent the theoretical background and literature review of the two basic terms human security and counterinsurgency. The fourth chapter illustrates the metaphor and model that explains the impact of counterinsurgency on human security. The second part comprises the bulk of the substantive analysis that explains the application of the case studies on the metaphor suggested in the earlier chapters. It is composed of three chapters for the three case studies. The last chapter includes the conclusion and recommendations.

***Chapter one*** addresses the human security concept and the different perspectives of human security. As such, the chapter answers the following questions:

1. What is the definition of human security?
2. What are the different perspectives of human security?
3. What are the critiques of the human security concept?

4. What are the principles of human security?
5. What are the threats of human security?

***Chapter two*** addresses counterinsurgency. It includes two main parts, the first is on insurgency and examples of insurgency, and the second is on counterinsurgency and the various doctrines and strategies of counterinsurgency.

***The third chapter*** addresses providers of human security in fragile states. It discusses how and what is provided through the state, insurgents, counterinsurgents, humanitarian organizations, civil society organizations, humanitarian interventions, peacekeeping and peacebuilding missions. This chapter is then concluded by discussing the dynamics of the various players.

***The fourth chapter*** presents the metaphor that explains the impact of counterinsurgency. It is composed of two parts; the first part is the core theory that explains the impact of counterinsurgency on human security and community structure. The second part discusses the impact of counterinsurgency on the neighboring countries.

***The second part*** illustrates the description of the three case studies in three chapters; Iraq, Afghanistan and Libya. Each case study is discussed through the same mechanism with a presentation of the following: historical and political context, community structure, insurgency, counterinsurgency, vicious cycle, and the impact of the vicious cycle on human security. The same structure was used for the analysis of the three cases to allow comparison and lessons learnt from each case. The analysis gives the opportunity to understand the case study as a standalone case, while ensuring the comparison to illustrate the use of the suggested metaphor. The Final chapter is the Conclusion and Recommendations. In chapter eight conclusions are addressed in reference to the research questions and hypothesis. It also presents scientific findings resulting from the application of the metaphor and the analysis of the cases.

# PART ONE

# Chapter 1: Human Security

## Inception and Development of the Term

The term security is not a new concept; it has accompanied the development of states within the international system. Traditionally, the term security meant protection and sovereignty of states from external military threats. As such, it was an integral part of national security, and has always been referred to as territorial security through military means. Hence, the main concern of the concept was originated from national security, and protection from wars and conflict between nations. The question of whom to secure was not considered in this conceptual framework.

Traditionalists define security as a freedom from any objective military threat to the survival of the state. Stephen Walt, adherent of the realist school of thought, defines security as the "studies of the threat, use, and control of military force" (Walt, 1991, p. 212). The concept that is mainly focused on the principle of state sovereignty and that extends support and legitimacy to the instruments of the states.

Human Security as a term originated long before the 1994 UNDP report. Although not mentioned clearly, human security goes back to the cold war era. During the cold war, security was state centric though many attempts were made to give an inclusive, comprehensive and universal concept of security through different reports.

Franklin D. Roosevelt's 1941 speech commonly known as the "Four Freedoms" articulated a powerful vision of the world; most remarkedly the indirect pronouncement of human security. He said:

> *"We look forward to a world founded upon four essential human freedoms.*
> *The first is freedom of speech and expression – everywhere in the world.*
> *The second freedom is freedom of every person to worship God in his own way – everywhere in the world.*
> *The third is freedom from want – everywhere in the world*

*The fourth is freedom from fear – anywhere in the world"*[2]

At the start of the cold war era, the escalating threats to human existence became a main consideration, and accordingly the Universal Declaration of Human Rights was announced in 1947. The declaration recognized all members of the human family that protects security of the person. Although the charter did not mention human security in so many words, it included the dimensions of human security. Also, the disarmament and nuclear non-proliferation treaties of 1968, emphasizes human security deviating from the traditional security paradigm.

In the 70's the human security values and questions were addressed in the World Order Models Project (WOMP)[3]. The WOMP contained three core foundational themes relating directly to human security: the emphasis on fundamental values including peace, economic well-being, human rights and environmental balance; systematic solutions from a global context; and human centrality (Johansen, 1994).

Another significant acknowledgement of human security is the report of Willy Brandt World Bank Commission of 1978, titled "To ensure survival." In his introduction, Brandt wrote about means of survival "This not only raises traditional questions of peace and war, but also tries to overcome world hunger, mass misery and alarming disparities between the living conditions of rich and poor" (Brandt, 1978, p. 13). This illustrates the vital importance of focusing on the wider human centric rather than the state centric concept of security. He illustrates the threats including war, mass hunger, economic disaster, environmental catastrophes and terrorism. In the report of the Independent Commission on International Development Issues under the Chairmanship of Willy Brandt, Brandt mentioned that "we should not think only of reducing the traditional threats to peace, but also of the need to change from chaos to order" (Brandt, 1980, p. 3).

With the end of the Cold War, new thoughts of security matters grew rapidly. The Stockholm initiative on Global security and Governance published the "Common Responsibility in the 1990s" that discussed challenges to security out of the political rivalry borders including threats stemming from "failures in development, environmental degradation, excessive population growth…" (Stockholm Initiative, 1991, p. 17)

---

[2] Source: https://www.gilderlehrman.org/sites/default/files/inline-pdfs/Four%20Freedoms%20Speech%201941.pdf accessed on January 10, 2021

[3] WOMP is a social movement and academic experiment, initiated by professor Saul Mendlovitz and funded by the Carnegie Endowment for Peace. The underlying philosophy of the World Order Models Project (known affectionately as WOMP), was that world peace could not be created by any one nation. Instead, an "acceptable design for world order [must] be the product of contributions from many nations." Inspired by the insight of founder Harry Hollins, WOMP sought out new models of world order.

In the Post-Cold War era, the concept of security became multifaceted. Barry Buzan presented a holistic and broader concept of security. He defined the term with a wider and deeper perception, he expanded the concept from the exclusively military to the political, economic societal and environmental sectors, and from the centrality of the state to that of the individuals, social groups and the humanity in general. According to Buzan (1991, p. 18): "Security is a pursuit of freedom from threats" with reference to three levels: individuals, states and international systems.

The concept of human security was first formulated within the UN in the 1992 Agenda for Peace proposed by the UN Secretary General Boutros-Boutros Ghali, who stressed the role of the UN in "an integrated approach to human security to address root causes of conflict, spanning economic, social and political issues. (UN 2009, p. 55)

All these reports illustrated the human security idea; however, it is only in the 1990s that the term Human Security was articulated upon which much literature was developmed. The 1994 UNDP Human Development report was a key step in the development of the concept "human security". It initiated the idea that human security is freedom from fear and want. The report revealed that territorial security does not ensure individual security, it moved from the concern of the individual nation to the global perspective, and it helps in measuring and analyzing threats at a subnational level (Owen, 2008; King, Murray, 2002). As the report states:

> *For too long, security has been equated with the threats to a country's borders. For too long, nations have sought arms to protect their security. For most people today, a feeling of insecurity arises more from worries about daily life than from the dread of a cataclysmic world event. The world can never be at peace unless people have security in their daily lives. Future conflicts may often be within nations rather than between them. Human security is not a concern with weapons – it's a concern with human lives and dignity." (UNDP, 1994, p. 3)*

Mahbub Ul Haq, former Pakistani Finance Minister and consultant of UNDP, was associated with the idea since the beginning. The Human Development Index and Human Governance was prepared under his initiative. Moreover, his paper 'New Imperatives of Human Security' that was published in 1994, paved the way for the acceptance of the new concept. Haq identifies major threats against human security; these include drugs, disease, terrorism and poverty.

The Copenhagen School[4] also looked into this shift in the concept of security. The approach broadened the concept and included non-military threats to the states. It also, emphasized that non-military issues could be regarded as threats even if they are not considered as threats to the states, these are existential threats (Buzan et al. 1998).

The concept continued to develop and further reports were published. The concern of people as the referent for international peace and security is clearly evident in Kofi Annan report "We the People." The report distinguishes between the freedom from want and freedom from fear with a chapter on each (UN, 2000).

On December 2004 the report "A more Secure World: Our shared Responsibility" was presented by the UN High Level Panel on threats, Challenges and Change. The report presented the greatest threats to worldwide security in the twenty first century including "continued poverty, environmental degradation, terrorism, civil war, conflict between states, the proliferation of weapons of mass destruction and organized crime" (UN, 2004).

The reform package proposed by Kofi Annan to the General Assembly on March 2005 through his report "in Larger Freedom" was another step in the advancement of the concept human security. Although the term was not mentioned directly, it clearly emphasized the linkages between development, security and human rights. In his report Kofi Annan indicated that although poverty and denial of human rights are not the causes of civil war, they do increase the risk of instability and could have catastrophic consequences (Kofi, 2005). The report stressed three freedoms: freedom from want, freedom from fear, and freedom to live in dignity (UN, 2005).

As noted in General Assembly Resolution 66/290, "human security is an approach to assist Member States in identifying and addressing widespread and cross-cutting challenges to the survival, livelihood and dignity of their people." It calls for "people-centered, comprehensive, context-specific and prevention-oriented responses that strengthen the protection and empowerment of all people." (UNTFHS)

The United Nations Trust Fund for Human Security (UNTFHS) was established in 1999 shortly after the UNDP Human Development report. The UN Trust Fund works with diverse partners and governments in addressing the needs and vulnerabilities of local communities, their projects help "advance empowerment and capacity building measures that increase the resilience of vulnerable communities and people." (UNTFHS)

[4] The Copenhagen School of security studies is a school of academic thought with its origins in international relations theorist Barry Buzan's book People, States and Fear: The National Security Problem in International Relations, first published in 1983. The Copenhagen School places particular emphasis on the non-military aspects of security, representing a shift away from traditional security studies.

A UN General Assembly resolution (66/290) provided a consensus in 2012 on a broad definition of human security. According to the resolution the General Assembly agree that the "human security approach identifies and addresses widespread and interrelated challenges to the survival, livelihood, and dignity of their people." Based on this, a common understanding of human security was agreed upon: "the right of people to live in freedom and dignity, free from poverty and despair."[5]

## Human Security Definition

Debate about the definition of the term "human security" started as soon as it was introduced, this included scholars who were reluctant to accept the concept as a new one, and especially since for some it was considered the same as human development, and for some as human rights. However, no single singly definition is accepted. Moreover, there has never been a consensus about the general framework of the concept for measurement purposes.

The term security comes from the French word *sécurité* or Latin *securitas*. The English Oxford Dictionary defines security as the "state of being free from danger or threat." According to the Meriam Webster Dictionary it is the "means or method of defending.' In general, most dictionaries define security as freedom (from danger, deprivation etc.) while others define it as a state or condition.

The term security by itself is contested; in its generic sense security means safety from and protection against danger. Traditionally, it has been equated with the threats to a country's border, and the tools were arms to protect security. The term was monopolized by the International Relations field of study with a narrow perspective related to military power (Møller, 2000). Security may be expanded to include the defense of a nation, it could also imply crime prevention, security technology and loss prevention (Brooks, 2010), which illustrates the ambiguity and vagueness of the term. However, two features are shared by most definitions of security; the first includes some form of threats that endanger certain objects' survival, and the second is cherished values (Williams, 2008).

The term "human" in human security was mainly taken as a contrast between individual and the state. For Mahbub Al-Haq, the main founder of the current human security discourse, "human" refers to human beings rather than simply individuals (Lama, 2010), which helps

[5] UN Trust Fund, UN General Assembly Resolutions and Debates, and Reports of the Secretary-General on Human Security. Available at: https://www.un.org/humansecurity/reports-resolutions/ (Accessed: January 15, 2019)

answer the question “security to whom?” or “security for whom?” The human in this term is not isolated individual, but are social entities seeking for survival.

According to the UNDP Human Development Report of 1994 “Human security can be said to have two main aspects. First, it means safety from such chronic threats such as hunger, disease and repression. And, second, it means protection from sudden and hurtful disruptions in the patterns of daily life - whether in homes, in jobs or in communities” (UNDP, 1994, p. 23). The list of threats considered included: economic security, food security, health security, environmental security, personal security, community security and political security (UNDP, 1994).

In the International Workshop on Human Security, the Secretary General Kofi Anan defined human security “in its broadest sense, embraces far more than the absence of violent conflict. It encompasses human rights, good governance, access to education and health care and ensuring that each individual has opportunities and choices to fulfill his or her potential. Every step in this direction is also a steep towards reducing poverty, achieving economic growth and preventing conflict. Freedom from want, freedom from fear, and the freedom of future generations to inherit a healthy natural environment (these are the interrelated building blocks of human- and therefore national- security)” (Kofi, 2000, para 4).

The trust fund later adopted the definition of human security presented by the Commission on Human Security in their report “Human Security Now” In 2001, where human security seeks;

> *“…to protect the vital core of all human lives in ways that enhance human freedoms and human fulfilment. Human security means protecting fundamental freedoms – freedoms that are the essence of life. It means protecting people from critical (severe) and pervasive (widespread) threats and situations. It means using processes that build on people’s strengths and aspirations. It means creating political, social, environmental, economic, military and cultural systems that together give people the building blocks of survival, livelihood and dignity.” (CHS 2003, p. 4)*

Emma Rothschild (1995) explained the new approach to security as an extension in four dimensions. The first dimension is the downward extension “from the security of nations to the security of groups and individuals.” The second is the upward extension “from the security of nations to the international systems.” The third extended horizontally explaining the entities cannot be secured with the same means; hence, it extends “from military to political, economic,

social, environmental or human security." And the fourth is the "political security for ensuring security" in all directions "from national states, including upwards to international institutions, downwards to regional or local government, and sideways to nongovernmental organizations, to public opinion and the press, and to the abstract forces of nature or of the market." (p. 55)

Different definitions focused on the freedom from need and vulnerability. Nef (1999) indicated that human security is the security of environment, economy, society, politics, and culture. King and Murray (2002) defined human security as an individual's "expectation of a life without experiencing the state of generalized poverty." Hammerstad (2000, p. 395) indicated that "according to both 'critical' and 'human' security approaches, security is about attaining the social, political, environmental and economic conditions conducive to a life in freedom and dignity for the individual." According to Leaning and Arie (2000, p. 37) "Human security is an underlying condition for sustainable human development. It results from social, psychological, economic, and political aspects of human life that in times of acute crisis or chronic deprivation protect the survival of individuals, support individual and group capacities to attain minimally adequate standards of living, and promote constructive group attachment and continuity through time." Van Ginkel and Newman (2000, p. 79) defined human security in policy terms as "an integrated, sustainable, comprehensive security from fear, conflict, ignorance, poverty, social and cultural deprivation, and hunger resting upon positive and negative freedoms." Owen and Taylor (2004, p. 383) suggested that human security is "the protection of vital core of all human lives from critical and pervasive environmental, economic, food, health, personal and political threats."

Other important debates not only consider the definition of the term but also the added value of the term (Paris, 2001). Debates are considering what this concept has added to the field of security, to the field of Human Development and even to the field of human rights. The most important agreement that has been in place is that human security is about security of people. Paris classifies security studies into studies concerned exclusively with military threats and studies of non-military security threats including economic deprivation or environmental crisis. Studies also, according to Paris, conceive states as the core unit of analysis, while others conceive individuals and groups as the main unit of analysis. Hence, he illustrates four types of security: national security (military focused on states), redefined security (military and non-military focused on states), intrastate security (military focused on individuals and groups), and human security (military and non-military focused on individuals and groups).

The World Bank produced a constructive contribution to the concept, although it did not directly mention the term human security. The 'World Development Report 2000/2001,

identifies three pillars of poverty reduction initiatives: empowerment, security, and opportunities. Security in the report addresses "the risk and vulnerability which poor nations will increasingly face in the global economy, and which the poor in poor nations have always faced and which traps them into poverty. At the macro level this will require national and international action to mitigate risks and then to react to crisis when they do occur, in a manner which protects the poorest. At the micro level this will require a whole range of interventions which enhance community level schemes, market-based schemes and national level schemes where appropriate." (WB, 2001, p. 13)

King & Murray (2002) initiated a new concept called years of individual human security (YIHS). It is the "expected number of years of life spent outside the state of generalized poverty." He suggested that this is a four-dimensional factor; these include income, health, education, and democracy and political freedom. Generalized poverty occurs when an individual falls below the threshold of any key domain of human well-being.

***Wide vs Narrow Definitions of Human Security***

The different definitions of human security are divided into two main categories: the broad and the narrow definitions. The difference between these two approaches is illustrated through answering the three main questions: Security of whom? Security from what? And security by what means?

The question of security for whom is answered similarly amongst the different approaches. The main concern is the people, it is not a state-centric, but individual centric. The answer to the question of "security from what" is the main difference between the two approaches. The narrow approach perceives violence as the main threat to security; the concern is freedom from fear (King & Murray, 2002). While the broad approach perceives that threats to security expand to those affecting survival, well-being and dignity; it includes freedom from fear, freedom from want and freedom to live in dignity (Tadjbakhsh, 2014). "Security by what means" varies since the threats vary. For the narrow approach that focuses on freedom from fear, the main mechanism is arms and humanitarian intervention. While for the broad approach, the main mechanism is humanitarian intervention, but also it is concerned about prevention protection and empowerment. It is tackled through comprehensive policies, and not only military means (Tadjbakhsh, 2014).

## Governmental Definitions of Human Security

The end of Cold War has affected the international environment and foreign policy of states, on the other hand new threats including political and economic instabilities have risen. All these challenges have shifted the perspective of states towards

Although the human security concept was proposed as a human centered rather than a state centered; the concept was adopted in foreign policies of governments faster than civil society organizations (Tadjbakhsh & Chenoy, 2009, p. 28). The first governments to adopt human security were Japan and Canada. However, these middle powers adopted human security as a pillar in their foreign policy rather than their domestic policy.

***Japan: Freedom from want***

Shortly after the UNDP presented the concept of human security; the Japanese adopted the concept in its foreign policy. The concept is in line with Japan constitution, which stipulates that "we recognize that all peoples of the world have the right to live in peace, free from fear and want."[6] Article 9 of the constitution also prohibits the use of force to solve disputes.[7] The concept is also in line with the policies adopted in Japan. This is apparent in the Prime Minister's Report of 1979, which stated that "comprehensive security means that both military and non-military aspects are considered regarding objectives and methods when formulating national security policy" (Wan, 1995). It is also apparent in Japan's enactment of the International Peace Cooperation Law (IPCL) and the country's participation in, and contribution to the United Nations Peacekeeping Operations (UNPKO) and humanitarian relief missions (Cornelis, 2006). The concept was also in compliance with the Official Development Assistance (ODA) policy of Japan, which was announced by the Prime Minister Tomiichi Murayama's to the UN General Assembly Copenhagen World Summit for Social Development in 1995. The policy was referred to as "human-centered", where social development was the focus for the ODA (Fukushima, 1999). This was also underpinned by Ryutaro Hashimoto who spoke of security of human beings at the UN General Assembly in 1997. Japan has been one of the leading countries to provide funding for human security, driven by its desire to attain a permanent seat in the UN (Tadjbakhsh, Chenoy, 2009).

[6] The constitution of Japan. https://japan.kantei.go.jp/constitution_and_government_of_japan/constitution_e.html (Accessed: 17 April 2019).
[7] ibid

The financial crisis in Asia erupted in 1997, and had a strong impact on the policies of the Government of Japan. As a result, in 1998, the prime minister Keizo Obuchi launched the foreign policy and program of human security, which considers all threats to human survival whereby using the more comprehensive definition of human security.

Human security was described in the 1999 Diplomatic Bluebook in a manner that covers all threats to human survival, daily life and dignity; and strengthens efforts to face those threats. The 2002 Bluebook witnessed a change in the policy to include "realization of the abundant potential inherent in each individual" (Cornelis, 2006, p. 57), which included the broad development of human beings, i.e. more emphasis on, and broadening of, the 'fear from want.' This was also coined through the establishment of the Commission on Human Security (CHS) and setting up the largest trust fund in the UN (Tadjbakhsh, Chenoy, 2009). In 2003, the recommendations of the CHS led to the creation of the Advisory Board on Human Security (ABHS) aiming at advising the UN Secretary-General on the management of the UNTFHS (Remacle, 2008). With its comprehensive definition, the Government of Japan has focused on the developmental and economic aspect of human security, where it played with the help of other UN agencies the dominant role in the ABHS.

The Japanese conceptualization of human security strength lies in its holistic nature to accomplish sustainability in creating human security; which is the perspective of "freedom from want" that is at the center of the UNDP's definition. However, it remained a foreign policy rather than a policy targeting their citizens. The framework of this policy includes peacemaking, post-conflict peacebuilding, and the dispatch of troops for humanitarian relief (ER, 2006). Collaboration with other governments in practice did not take off, although intentions were as such. Japan established the Friends of Human Security in 2006 that focused on multilateral and not bilateral cooperation (Edström, 2011).

Japan's failure in its campaign for a permanent seat on the Security Council affected its drive for human security (Edström, 2011). However, Japan continues to pursue human security as a pillar of its foreign policy (Thaemar & Tana, 2015).

### *Canada: Freedom from fear*

Canada was the first country to adopt human security in its foreign policy. Given the transnational security implications, Canada's Minister of foreign affairs, Axworthy saw the need to adopt the refined concept of security, where he identified human insecurity as a potential threat to Canadian security. This policy development was in conjunction with the International security.

The Axworthy (1997, p. 184) presented his perception of human security in his article "Canada and Human security":

> *"The forces influencing human security are interrelated and mutually reinforcing. At a minimum, human security requires that basic needs are met, but it also acknowledges that sustained economic development, human rights and fundamental freedom, the rule of law, good governance, sustainable development and social equity are as important to global peace as arms control and disarmament...lasting stability cannot be achieved until human security is guaranteed."*

Core issues that were adapted in the Canadian foreign policy were the establishment of a peacebuilding capacity, the banning of landmines, the reduction of the flow of small arms and conflict commodities, protecting children against sexual abuse, child labor, and violence, the promotion of international criminal justice, and later on a renewed approach to development assistance, in addition to promotion of rules-based trade to spur economic development (Hampson et al, 2002). To this end Canada's strategy was based on developing policy initiatives and building coalitions with other countries and institutions (Remacle, 2008). With this definition Canada included both the "freedom from fear" and freedom from want" aspects of the definition; however, it ended up to be freedom from fear (MacLean 2000). In practice Canada narrowed its definition of human security due to the lack of capacity and most importantly to strengthen its national identity especially after the domestic challenge and the failed Quebec referendum (Lui, 2012: p151).

Within the narrow definition, Canada has played an effective role in the development of human security. Canada played a pivotal role to establish the International Criminal Court and contributed to its development. This started by chairing a coalition of state called the "like-minded group" that helped to motivate the international community to adopt it. It also contributed to a United Nations Trust Fund that enabled lesser developed countries in ICC negotiations (Oosterveld, 2018).

The failure of the UN in Rwanda in 1994 led to a re-evaluation of the principle of state sovereignty vis-à-vis the obligation of the UN to maintain security. At the G-8 meeting in Cologne in 1999, Axworthy illustrated the following:

> *"Human security is going to have to be reconciled with the principle of non-intervention in the internal affairs of states. Kosovo illustrates this particular contradiction well. … The norm of non-interference in the internal affairs of other states remains basic to international peace and security, and the intervention in Kosovo must not be held as a precedent justifying intervention anywhere, anytime, or for any reason. However, in cases of extreme abuse, as we have seen in Kosovo and Rwanda, among others, the concept of national sovereignty cannot be absolute" (Bosold &Werthes, 2005, p. 113).*

As a result, the Canadian government initiated the creation of the 'International Commission on Intervention and State Sovereignity'(ICISS). The final report in 2001 was titled 'The Responsibility to Protect,' where humanitarian intervention was discussed as per the Canadian definition of human security (Bosold &Werthes, 2005).

The change in government in 2006 did witness a change in the perception of human security. Human security was removed; as a foreign policy issue. As a result, Canada's human security website was removed; the Human Security Policy Division was renamed Human Rights and Democracy Bureau. However, despite these changes, Canada continued its initiatives to protect human beings from threats; Canada was involved in Libya intervention under the pretext of 'the responsibility to protect' (Petrasek & Tiessen, 2016).

Human security has helped both Japan and Canada to become members of the G-8 and to strengthen their international status. This attainment could not have been possible given the regional context of each; the financial crisis in Asia for Japan, and the marginalized role within NATO for Canada (Remacle, 2008).

**Europe**

The interest in human security in the EU did not start in the early 1990s, only with some minimal individual initiatives. Sweden took with Japan the initiative to start the commission on Human Security. While Canada with the help of Norway collaborated with Austria, Greece, Ireland, the Netherlands and Slovenia to take part in the Human Security Network (Remacle, 2008).

In 1999, the European states changed from the status of justifying the absence of military dimension in the European Commission to the status of justifying the need to develop a military arm in accordance to the 1999 Cologne and Helsinki meetings of the European Council (Remacle, 2008).

In December 2003, the European Council agreed on a European Security Strategy under the name "A Secure Europe in a Better World: European Security Strategy." The strategy defined five key threats: terrorism, the proliferation of weapons of mass destruction, regional conflicts, failing states, and organized crime. The Strategy had three main objectives. The first objective addresses the threats including local and distant threats, by pursuing the EC "policies against arms proliferation, in part by strengthening international treaties and their verification provisions… Restoring good government promotes democracy and is a of tackling organized crime" (EC, 2003, p. 5). The second objective emphasizes on building security in the international neighborhood, these include neighbors who are engaged in violent conflict and weak states. The third objective is international order based on effective multilateralism, which requires stronger international society, well-functioning international institutions, and international order (EC, 2003). The strategy was then expanded in 2008 and again in 2016. The strategy emphasized that the root cause of insecurity is instability which needs to be addressed through development, human rights and good governance. The strategy also called for practical and principled way in peacebuilding and for fostering human security through multilateralism. In September 2004, at the request of the EU Secretary General Javier Solana, an independent group released "A Human Security Doctrine for Europe;" a doctrine for the implementation of the European Security Strategy. The doctrine comprises three elements: a set of seven principles (primacy of human rights, clear political authority, multilateralism, a bottom-up approach, regional focus, the use of legal instruments and the appropriate use of force), a human security response force, and a new legal framework to govern decisions and operation.

## Elements and principles of human security

Human security is a shift from the traditional state-centric perception of security concerned about protection from military aggression to the human centric perception concerned about empowerment and protection from threats that cut across the different aspects of human life.
Human security integrates three freedoms. ***Freedom from fear*** refers to protecting individuals from violence threats that may arise from the state, other groups, other individuals or other states. ***Freedom from want*** refers to protecting individuals so that they satisfy their basic needs. ***Freedom to live in dignity***, which refers to improved quality of life and welfare of individuals. The UNDP report (1994), presents four characteristics of human security: universal, interdependent, preventive and people centered. ***Universality*** means that human security is relevant to all people everywhere in rich and poor nations. ***Interdependent*** refers to the

interdependency of the impact of insecurity; when the security of people is endangered the region and all nations are likely to get engaged; many threats travel the globe as in the case of terrorism, pollution, trafficking etc. ***Prevention-oriented*** reflects the importance of addressing the root causes of insecurities to ensure protection and empowerment; human security is best ensured through early protection. The fourth characteristic is ***people-centered*** which means that the individual is placed at the center of analysis.

The United Nations Trust Fund for Human Security described five characteristics or features of human security; these include: people-centered, multi-sectoral, comprehensive, context-specific, and prevention oriented. C***omprehensiveness*** requires cooperative responses from different actors and multi-sectoral interventions taking into consideration security, development and human rights. ***Context specific*** characteristics refer to the fact that insecurities vary across different settings and as such solutions vary according to these contexts (UN, 2009).

There are seven dimensions of human security, these include: (UNDP, 2014)

1. ***Economic security*** requires an assured basic income employment and access to social safety net for individuals. Threats within this category ranges from persistent poverty to unemployment.
2. ***Food security*** requires that all people at all times have both physical and economic access to basic food. It is about the access to basic nutrition and food supply. The threats here include hunger and famine.
3. ***Health security*** aims at guaranteeing protection from diseases and unhealthy lifestyles, this implies a wide range of threats considered within: access to safe water, living in a safe environment, access to health services, access to safe and affordable family planning and basic support during pregnancy and delivery, prevention of HIV/AIDS and other diseases and to have basic knowledge to live a healthy life. Threats include: deadly infectious diseases along with unsafe food, malnutrition and lack of access to basic health care.
4. ***Environmental security*** aims to protect people from the short and long-term ravages of nature, man-made threats in nature and deterioration of the environment. This covers issues related to prevention of water pollution, prevention of air pollution, prevention from deforestation, irrigated land conservation, prevention of natural hazards such as droughts, floods, cyclones, earthquakes, etc. threats include environmental degradation, resource depletion, natural disasters and pollution.

5. ***Personal security*** aims at protecting people from physical violence from the state, sub-state actors or other states; from individuals or groups; from domestic abuse or from predator adults. Personal threats include physical violence, crime, terrorism, domestic violence, and child labor.
6. ***Community security*** aims at protecting people from loss of traditional relationships and values and from sectarian ethnic violence. It covers conservation of traditional and cultures, languages and commonly held values. Community threats include inter-ethnic, religious and other identity-based tensions.
7. ***Political security*** aims at ensuring political participation and protecting against political repression including freedom of speech, freedom of press. It is also concerned with protection of human rights and well-being of all people.

These seven types of threats are interconnected in a way that one threat can cause the other and that these threats can have negative implications on the regional and international security.

The two main strategies to achieve human security are protection and empowerment. Protection refers to the "norms, processes and institutions required to protect people from pervasive threats" (UN, 2009, p. 8). Protection implies a "top-down" approach, where the states have the responsibility to provide protection measures for their people against threats in a systematic, comprehensive and preventive ways. Also, international and regional organizations, civil society organizations, and nongovernmental actors also play an important role in protection.

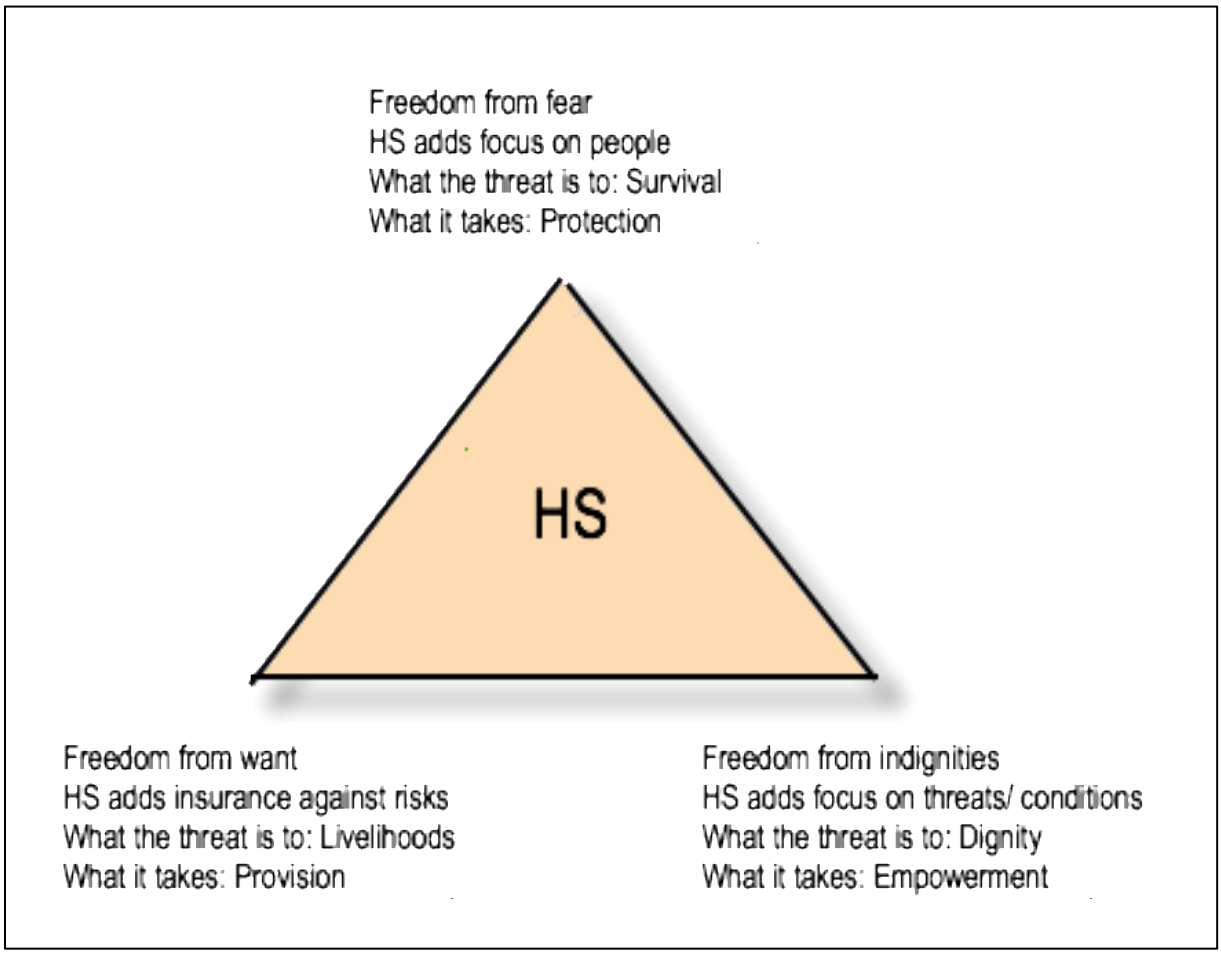
Empowerment refers to "strategies that enable people to develop their resilience to difficult situations" (UN, 2009, p. 8). Empowerment implies a bottom-up approach. Bottom up approach of human security attempts to explicitly involve people living in conflict areas in the human security policies (Faber, 2008). Empowerment means enabling individuals to participate in solutions to ensure human security for themselves and for others. Combining the top-down and the bottom up approaches builds a mechanism that enables governments to reflect people's needs in policy making and then deliver services that respond to their needs (JICA, 2010).

"Human Security complements state security, strengthens human development and enhances human rights" (CHS, 2003, p. 2) Human security complements state security with its concern to include individuals and communities, with its concern to consider a wider range of threats, with a wide range of actors and with a concern to more than protection but also empowerment and inclusion (CHS, 2003, p. 3).

The concepts of human development and human security are interrelated. "Human development focuses on absolute levels of deprivation whereas human security emphasizes the risk of sudden

changes for the worse" (Tadjbakhsh, 2014, p. 50) Human development seeks to expand choices and opportunities with a focus on 'growth with equity' (CHS, 2003). Human security and development are both concerned with the basic freedoms with similar goals and different scopes. "The human security concept draws attention not just to levels of achievement, but to securing gains made by deliberately focusing on downside risks" (Tadjbakhsh, 2014, p. 50).
Human security and human rights clearly overlap. Human security identifies rights at stake, whereas human rights promotes human security (CHS, 2003). Human security and human rights are similar in the sense that they both aim for human dignity, concerned about morality and are applicable with universality of the term. However, there are many differences between the two. Human rights are legally binding; however, human security warns about threats and allows prioritization.

Figure 1: **Human Security, Development and Human Rights**




Source: Tadjbakhsh, 2014, p.52.

According to Tadjbakhsh (2014, p. 52) human security is a convergence of the security, human rights and development. She visualizes human security in a triangle formed by the three

approaches. She describes what human security adds to each approach: ads focus on people in security, adds focus on threats in human rights, and adds insurance against risks in human development.

## Critiques of Human Security

As the concept of human security has evolved so has criticism from different perspectives of the concept increased. However, despite this criticism, the popularity and dissemination of the concept was not affected, it maintained its momentum on different levels. The concept is a leading approach to identify problems, diagnosis, prioritizations, responses and evaluations. It has spread into various fields of study including gender studies, environmental studies, and migration research. It has also framed peace efforts that go beyond military interventions. However, the concept has received criticism from different scholars and different schools.

Criticism of human security could be categorized according to the following:

***1. Lack of accurate definition***

One of the major critiques about human security is related to the definition of the concept. Some scholars claim that since there is no consensus about the definition the field of study loses its credibility. Extreme critiques targeted the concept as a whole, as is the case with Buzan and Paris, while moderate critiques targeted the broad perspective of the concept (Owen, 2004).

Paris argued that human security lacks a precise definition; it is "like sustainable development - everyone is for it, but few people have a clear idea of what it means. Existing definitions of human security tend to be extraordinary expansive and vague, encompassing everything from physical security to psychological well-being… human security is powerful precisely because it lacks precision" (Paris, 2001, p. 88). Similarly, Newman (2010) referred to human security as normatively attractive and analytically weak. Others criticized the weakness of measuring the threats and the outcomes (King & Murray, 2002).

However, lacking an accurate and firm definition does not imply a lack of utility, novelty or importance of the term. Comparing the term with sustainable development indicates that despite of the vagueness and critiques, the term is utilized and is part of policy making for governments, NGOs and international organizations.

***2. Old wine in a new bottle***

Main critiques of human security indicated that the term brought nothing new; it is only the old wine of 'human rights' in a new bottle 'human security.' Others consider it a repackaging of a liberal humanitarian order. According to Krause (2004, p. 367) it as "a loose synonym for bad things that can happen". It is an inter-disciplinary research that requires coherent and interconnected solutions from different actors to accomplish the security of the individuals and communities within the state.

***3. No possibility to measure***

The concept's subjectivity and lack of consensus of the definition, makes it impossible to measure. However, "a human security measurement will always be context-specific… applicable indicators and norms will emerge as concept is integrated into policy making" (Tadjbakhsh & Chenoy, 2009, p. 67).

***4. Critiques on policy grounds – lack of prioritization power***

Human security was criticized due to its inability to be incorporated on a policy level. Labeling all potential harms as security threats makes it impossible to prioritize political actions and interventions. The nature of the concept doesn't allow policy makers to prioritize between competing goals and security needs (Paris, 2001); if all the threats are considered then we are prioritizing everything (Khong, 2001). As such it is hard to apply on policy level.

However, human security has been built on the notion that threats are complex, interconnected, interrelated and interdependent. Hence, analysis of the threats should be context-specific with different actors taking part in addressing those threats. It should be addressed using a bottom-up approach as well as top-down approach aiming not only at protecting but also empowering individuals and communities.

***5. A Matter of hegemonic interest of Middle Powers***

Some critiques of human security reflect the fact that adopting human security as a foreign policy for some was a matter of hegemonic interest. Soeya (2004) said "what is peculiarly Japanese in Japan's context and approach to human security is that the motivation is closely connected with the desire to play a bigger role in international society under the assumption of proactive pacifism.

Critiques also targeted Canada's foreign policy and human security agenda. Most critiques considered that Canada's promotion of human security was due to the lack of power and capacity. Bosold & Bredow (2006) labeled Canada's foreign policy as "pinchpenny diplomacy"

and pulpit diplomacy, due to the willingness to minimize efforts and budget while maintaining a major role in the international politics.

However, having the political interest doesn't contradict the fact that efforts have been made in support of human security initiative. Also, having worked on humanitarian and economic themes doesn't contradict with security interventions, rather it complements them. These countries have dealt with areas of conflict not as source of insecurity but as a means to security.

***6. Human security is a threat to state sovereignty***

Some critiques of human security claim that securitizing threats is a justification for continued surveillance and engagement, it may increase the potential of military interventions and impose military solutions, and for some it is a neo-colonial means.

However, human security is not in favor of military solutions. Human security addresses the root causes of the conflict which are in most cases non-military interventions. Although R2P[8] is a means created by the international community to prevent human catastrophe: "the failure of past military interventions encourages a move towards preventive, non-military enforcement of human security" (Tadjbakhsh & Chenoy, 2009, p. 64). Also, if the state is not able to discharge its responsibility of intervention, then intervention enables it to do so. This means that human security is not an infringement on the sovereignty of the state. Considering the wide range of security threats; however, various actors, including international organizations, civil society and the state, must assume roles in their resolution.

Despite all the criticism, human security and its impact are still apparent, especially in the advancement of the peacekeeping. It is integrated clearly in the Ottawa Treaty (1997) banning anti-personnel mines; the Rome Treaty[9] (1998) creating the International Criminal Court; the Security Council resolutions (2009) on Children and Armed Conflict and on Women, Peace and Security; and the UN General Assembly's endorsement (2005) of the Responsibility to Protect (R2P). Moreover, the UN Trust Fund for Human Security has funded more than 200 projects since its establishment all aiming freedom from want (Sadako, 2013). Additionally, as has been discussed in section 3 of this chapter, the EU has developed its security strategy based on the human security principle of "freedom from fear and freedom from want." Even the NATO is also addressing human security principle "freedom from fear" through the R2P. Also,

[8] The Responsibility to Protect (R2P or RtoP) is a global political commitment which was endorsed by all member states of the United Nations at the 2005 World Summit in order to address its four key concerns to prevent genocide, war crimes, ethnic cleansing and crimes against humanity.

[9] Ottawa and Rome treaties were signed before the Human Security Network started lobbying; however, Governments that became network members helped in this process.

echoing the human security principles, the 2030 Agenda for Sustainable Development assures a "world free of poverty, hunger, disease and want… free of fear and violence… with equitable and universal access to quality education, health care and social protection…"[10]

## International Security and human security

To understand the shift in security studies to human security and to a broadening perspective of security, this section provides a description of the relationship between theories of international security and human security.

### Realism

Realism is an old approach to security that dates back to Thucydides. The theory is very rich and has evolved overtime. Realists view the international system as anarchic and power as the main feature of the international environment, where the states are the unitary actors and power is based on military forces with key elements including wealth, population and technology (Glaser, 2016, p. 14).

Neorealism is promoted by Kenneth Waltz in his work "theory of international politics" (1979 ، p. 102). He stated that "the state amongst states, conducts its affairs in the shadow of violence. Because some states may use force at any time, all must be prepared to do." This shows that for neorealism the state is the key actor when it comes to security, while pursuing offensive military capability to defend themselves as stronger military implies better security. Security is about strong military and preparing for war whether it comes or not.

Although economic security is important for neo-realism; however, it is important because it's an input for military purposes (Glaser, 2010). Hence, neorealism view of security is narrow and does not acknowledge environmental, economic, personal, community, or social issues in security

Human security advocates criticize realism in four main areas: referent object, values, perceptions of threats and means of protection (Tadjbakhsh, Chenoy, 2007, p. 84). The main referent object in human security is the individual; whereas realism and neo-realism is a state-centric approach to national security that ignores citizens. Human security is an ethical and methodological school; its concern with security is to reach individuals and communities beyond the state; and not just through power but also through human rights and development.

[10] https://www.un.org/humansecurity/agenda-2030/ (Accessed 15 March, 2019).

Realism is a "value-free theory" (Tadjbakhsh, Chenoy, 2007, p. 84) as its main concern is power. Its main value is the state survival, which leads to arms race. Realists are generally pessimistic towards human nature and view war as inevitable. Whereas human security values security, stability, sustainability of gains, and protection of values, which leads to ensuring development, human rights and peace.

For realists the main source of threat to state security is military power. They perceive the state as the sole actor that seeks hard power as a remedy to threats. Human security, on the other hand, considers a wide range of threats that includes military and non-military risks. Human security is based on multilateralism, which requires stronger international society, well-functioning international institutions, and international order (EC, 2003) and empowerment and participation of the people. People have an active role in human security; communities in human security may have different perception and solutions that needs to be taken into consideration.

## Liberalism

Liberalism is often associated with John Locke and Immanuel Kant. Liberalism perceives that the role of institutions, political relationships and economic interdependence are all means to strengthen peace and security (Tadjbakhsh, Chenoy, 2007, p. 86). Liberalism is centered on two main principles; individualism and liberty. Liberalism places individuals at the heart of the society; allowing them to reach their full potential by giving them more liberty (Nugraha & Madu, 2013). A defining feature of liberalism is universalism, which is a feature of human security as well. Liberalism considers individuals as the primary actor in international relations, where these individuals are rational. Additionally, liberalism emphasizes the importance of economic interdependence among states to hinder conflict. This could be achieved through cooperation between states (Nugraha & Madu, 2013). Liberalism values freedom, human rights, rationality, progress and democracy.

Although human security and liberalism share ontological and epistemological elements, human security has a broader perspective. In answering the question security for whom both schools consider individuals as the referent object. Liberalism answers the question "security from what threats" as conflict, political, economic and commercial as the main threats, while human security has a broader perspective. In answering the question "security by what means," although both paradigms consider military and non-military measures through international organizations, NGOs, representatives of the civil society along with the states, human security

go beyond this to include active engagement and empowerment of individuals and good governance.

Although liberals have widened the perspective of security, their policy still rests on one premise to defend national security interests. “The liberal school has little to do with moral concerns about human security” (Peou, 2014, p. 87).

## Constructivism

Constructivism was introduced to the field of international relations by Nicholas Onuf (1989), this was then further developed by Alexander Wendt who rejected neorealist positions. Constructivism is a move from the materialist view to the ideational view. A shift from the perspective of the power and national interest as the driving force to a perspective that considers ideas that makes up material power (Jackson & Georg, 2006, p. 166). Wendt argues that the state’s policy for survival and security is defined by identifying identities and interests that are shaped by interaction between states (Wendt, 1992) and interaction with its own society (Hopf, 2002). Hence, constructivism broadened the analytical perspective to include identity and culture as causal factors that helps shape the national security policies and global insecurities (Katzenstein, 1996, p. 537).

The main characteristics of constructivism include the following:

1. Constructivism emphasizes the sociological concepts of ideas, norms, identity and culture.
2. Constructivism perceives that norms, culture, customs and learning shape the behaviors and interests of country’s citizenry.
3. Social structure has three components: shared knowledge, material resources and practices.
4. Constructivism believes that interaction between countries generate interests and identity.
5. The interaction between international community and the structure of international political system is a two-way process (Wendt, 1992).
6. State’s interests are constantly evolving which affects international security (Tadjbakhsh & Chenoy, 2009).

Constructivism share many features with human security as they both criticize the overemphasis on material concerns and seek to emphasize on subjective, psychological and human elements (Tsai, 2009). "Constructivism reinterprets traditional material, state-centric society; similarly, human security reinterprets traditional theories of military force and national security" (Tsai, 2009, p, 24).

Both schools rely on human perception; human security reflects the influence of values and norms on security studies. Human security is an attempt to reconstruct the interpretation of the roots of insecurity emphasizing on underdevelopment, poverty and humiliation; which are themes considered by constructivism (Tadjbakhsh & Chenoy, 2009). Human security considered a comprehensive analysis and ontology which formed institutions and norms.

In constructivism the interaction between states to achieve common interests implies promotion of human security as the process determines interests and identity; and identity constitutes the interests. And since these are subject to change, this would lead to considering a security that is people centered; which reflected in both human security and constructivism.

## Critical theory

Critical theory is a school of thought that questions and critiques social and political life. The school was inspired by György Lukács and Antonio Gramsci and then the Frankfurt School. The theory explored the cultural and ideological aspects of power that aims at social transformation (Peou, 2014, p. 124).

Critical theory perceives realism negatively in its emphasis on state-centric military primacy, they are also dissatisfied with the liberal paradigm, they are dissatisfied with the status quo. Critical theory claims that security is a contested concept due to its influence by individuals and state commitments. Also, critical theory doesn't adopt human security, as human security embraces universalism, while critical theory perceives that individuals are different and this requires different solution not a universal paradigm.

Critical theory perceives that individual is the referent object of security. However, the theory specifies this object as the "disadvantaged, the voiceless, … women and other oppressed" (Peou, 2014: p. 128). Hence societal and political transformation should be targeting the marginalized.

In answering the questions "security from what" and "by what means", critical theory adopts the broadening perspective of security. Hence it includes pandemics, environmental, economic, political and societal threats. However, according to the critical theory, human security should

be considered from a critical theory approach to consider structural power and distribution of power (Nugraha & Madu, 2013).

## Postcolonial

Post-colonialism holds a historical and ideological connotation, which focuses on colonial experience from the colonized society point of view. It emphasizes a separation system: Europe vs non-Europe, strong vs weak, powerful vs powerless and north vs south. This approach is of importance as it considers the security issues in post-colonial countries different from Eurocentric security issues and it also considers that the methods that work in each are also different.

This perception reflects the refusal of universalism given the binary system reflected; the post-colonial and the other. As such, postcolonialism reflects the perspective that the North is civilized, humanist and progressing; in contrast with the south (Nugraha & Madu, 2013). Chandler (2008) indicted that human security is used to exaggerate new threat sources and ties these threats with the developing world and the south countries.

## Feminism

Feminism, although there is a wide range of theories, they all share the same view that patriarchy is the dominant factor in social systems. The basic goal of the feminist movement is the creation of a theory based on the experience and using the language of women and to ask questions previously ignored. “In doing so, the emotional involvement of the researcher is permitted” (Gasztold, 2017, p. 182).

Feminist International Relations dates back to the 1980s, with an attempt to bring feminist theory into the discipline of international relations. It has questioned IR’s assumptions and concepts about states and citizens (Tickner, 2004). Feminism has considered a bottom-up approach analyzing the impact of war on micro-level; it has focused on the impact of war on women and civilians. It had also questioned the role of the state in providing security.

The feminist approach differs from human security in that it adopts gender as the main category of analysis (Peou, 2014, p. 159). Feminists focus on the unequal social structures due to gender hierarchies that affect the security of individuals and groups.

Human security differs from the perspective of feminism in the universality feature. Although some feminist scholars indicate that all women share the same victimhood due to the social structures, others perceive that women do not suffer the same way; hence they don’t perceive

it as universal theme. However, both feminism and human security encompass a multidimensional approach through broadening the threats to security. We can consider the contribution of feminism to human security in gender equality (Peou, 2014, p. 187); and in complementing norms with policy-making (Tickner, 2004).

## Human Security and SDGs

Millennium Development Goals has indeed contributed to the transformation of the international initiatives to ending extreme poverty. Building on this experience the Sustainable Development Goals SDGs were developed to address the challenges facing humanity. To this end, the human security approach offered a significant addition through its linkage to the SDGs, which "result in more resilient societies where people are safe from chronic threats such as abject poverty, hunger, disease, violence and repression, while protected from sudden and hurtful disruptions in their daily lives" (Human Security Unit, 2015). This linkage justifies the concept of UN as one, so that the different parts of the United Nations system come together to utilize their resources (Human Security Unit, 2016)

## Conclusion

Human security has helped direct the perspective of security towards the protection of the individual. It has shifted the concern from the state to individuals and opened the aperture to include political, economic, societal and environmental threats. With the primacy of human rights, human security altered the security policies and development; it has shifted the means of military interventions, humanitarian operations and protection of civilians, and also the primacy of human development as opposed to growth of national economies.

States and regional and international organizations incorporated human security in their security policies aiming to resolve conflicts and address sources of insecurity. However, policies should tackle insecurities and sources of insecurities. Multilateral institutions should expand their presence to provide early warnings and to help in articulating their policies. This presence could incorporate institution building within the areas of intervention, capacity building, support of education and social services, and focus on development support. These policies should not be limited to areas of conflict but also extend to areas prone to insecurity.

Human security could be considered a paradigm shift as no single school considers security norms of the different actors targeting security threats. Human security ensures human rights

and human development by engaging states and non-state actors through mechanisms ranging from development, through empowerment, to local ownership, while balancing between diplomacy, military and human rights with the aim of empowering and protecting individuals of the state.

In this dissertation human security will be considered as maintaining the joint focus of freedom from want and freedom from fear, maintaining the multi-dimensionality and multilateralism of the concept. It will consider the broad definition of human security.

# Chapter 2: Counterinsurgency

## Insurgency

### Background

Insurgency has existed throughout history; however, its significance has increased recently. Today the challenge of insurgency has confronted organized existing strategies and doctrines. Two main factors are the challenges to those governments and existing systems that are unable to defeat insurgents with limited capacities; these are protractedness and ambiguity.

Different types of insurgencies have existed throughout history. In some cases, insurgency was just "background noise" during conflict between great powers, and in other cases it was fully an internal issue affecting local stability (Metz & Millen, 2004, p. 1).

When considering insurgency, the questions to be addressed are: how they are recruited, what their moral and emotional motivation is, what their composition is, and how they are sustained. This section helps answer those questions.

According to David Galula (1964, p. 7) an insurgency is fluid since the insurgents neither have responsibility nor concrete assets. This fluidity remains until a balance is reached with the counterinsurgent. Operations are mainly based on hit-and-run tactics, with a freedom to choose the time and place of the battle and the freedom of decision to engage at all.

The nature of insurgency has evolved due to the ever-changing environment. Currently, insurgencies are not waged by single-party organizations, like Mao's and Ho Chi Minh's. Insurgent organizations are composed of "loose coalitions" of local and global networks (Hammes, 2006). These organizations reflect the social organizations they come from. They operate locally and globally, they also operate through local and transnational organizations, like the Afghans who fought in Bosnia. (Hammes, 2006). Taliban is another example that changed from being a purely local movement into a global jihadist community (Mahadevan, 2014). Although these coalitions share a common battlefield, they need not have the same goals, each party can fight for its own cause. In Syria insurgency coalitions have different objectives ranging from an aim to form a secular government to those that aim at forming a strict Islamic one; however, they form coalitions of insurgents.

Insurgencies are now adapting to the changing environment; many are "trans-dimensional and transnational". (Hammes, 2006) They are using electronic warfare, Computer network operations, psychological operations, and military deception. They have moved from simple communications and propaganda to online recruitment, vetting of recruits, training, and e-marketing. They are using the social media widely and intensively.

Insurgency poses challenges threatening political and social stability, and in many cases, it stems from the lack of political, economic and social order. Globalization has set the standards and expectations high, states are not able to keep pace with the growing development, this has resulted in discontent and in many cases led to the rise on insurgencies (Metz & Millen, 2004: 1).

## Insurgency Definition

Terms of terrorism, insurgency and guerrilla warfare are often used interchangeably (and mistakenly). The word originates from mid-18th century: from Latin insurgen from the verb insurgere (in: 'into, towards' surgere: 'to rise'). According to the Oxford Dictionary the word insurgent is "a person fighting against a government or invading force; a rebel or revolutionary." The Dictionary also emphasizes that terrorist means "A person who uses unlawful violence and intimidation, especially against civilians, in the pursuit of political aims."[11] While in Merriam-Webster Dictionary terrorist is an advocate practitioner of terrorism as a means of coercion.

According to Ünal (2016), "insurgencies directly oppose the state's authority and challenge the regime through politico-military actions intended to weaken the control of a constituted government through an organized protracted war. Terrorists, however, are mostly marginalized underground groups employing indirect violence to create public fear, intimidation and anxiety in order to evoke political reaction." Many scholars perceive that terrorism is a tool used by insurgents (Ünal 2016, Kydd & Walter, 2006, Merari, 1993). According to Kiss (2014), insurgency is the most common form of asymmetric warfare.

According to the Federation of American Scientists, "Insurgency is a protracted political-military activity directed toward completely or partially controlling the resources of a country through the use of irregular military forces and illegal political organizations" (FAS, 2009). According to NATO, insurgency is "the actions of an organized, often ideologically motivated,

[11] Oxford Dictionary. LEXICO available at: https://www.lexico.com/definition/terrorist (Accessed June 17, 2019)

group or movement that seeks to effect or prevent political change or to overthrow a governing authority within a country or a region, focused on persuading or coercing the population through the use of violence and subversion" (NATO AAP-06 Edition 2019. p.94). The Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) perceives insurgency as, "Insurgency is a protracted political-military struggle directed toward subverting or displacing the legitimacy of a constituted government or occupying power and completely or partially controlling the resources of a territory through the use of irregular military forces and illegal political organizations" (GAI, 2012, p. 1)

Insurgency is the most prevalent type of armed conflict. "Insurgency may be defined as a struggle between a non-ruling group and the ruling authorities in which the non-ruling group consciously uses political resources, organizational expertise, propaganda and demonstration, and violence to destroy, reformulate, or sustain the basis of legitimacy of one or more aspects of politics." (O'Neil & Bard, 2005)

## Types of Insurgency

Most analysis of insurgents categorized these groups based on goals of the insurgency and its strategies. However, every insurgency is unique and depends on the culture, history, geography and the overall context in which it grows. Insurgent categorization is also dependent on the affiliation of the group and on the goal. Some are perceived as expressions of popular will, while others are condemned as violent disruption of political order; some are blacklisted while others are perceived as the saviors; and hence approaches to confront insurgencies range from counterinsurgency to conflict management.

The most influential insurgency has been the Maoist People's War (1930s). Mao's views were affected by the Chinese literature before being exposed to the Communist Manifesto and accepting basic Marxism in his theory (Schram, 1969). This form is also known as people's war. This is an example where the central government of China considered them as insurgents, whereas the Maoists described themselves as a liberation revolutionary movement.

Metz (1993) introduced two types of insurgencies: psychological and commercial. The psychological or spiritual insurgency is the search for meaning. Insurgents in this case strive for self-fulfillment by those who feel abused, repressed or alienated. These perceive themselves as agents for justice. Commercial insurgency is the search for wealth. Insurgents in this case pursuit material possessions, in search of personal satisfaction that has been affected by the globalization.

Metz & Millen (2004) suggests two types of insurgencies: national and liberation. In the national insurgency the main antagonists are the insurgents and the national government. The insurgency is based on economic, class, ideology or any other political factor; which insurgents strive to change. This insurgency could also be of a triangular form; where a third party could be involved in the process by supporting one or the other side. The liberation insurgency is against a ruling group that is seen as an outsider or an occupier; hence the main objective of insurgents in this case is to liberate the nation.

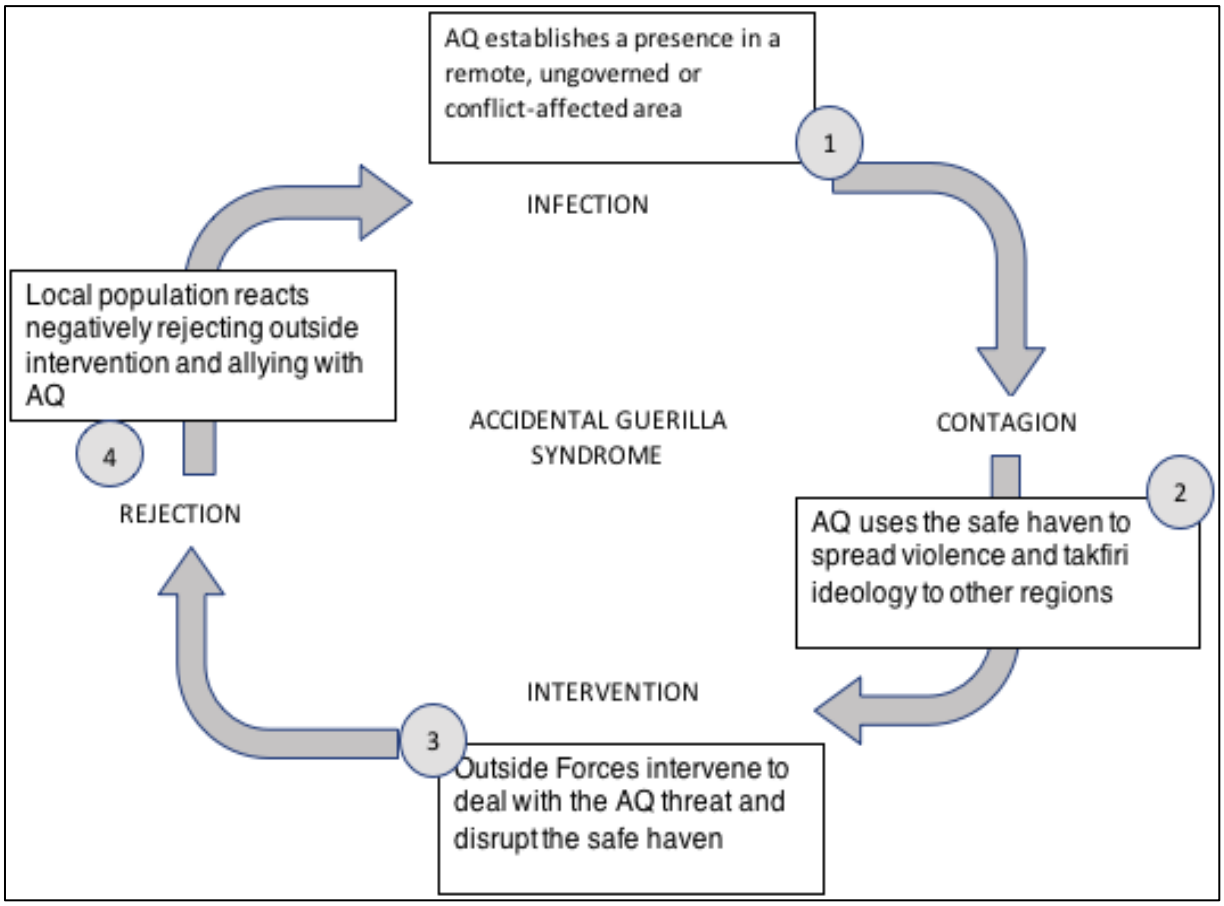
O'Neill (2005) suggests nine types of insurgents: anarchists, egalitarians, traditionalists, pluralists, apocalyptic-utopians, secessionists, reformists, preservationists, and commercialists. Anarchists are those seeking to destroy the existing political systems as they perceive them illegal and unnecessary. The egalitarian insurgents seek a system that is based on distributional equality and centrally controlled structures to accomplish a desired social change. Traditionalists recall for sacred values rooted in ancestral ties and religion through a centralized ruling elite with passive involvement by the majority. Apocalyptic-utopian is a group of insurgents who believe that spreading cruelty and injustice is the way to achieve spiritual salvation. Pluralists seek individual freedom to establish a system that values liberty and compromise. Secessionists insurgents also called separatists seeks to withdraw from the existing political system or community to form an independent autonomous system. Reformists are those seeking policy reform, these target policies that determine distribution of the economic, psychological, political, and environmental benefits. Preservationists seek preserving the system without any change, they carry out illegal and violent acts against those pursuing change. Commercialists' main objective is the acquisition of material resources through gaining political power.

## Insurgency Life Cycle

Kilcullen (2009), presented an analogy of a disease to describe how guerrilla warfare develops and spreads. Although his model is made especially for Al Qaeda, this model can be generalized for other insurgency movements. The first phase of the life cycle is the infection where extremists enter into a vulnerable area; the second phase is contagion where the insurgents spread their influence. The third phase is the intervention. In this phase outside forces (often western partnered) support the security services. And the final phase is the rejection phase; where the population reacts negatively towards this intervention. This model presents an important recommendation for external interventions during counterinsurgency. It suggests that

those interventions should advocate well-being and human security and not imposing a western or outside system. Thus, such interventions should help build trust, empowering local systems, ensuring credibility of local systems. Figure 2 below illustrates the model suggested by Kilcullen.

Figure 2: **Kilcullen model of guerrilla warfare**




Source: Kilcullen, 2009

Despite the limitation of the model it is still relevant in many cases. The model is focusing mainly on Al-Qaeda, though Al-Qaeda is only one insurgent movement and does not represent the development process of other movements. Also, the insurgents do not necessarily form in remote, ungoverned areas; they might start in urban areas. Moreover, counterinsurgency is not necessarily dependent on external force; it could be based only on national forces only. Despite all these drawbacks, the model is relevant since it could be adapted to other insurgencies, according to the following: infection: insurgents establish presence resulting from a cause or objective; contagion: the insurgents use the opportunity to spread their virus where there is weakness and opportunity to affect; intervention: counterinsurgency starts its operation; rejection: more population joins the insurgents as members or supporters. This model of

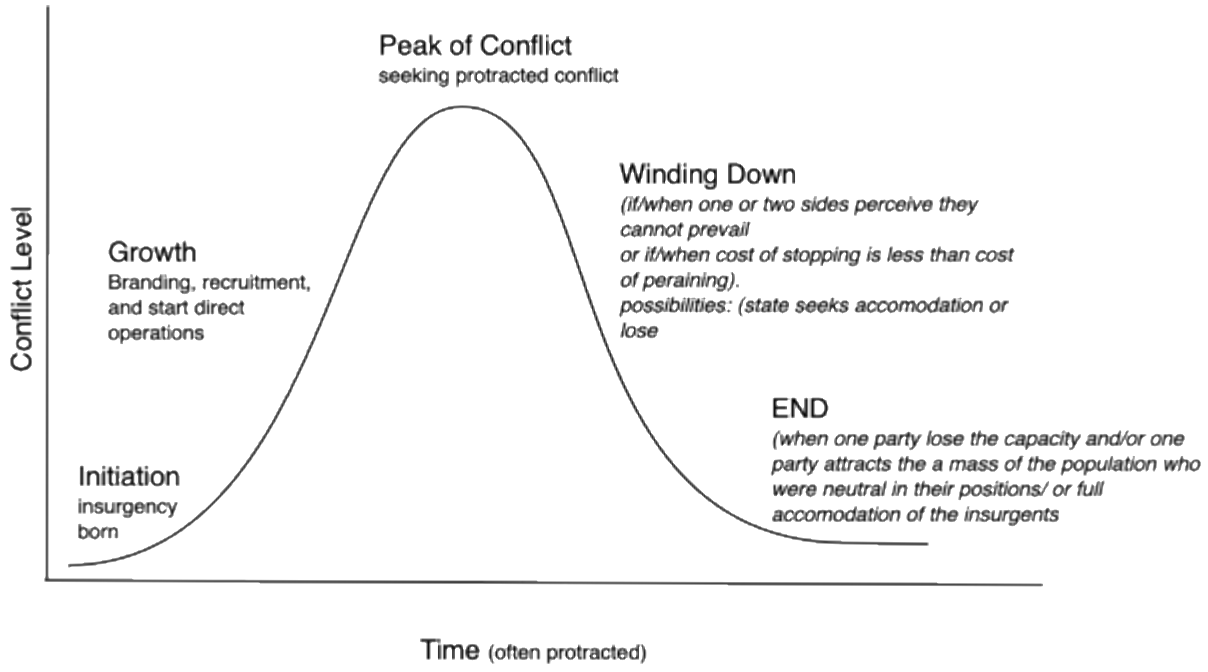
insurgents' growth is important as it could be used to build counterinsurgency strategies that is designed in coherence with the phase of insurgency development.

The model is also restricted to a certain phase of the insurgency lifecycle as it limits itself to the growth of the insurgency while neglecting the possibilities of insurgency decline or any other possibilities. The following is a suggested insurgency lifecycle that includes life span starting from the establishment of the insurgency up to the end of the conflict. The life cycle of insurgencies passes through five different phases: initiation, growth, peak of operations, winding down and end. Since it is a protracted conflict, the life span could extend for years, though it varies from an insurgency to another. Figure 3 below illustrates the life cycle of the insurgency.

The first phase is the initiation; it is the evolution of the insurgency. This is motivated by the notion to obtain political or ideological objectives after failure to do so in a conventional manner. In this phase the insurgents are still weak and not organized. There are two approaches in this phase; the first is: establishing a reputation- brand identity" (Metz & Millen, 2004, p. 3), and the second is maintaining an underground approach without publicity (Metz & Millen, 2004, p. 3). Initiation of insurgency is easy; dozens may be able to start an insurgency movement, and are able to destabilize the situation. With weak states and weak services provided, it is also easy to recruit new members; according to Fearon (2007), the number of civil wars is directly related to the GDP per capita. However, assuming the reason behind engaging in these groups is purely economic is overly simplistic (Chai, 1993); a combination of complex factors leads to their engagement. "History suggests that it requires a specific set of conditions. The importance of these is determined in part by the effectiveness of the regime" (Metz & Millen, 2004, p. 5).

The second phase of the insurgency lifecycle is growth. In this phase insurgents start the branding process, recruiting new members, and start direct operations. Branding of insurgency is just as branding in businesses (Clifford, 2005, p. 28). Insurgents develop their vision, end state, and identify their stakeholders' contribution to the cause as is the case in the business world. Brand management is achieved by differentiation, credibility and authenticity (Beverland, 2005). Insurgents differentiate their services, vision and areas of operation; for this end insurgents use physical and non-physical symbols (linguistic, behavioral, socio-cultural, and ideological). They develop a brand name, a unique logo, slogans, and have a specialized spokesperson (Matusitz, 2014). Recruitment strategies will be discussed later on in this chapter. Psychological offensive operations also start in this phase designed for recruitment and gaining more power.

Figure 3: **Insurgency Life Cycle**



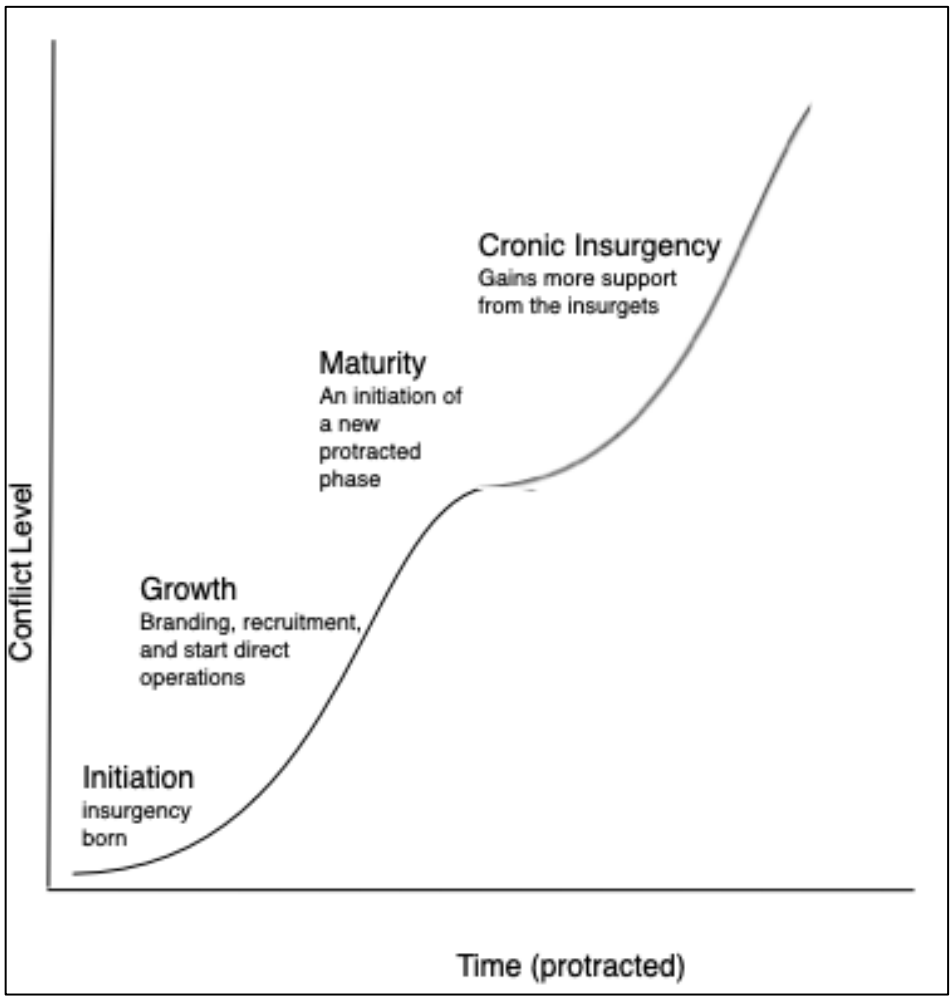

Source: own design

The peak of conflict is when the insurgency is mature through having a clear structure and strategy. In this phase the insurgents reach a point when they are self-supporting through businesses or criminal activities (Hammes, 2006). During the peak of the conflict the insurgents maintain their unity with full operations through carrying out propaganda, terrorist attacks, and other subversive activities, while government forces defend the territory with substantially larger forces. During this phase insurgents will have developed their brand and reputation. The insurgents also unite with other forces and with those discontent against the government. This is also accompanied by establishing safe havens which is vital for their strategy (McCuen, 1966, p. 54). This is the point of optimum use of power while maintaining resources, having strong leadership, and carrying effective operations. "Insurgents are rational, strategic actors who attempt to optimize the distribution of their attacks overtime in such a manner that the insurgents preserve their resources while maximizing the antiwar…" (Kott & Skarin, 2010, p. 241). In this phase the mass population is neutral and prefers to stay away from the conflict and from associating themselves to any of the parties.

Upon reaching the optimum level of the conflict, the mass population is affected deeply and tends to switch from a neutral position to supporters of one of the parties; which is the transition point that leads to the change. If more population attempts to support the insurgents this would lead to another level of growth; however, if on the other hand they support the government then that would be the winding down phase. The winding down phase starts either by the suppression

of the insurgents, accommodation, or when the insurgency develops into a proto-state. The proto-state leads to a stable territory; where the insurgents take control over state functions and responsibilities, and eventually achieve full sovereignty over the contested area. The Islamic State was suppressed in the proto-state phase. The Albanians in Kosovo and the Bosnians in Bosnia-Hercegovina achieved somewhat imperfect sovereignty. Contrariwise, when the insurgents' unity is shaken and people start taking sides. Indicators of decline may include desertion, defection and infiltration. Desertion is when insurgent or government members flee from the group; defection is when members join the opposing side; while infiltration is the covert turning of insurgents to act as informants (Connable & Libicki, 2010).

Figure 4: **Insurgency Life Cycle in a protracted situation**




Source: own design

During this phase the government or the insurgency starts losing credibility, resources, and unity of operations. Insurgents lose when the insurgency is deprived of resources (Leites & Wolf, 1970). However, if the government fails to take advantage of the shaken unity and to

attract more supporters, the insurgency moves to another phase called the chronic insurgency. The insurgents will then fight to maintain the status quo (Mockaitis, 2011), which might lead to another higher peak of conflict as is shown in figure 4 above.

The last phase of the insurgency lifecycle is the conflict resolution. The end of the conflict could result in more than one option. According to Connable & Libicki (2010) there are four possible results, these include: government loss, government victory, negotiated settlement, or inconclusive or ongoing outcome. Mockaitis (2011), suggests four possible results, these include: insurgent victories, government victories, success through co-option, or the insurgency degenerating into something else such as organized crime syndicates. Hence, victory of one or the other is not the only possible outcome. The result could be an ongoing protracted violence and lack of stability and development, but it could also be a change from insurgents to other types of terrorism. Insurgent movements that fail to achieve their objectives degenerates into mere extremists and terrorist groups or criminality. This results from failing to win a peace following the conflict. In general, sustaining insurgency operations requires more than the insurgents and fighters on the ground. It requires ongoing political, financial and logistical support.

## Motives and Opportunities

An insurgency does not arise out of thin air; it results from motives and capitalizes on opportunities. Insurgency results from either greed or grievance. Greed reflects the elite position to acquire and control valuable resources. Grievances reflect those who engage due to economic, ethnic, and political grievances; which lead to individual frustration. Insurgency capitalizes on "grievances within the state" (Kleinfeld & Majeed, 2016), and creates horizontal inequalities (Stewart, 2000).

It is not only the motives but also the conditions that allow insurgencies to grow. Some scholars believe that "opportunities are more important in explaining conflict than are motives" (Collier & Hoeffler, 2001, p. 2.). However, opportunities are facilitators, whereas motive is the main variable leading an individual to start an insurgency or join an insurgency (Brooker, 2010). Brooker believes that motive is a necessary and sufficient condition for starting an insurgency, the strength of the motive is directly related to the extent of contribution danger. Other scholars perceive that motives are necessary but not sufficient as it should be accompanied by incentives and "private goods" (Good win & Skocpol, 1989). Azam (2006) discusses this with a description of such factors he calls "pull factors" as compared to impact of non-engagement he

calls “push factors.” There is a difference between the motive of the insurgents and those of its supporters; also, there is difference between the motives behind joining the insurgency and those behind continuing to remain a member, where this motive is strengthened and reinforced during fighting.

The main factor underlying engagement in insurgency is the motivation. Motivation could be related to attractions that are mainly ideological, social or seeking adventure; duty to support a homeland or people; or financial rewards (Davis, et.al. 2012). In many cases insurgents chose to participate as a result of a cost-benefit analysis based on considering the private benefit along with the public benefit (Olson, 1965). Gurr (1971) suggested that the motive is the frustration. Gurr developed the frustration-aggression theory, which illustrates that frustration does not necessary lead to violence, but when it is sufficiently prolonged and sharply felt it leads to anger and thus to violence. The motive is in general a benefit for the self and the others. Individual insurgents work for their own benefit and for the benefit of the community or social group (Humphreys & Weinstein, 2008). The motive of the insurgents affects their tactics and utilization of violence, studies have shown that insurgents with stronger ideological commitments commit less attacks and opt to use violence against military targets (Ugarriza & Weintraub, 2015).

Opportunity is the second important factor underlying engagement. It is about the context and the opportunity not only the frustration faced (Jost et.al. 2012). The opportunity according to Collier and Hoeffler (2004) is the availability of finance and the cost of rebellion that changes as per the season. The passive population is the opportunity according to Galula (1964). The uncertainty-identity theory of Hogg illustrates that self-uncertainty is a specific driving mechanism of group behavior, since self-uncertainty describes the loss of confidence in one’s identity, values, beliefs, and wellbeing. The self-uncertainty can motivate people to associate with social groups that could provide distinctive identity, which could happen to be the extreme groups and behaviors (Hogg & Adelman, 2103).

Public support for terrorism and insurgency can be described through four main factors: effectiveness of organization, motivation for supporting group or cause, perceived legitimacy of violence, and acceptability of costs and risks (Davis et.al. 2012). Effectiveness of organization includes leadership, ideological package, resource mobilization, opportunism, and presence and tactics. Motivation is about attractions, duty, and rewards. Perceived legitimacy of violence includes religious, revenge and desperation. Acceptability of costs and risks include intimidation, assessment of victory, personal risks and social costs.

However, there is never a clear simple reason behind the evolution of insurgency; reasons overlap and intertwine. One reason could be the spark, or the communicated message, but often there is no one single reason (Cox & Ryan, 2017). Moreover, in some cases the motive and message change and develop by time as is the case of Boko Haram that started by attacking only political targets and only in 2009 it started targeting Christians with focus on Sharia (Pérouse, 2014).

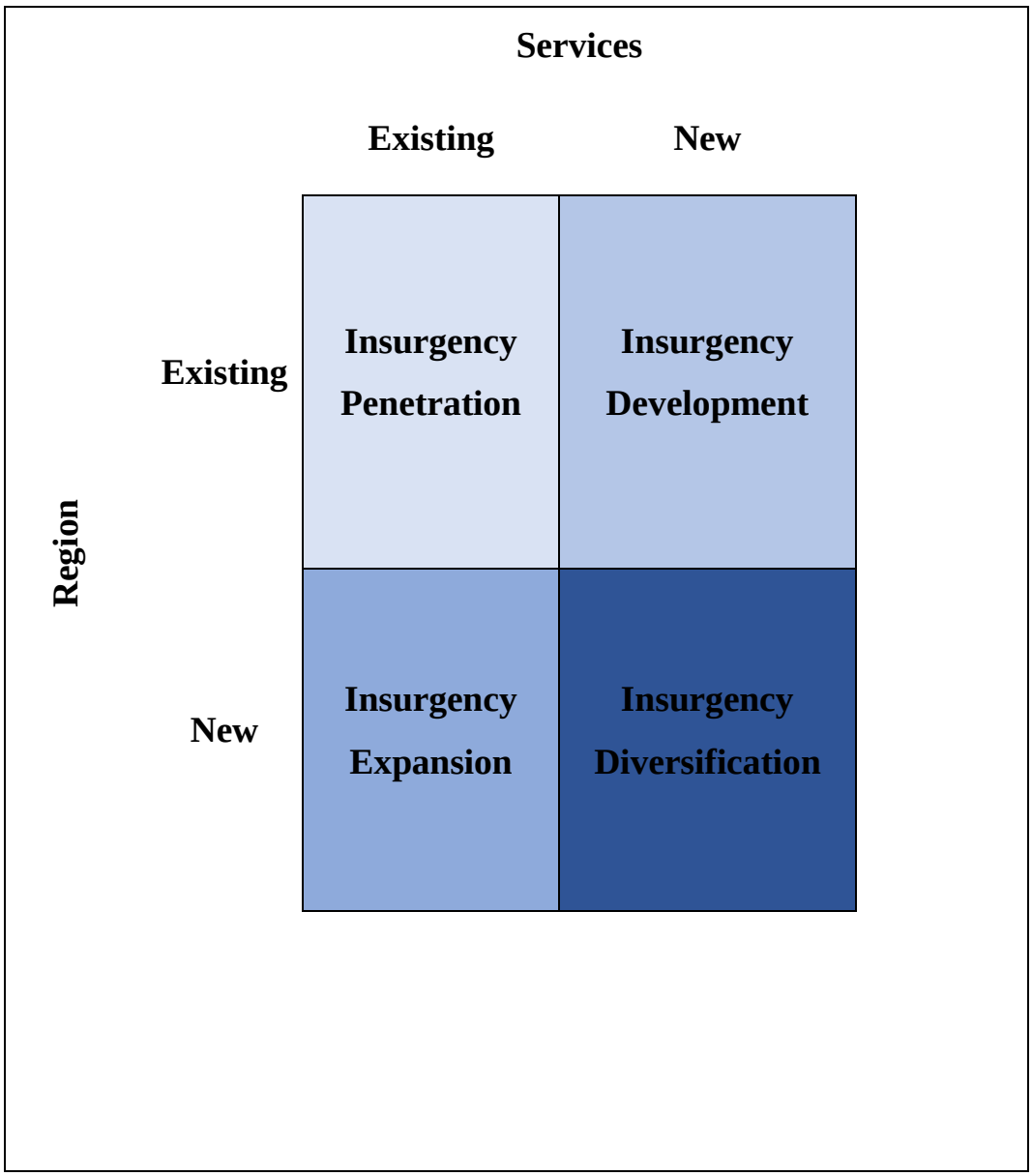
## Recruitment

Recruitment strategy of insurgents is similar to a market growth strategy, which is illustrated with the Ansoff marketing matrix;[12] it is a growth strategy model of operations to maintain existing members and recruit new members. It provides a framework enabling growth opportunities. As is the case in the market growth strategy, the model presents four alternative growth strategies. The two main dimensions that define the strategies are the services insurgents provide and the second is the region they operate in. The first dimension in this matrix is the 'services' that could be existing or new; while the second dimension is the 'region' that could be existing or new. According to the model, four strategies are presented: insurgency penetration (existing services and existing regions), insurgency development (new services and existing regions), insurgency expansion (using existing services and new regions), and insurgency diversification (using new services and new regions). Figure 5 below illustrates the recruitment strategy of insurgents.

Each strategy is achieved differently, and each one faces different levels of risk. The insurgency penetration involves promoting existing services and propaganda to existing regions to gain higher acceptance amongst local community. This targets the adversary, but most importantly targets the neutral communities of the region where the insurgents operate. This strategy carries the lowest risk compared to the other strategies, as insurgents are aware of the community and the needs and interests of this community. This can be achieved by promoting their ideology through local media and local recruiters. Direct contact of potential members is the most common method in this strategy as those members are possible to be identified by some surveys and intelligence.

[12] The Ansoff Matrix is a matrix that describes the market growth strategy. It states that market growth strategies are dependent on two factors: the markets (either work on existing markets or new markets) and the products (either work on existing products or new products). If a company decides to work on existing market and existing product this is called penetration strategy; if it works on existing markets and new products, this is called product development; working on new markets and existing products is market development strategy; and working on new markets and new product is diversification.

Figure 5: **Insurgents Matrix for Insurgency Growth Strategies**




Source: own design

The insurgency expansion strategy is about promoting existing services and propaganda in new regions. This can be achieved by expanding the ideology to new regions, which is associated with a high level of risk depending on the financial capacity, the new regions, and the knowledge about those regions. This strategy is also possible through new distribution channels such as the cyber-insurgency; where insurgents are able to recruit new members through the internet. This would require high levels of training and developed skills in the use of information and communication technology. The Islamic State is a good example of this since they are using the internet to expand their operation and recruit new members all over the world.

“Insurgency development” strategy is about introducing new services to existing regions. This growth strategy needs clear knowledge of the needs and interests of the local community to be able to satisfy those needs. The Islamic State used this strategy by providing different services to develop the organization, through which they were able to recruit new members. ISIS provided financial, medical and educational services.

“Insurgency diversification” is the growth strategy that is achieved by developing new services for completely new regions. Hence, it is associated with a very high risk because of the lack of experience in the new region and the new service. Main examples of insurgency diversifications are the mergers of two different insurgencies in two different countries for example Al-Shabab insurgency group in Somalia united with the Islamic State to expand and diversify their operations. (Aziemah & Huzaifah, 2015) Diversification is also present in insurgency through backward diversification, this is apparent through ISIS associated places of worship that supported their operations in those regions.

Insurgents usually develop highly sophisticated strategic communications campaigns, “this has been the pattern since Ho Chi Minh.” (Jones, 2009, p. 7) Insurgencies have developed recruitment strategies that helped them recruit new members locally and globally through services related directly or indirectly to their operations.

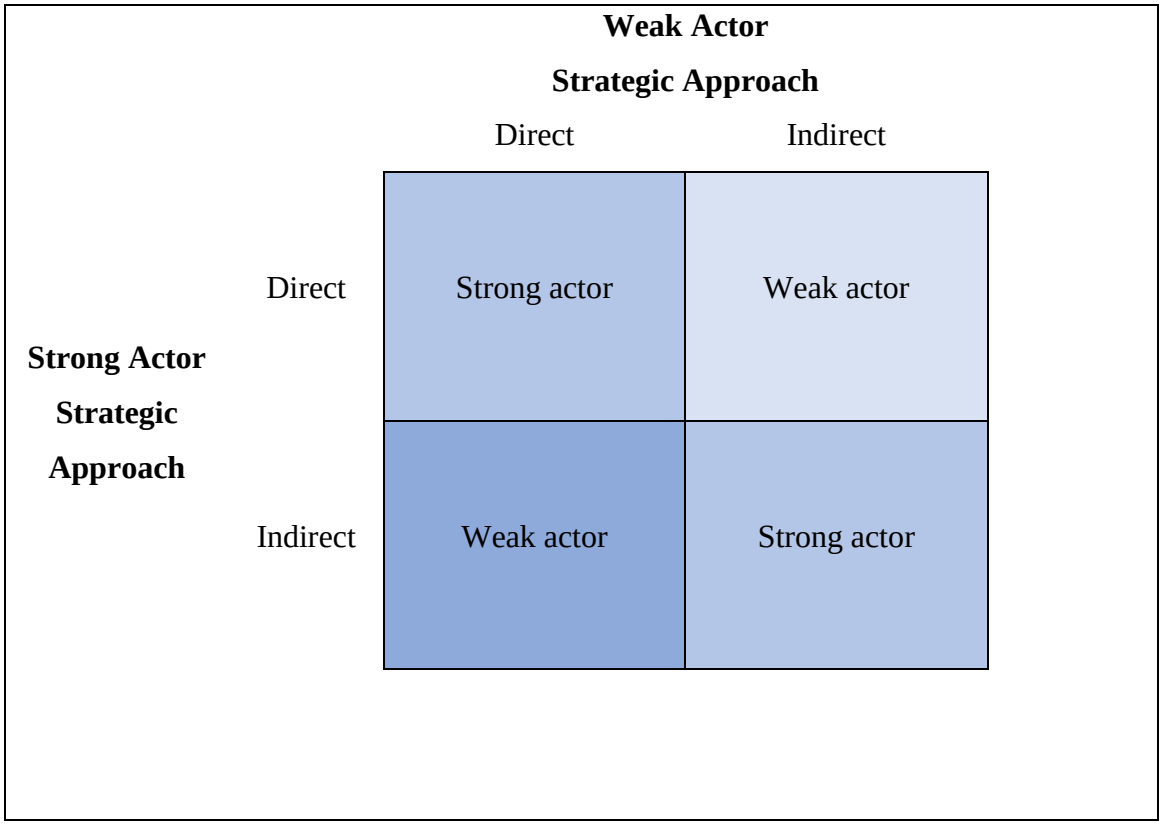
## Means and Approaches of insurgency

Although insurgency is a political struggle not a military struggle, it utilizes tools that are relevant to those used by the conventional forces. The tools used by insurgents expand beyond political and organizational to reach propaganda and deception. They compete with those used by the national forces and sometimes they even win against them. “Insurgency since 2001 has proven that even a non-state actor can pursue the modest goal of area denial against vastly superior conventional armed forces, via asymmetric warfare.” (Mahadevan, 2014, para 5)

The approach paradox is a dilemma faced by the insurgents; the question is how to work with wide exposure while remaining secure, how recruit more while maintaining the existing members within the available limited resources, how to grow bigger while maintaining full control, etc. According to Frisch (2011), there are five dilemmas faced by the insurgents: actions vs secrecy, growth vs control, recruitment vs retention, success vs longevity and resources vs constituencies. Action vs secrecy dilemma refers to dealing with the paradox of increasing action and communication while maintaining secrecy of operations. Growth vs

control dilemma refers to the ability to balance between the growth in number of members engaged and presence expansion in the geographical areas from one side and the control of this expansion from the other side, which is possible through charismatic leadership. Dilemma three is the recruitment vs retention, which refers to the importance of recruiting new members based on understanding the reason behind them accepting to be engaged, while ensuring the survival of members who face an enormous risk of dying as a result of the violent context, and how such risks wouldn't affect the recruitment negatively. The fourth dilemma is the success vs longevity through focusing on both strategic and tactical operations, and by attaining short-term and long-term goals. The fifth dilemma is about resources verses constituencies and how to balance between resource extraction and constituent alienation.

Figure 6**: Ivan Arreguín- Toft (2001) model**




Source: Toft (2001) model

Ivan Arreguín- Toft (2001) suggests that winning or losing the war depends on the approach used by counterinsurgents and insurgents who can fight either directly or indirectly (Jobbágy 2017. p. 135). If both use the same approach the stronger wins, while if they use different

approaches the weak wins. Figure 6 below illustrates the model presented in Arreguín- Toft research.

Leites and Wolf (1970) describe the insurgency as an operating system. This system illustrates that insurgencies receive inputs from the environment, which are processed and returns outputs back to the environment. Inputs are elements needed for the growth of the insurgency including the population and financial aid, while outputs are the actions taken against the government. This in turn feeds back into the environment that the insurgents consume. Thus, the environment is subject to change and so is the position of the population.

The insurgents' military operations are organized in accordance with their strategy. They do not attack randomly, they act along several broad lines of operations: counter-coalition with attacks against the coalition, counter-collaboration through attacks on those working with coalitions, counter-mobility, counter-reconstruction with attacks on contractors and infrastructure, and counter-stability by attacking civilians and officials (Eisenstadt & White, 2005).

According to Bard O'Neill (2005) insurgents' strategies are the systematic and integrated instruments of power to achieve their goals. These strategies include conspiratorial, protracted popular war, military focused, urban-warfare, identity focused and composite.

## Counterinsurgency

The definition and analysis of insurgency helps clarify what counterinsurgency is; it also provides a base for clarifying counterinsurgency approaches and tools. This section presents the definition of counterinsurgency, theorization of the concept along with approaches, critiques and impact of its operations.

The term counterinsurgency was of little interest until the war on Iraq started; the US did not want to get engaged in another Vietnam-like war. However, the assumption that a military trained for big wars will be effective to handle less violent operations through counterinsurgency and peacebuilding was proven wrong after the war on Iraq. "In 2003, the military found itself in Iraq without an effective military doctrine" (Rekkedal: 2012, p. 215).

### Counterinsurgency Definitions

The term counterinsurgency is composed of the prefix "counter" and the term insurgency that has been defined earlier. Thus, counterinsurgency consists of the measures taken by the

government and its supporters to defeat the insurgency and tackle the root causes of insurgency. Oxford dictionary defines counterinsurgency as the "military or political action taken against the activities of guerrillas or revolutionaries."

According to NATO Doctrine "counterinsurgency is defined as a comprehensive civilian and military efforts made to defeat an insurgency and to address any core grievances" (Allied Joint Doctrine for Counterinsurgency (COIN) AJP, 2018, p. xiii). The doctrine also uses the term 'counter-insurgent' to refer to the set of actors executing COIN actions, whether they are part of the contested government, the Alliance or members of other supporting countries or agencies.

The British Doctrine defines counterinsurgency as "those military, law enforcement, political, economic, psychological and civic actions taken to defeat insurgency, while addressing the root causes" (British Army Field Manual Volume 1 Part 10, Countering Insurgency, Army Code 71876, October 2009, p. 1-6). This definition reflects the multifaceted approach suggested by the doctrine; thus, not limiting the approach to military but also consideration of the root causes of the case.

The US counterinsurgency doctrine (2006) perceives that Counterinsurgency operations include offensive, defensive, and stability operations that commanders combine to achieve. The doctrine perceives that the strategy is decided on a case-by-case analysis.

The French doctrine of 2010 defines counterinsurgency (at the tactical level) as "a course of action that consists of neutralizing an organization that practices armed violence in the form of guerilla warfare or terrorist attacks, by reducing that organization's freedom of movement through confinement, or even eliminating it through the effects of reduction and/or dispersion. The level of engagement in this type of struggle depends upon the national or international political option chosen, upon the balance of forces on the ground and the attitude of the population" (FEDC, 2010).

Pouw (2013) presented four settings of counterinsurgency depending on the context and the party carrying out the COIN operations. The first COIN is the NATCOIN that refers to the counterinsurgency on a State's territory. The second is the OCCUPCOIN that refers to counterinsurgency carried out by an occupying power. The third is SUPCOIN that is counterinsurgency in support of another state. And, the last is the TRANSCOIN that refers to the transnational counterinsurgency.

## Theorization of Counterinsurgency

David Galula is considered the preeminent scholar on COIN warfare. In his book "Counterinsurgency: Theory and Practice" (Galula, 1964), he presented four laws that formed the basics for COIN doctrines in the 20th century. The first law is that population is paramount, counterinsurgents and insurgents need the support of the population. The second law is the active engaged minority. Population support is guaranteed by the active minority. Active minority willing to support counterinsurgency operations should be supported in their efforts to rally the neutral majority and neutralize those supporting the insurgency and the hostile minority. The third law indicates that the support from population is always conditional; "the minority hostile to the insurgent will not and cannot emerge as long as the threat has not been lifted to a reasonable extent." Also, the population must have the belief that "counterinsurgents have the will, the means, and the ability to win." The fourth law is the "intensity of effort and vastness of means." Given the large concentration of resources and efforts needed, operations should focus on selected areas and resources moved as needed.

Galula differentiates between two periods of insurgency; "in the cold" and "in the heat" periods. The cold is when the activities remain "on the whole legal and nonviolent" (Galula, 1964, p. 27). As a result, counterinsurgents response should act directly on the insurgent leaders and indirectly on the conditions that are propitious to an insurgency. The counterinsurgent can also infiltrate the insurgency; and most importantly, should reinforce the counterinsurgent's political machine. The counterinsurgency in the heat is when the insurgent's activities become illegal and violent. This period requires a more complex effort. Galula proposes an eight-step strategy to defeat insurgents in this phase that ranges from political to military interventions. Galula concludes his book with the statement "whether in the cold or in the hot revolutionary war, its essence can be summed up in a single sentence: Build (or rebuild) a political machine from the population upward" (Galula 1964, p. 81).

Galula describes four instruments of control needed in the governmental infrastructure: political structure, administrative bureaucracy, police, and armed forces (Galula, 1964, p. 27). The administrative bureaucracy is related to the day to day activities that are impacted by the political structure and the political leadership. The police force is the first line of interaction between the government and the people; thus, they are key to sustain a positive relationship and to maintain security for citizens. Loyalty of the armed forces is also a must to maintain security.

According to Thompson (1966) defeating communist insurgency is based on five principles: a clear political aim, functions in compliance with the law, an overall plan, defeat the political

subversion rather than the guerrillas, and have a clear base of operations. Paget (1967) illustrated four primary principles for the civil military operations: a joint-command and control structure, good intelligence, mobility and training.

Galula, Thompson, and Paget asserted that propaganda is an essential part of the counterinsurgency and that it should be focused on both the insurgents and the population. They also focused on the importance of considering the political along with the military operations, and on the coordination of efforts focusing on a unified direction. They also agree that efforts should be made to defeat the insurgents while maintaining security for the population.

Charles Callwell presented ideas for successful counterinsurgency. He suggested that a single blow often achieves results, but a succession of blows paralyzes the enemy. His criteria of success included matching the enemy in mobility and inventiveness, collecting actionable intelligence, seizing what the enemy prizes most (FMI 3-24.2: 3-10).

Metz and Millen (2004) indicated five key activities for effective counterinsurgency planning. The first is fracturing the insurgents through military, psychology, and political means to divide one part against the other. The second is delegitimizing the insurgent movement in the eyes of the local population and the international community. The third is demoralizing the insurgents through military pressure and psychological operations. The fourth is delinking the insurgents from both internal and external support. The fifth is de-resourcing the insurgent by eliminating its funding and wasting its existing resources.

Kilcullen (2006) presented the three-pillar model of counterinsurgency identifying the base of counterinsurgency along with main areas of intervention. The model states that information is the basis for all activities, since it helps control and influence groups within the population. Information includes intelligence collection, analysis, distribution, information operations, media operations and measures to counter insurgents' ideology and motivation, census data, public opinion and other relevant information.

Security, political and economic measures are equally important pillars considered with military and civilian engagement that rest upon the information base. The security pillar includes military security, police security, human security, public safety, and population security. Political measures comprise mobilization, governance extension, institutional capacity, and societal reintegration. The economic pillar is about humanitarian assistance, development assistance, resource and infrastructure management, and growth capacity. The three pillars must be supported with balance. These pillars support the optimum objective of control rather than stability as the model suggests.

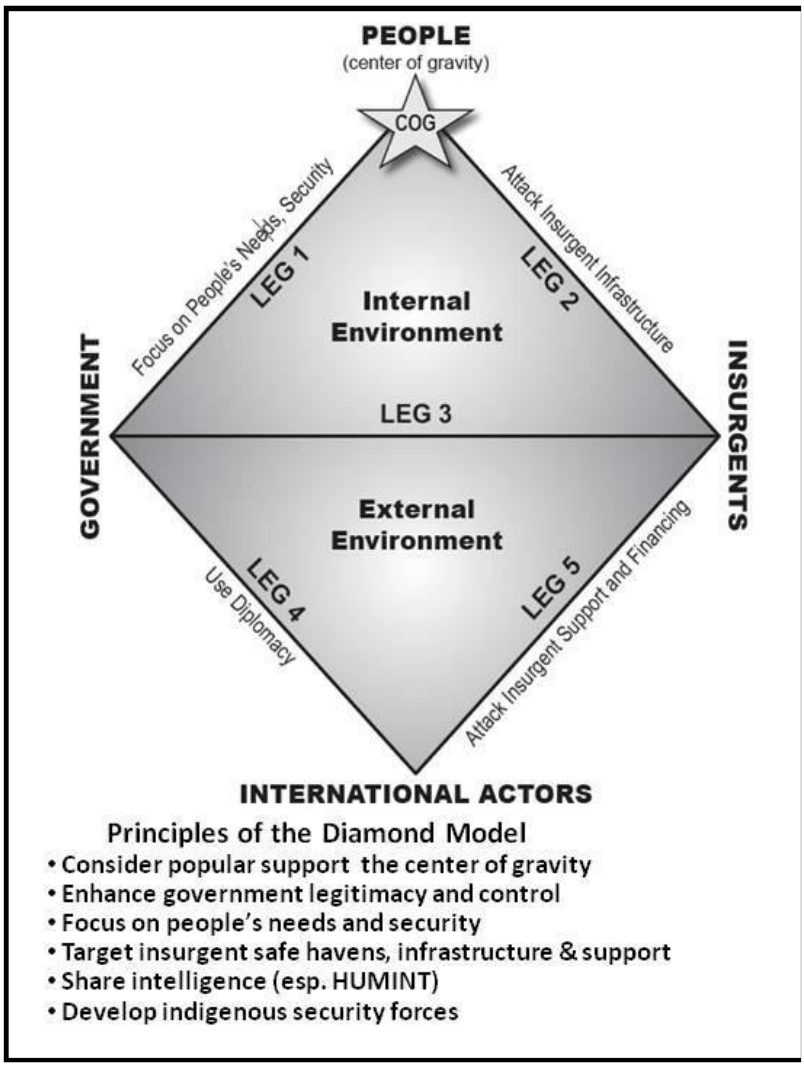
Kilcullen suggests that this model presents a framework for counterinsurgency. Those involved in counterinsurgency identify the means and methods of collaboration that fits the framework and fits their strategy. The model "provides a basis for measuring progress and is an aid to collaboration rather than an operational plan" (Kilcullen, 2006, p. 4).

Zambernardi (2010) presented the trilemma of counterinsurgency, which states that it is impossible to simultaneously achieve "force protection, distinction between enemy combatants and noncombatants, and the physical elimination of insurgents." This model suggests that there is a tradeoff between these three goals. Hence, counterinsurgents need to choose two out of the three goals depending on the context.

Gordon McCormick's strategic counterinsurgency process was presented through the Diamond model (Wilson, 2006). This model defines the interaction between the host government, the insurgents, the population, and the international actors Figure 7 illustrates the McCormick model). The government's goal is to destroy insurgents or limit their growth. The insurgents' goal is to grow and take over the control and achieve their specific objectives. The effective counterinsurgency according McCormick is ensured through the government's understanding of its own advantages and disadvantages as compared to the insurgents, where "the winner of this context will be the side that can most quickly resolve its disadvantage" (Wilson, 2006).

For Gordon McCormick the internal environment is addressed in the upper half of the model. The internal government lies in the upper half of the model. The state focuses on people's needs and security; thus, receiving information that exposes the threat infrastructure. This leads to identifying and striking the insurgents (Culp, 2011). This is similar to Kilcullen model that perceives information as the basis for all activities; though in McCormick model activities lead to the base. McCormick perceives that at the outset of the conflict the state has the force advantage; however, it suffers from lack of information that is necessary to see the insurgents. Rectifying this disadvantage can be ensured through the five strategies presented in the model: building trust with the population, disrupting the insurgents' capability to influence the population, attacking the insurgents directly, disrupting the relationship between the insurgents and the population, and building relationship with the international community. These are the same strategies that the insurgents should use in order to rectify their disadvantages.

Figure 7: **McCormick Diamond Model**




Source: Culp, 2011

Hoffman and Taw (2014) claims that for counterinsurgency campaigns to be successful they need to include four elements: command and coordination, effective antiterrorist legislation combined with measures to build public trust and support, coordination within and between intelligence services, and foreign collaboration amongst governments and security forces. These elements could be used singly or in combination for any successful counterinsurgency regardless of geographic regions, time periods, and political systems.

## Counterinsurgency Doctrines

The question that arises before getting into the various doctrines is to define what a doctrine is. Doctrine bridges between the theory and practice based on experiences. "Doctrine is not in itself a prescription for success as a set of rules. What it does provide is the basis for thought,

further selective study and reading which is the personal responsibility of all of us" (Nagle, 2005, p. 7).

### *US Counterinsurgency Doctrine*

The United States developed an interagency counterinsurgency doctrine in 1962; called the 'Overseas Internal Defense Policy'. The doctrine "lays a framework for whole-of-government counterinsurgency, assigns responsibilities and resources, and explains what each agency brings to the fight" (Kilcullen, 2006, p. 1).

The US published FM 90-8 "Counter-guerrilla Operations" in 1986.[13] The manual emphasized that countering the insurgency is done through alleviating conditions which may cause insurgency. The manual also indicated that "counter-guerrilla operations are geared to the active military element of the insurgent movement only. To this end, counter-guerrilla operations are viewed as a supporting component of the counterinsurgency effort" (FM 90-8, 1986, p. 1-5). It mainly addressed the military aspect of the insurgent movement while focusing tactical operations. In 2004, the US produced FM-Interim 3-07.22 Counterinsurgency Operations. The Doctrine indicated that achieving success in counterinsurgency involves accomplishing protection of the population, establishing local political institutions, reinforcing local governments, eliminating insurgent capabilities, and exploiting information from local resources (FMI 3-07.22). In 2006, the US published the Counterinsurgency Doctrine FM 3-24. The doctrine included five means of mobilization including persuasion, coercion, reaction to abuses, foreign support, and apolitical motivations. COIN operations are composed of a spectrum of activities conducted to achieve the desired end state. It is a mix of defensive, offensive and stability operations; where the proportion of the components and the efforts depend on the situation and the mission. The stability component includes civil security, civil control, essential services, governance, and economic and infrastructure development.

In 2014 a new manual was published that builds upon the previous one. The 2006 edition defined insurgency as "An organized movement aimed at the overthrow of a constituted government through the use of subversion and armed conflict." In the new edition, insurgency now means "The organized use of subversion and violence to seize, nullify, or challenge political control of a region" (FM 3-24, 2014). The reference to a government has been removed

[13] Wickham, John A. & Dilworth, R. L. (1986). Counterguerrilla Operations. Headquarters Department of the Army, Washington DC, 29 August 1986. Available at http://pdf.textfiles.com/manuals/MILITARY/united_states_army_fm_90-8%20-%2029_august_1986%20-%20part01.pdf Accessed 29 August 1986.

in the new definition, and insurgency is conceived as a tactic rather than a movement. It focused on the sensitivity and specificity of each conflict.

The US counterinsurgency doctrine stresses the need to consider the local context; however, it is not possible to understand the norms shared by the population from distance. “FM 3-24 is somewhat schizophrenic on the subject of what ought to be done with them [rebellions]” (Gawthorpe 2017, p. 845). Gawthorpe goes further in his critiques to mention that although the doctrine uses the population norms as a basis for the legitimacy; however, the doctrine fails to understand that sub-socieities have their unique norms that might be different from the others.

**NATO COIN Doctrine**

According to NATO Doctrine (AJP-3.4.4) of 2011, COIN must be carried out in a comprehensive manner by civilian and military entities to defeat an insurgency and ensure stability and a secure environment. This requires a wide range of interventions ranging from humanitarian assistance to major combat operations. Therefore, COIN should be population centric with operations that focus on securing the population. It should also be opponent centric by defeating the opposing group. The aim of military contribution to COIN is to secure the population, isolate the insurgents from their support, neutralize the insurgents’ subversive strategy and armed organization, and support other organizations in planning to create unity of effort (AJP 3.4.4).

NATO principles of counterinsurgency includes: political primacy, develop and promote the legitimacy of the contested government, hand over responsibility to the local forces as practicable, secure the population, understand the human environment, defeat the insurgent, operate within international, national law and respect domestic law, prepare for a protracted campaign, and learn and adapt. The first principle is the political primacy that addresses the root causes and political drivers of an insurgency. Therefore, according to NATO “the political strategy coordinated with the contested authorities, combining civilian and military resources, principles and attitudes will provide the direction and guidance for all COIN planning” (AJP 3.4.4).

The counterinsurgency operations take place in a complex environment characterized by the presence of many players: local, regional, national and international. Insurgent presence is invisible as they hide amongst the population. And the operating environment is an

amalgamation of operational variables: political, military, economic, social, information and infrastructure PMESII[14] (AJP 3.4.4).

The possible generic responses in a COIN operation range from direct to indirect support. The direct support provides security through military and law enforcement. The indirect support provides development and diplomacy. The sequence of operations and the proportions is dependent on the situation; however, the preferred sequence is starting with indirect support.

As part of its comprehensive approach, NATO relies on civil-military cooperation (CIMIC) as one of its military facilitators. CIMIC is defined as "the coordination and cooperation, in support of the mission, between the NATO Commander and civil actors, including national population and local authorities, as well as international, national, and non-governmental organizations and agencies" (CCOE, 2012). The manual focuses on the humanitarian relief and on training military personnel to provide humanitarian relief. However, the primary purpose of CIMIC is not the provision of human security, but to free the commander from the burden of caring for the civilian population in the war zone, and allow him to carry out his primary mission, the defeat of the insurgents.

**British COIN Doctrine**

The UK produced their COIN doctrine since the 1980s. In 2004 they produced a manual of doctrinal relevance to COIN, named: "The Military Contribution to Peace Support Operations". In 2008 COIN manual was developed, which marked a turning point in the UK doctrine operations and strategies (Hazel, 2008). The British principles of COIN included: political primacy and clear political aim, gain and secure the consent of the people, coordinated government machinery effective communication with the people, focused intelligence, neutralize the insurgent, and plan for longer term post-insurgency conditions. (Hazel, 2008.). The UK doctrine identifies COIN as a "distinctly political, not primarily military; and it involves the people, the government, and the military. The strength of the relationship between these three groups generally determines the outcome of the campaign" (MoD, 2009:1). UK doctrine perceives insurgency and counterinsurgency as two sides of a very complex form of warfare, "where a group or groups resort to violence and take up arms to achieve political objectives. Typical objectives are replacing an existing government, securing the status quo and challenging a nascent or emerging state" (MoD, 2009, p. 1).

[14] In order to analyse and understand the operational environment NATO doctrine divides it into six sectors, denoted by the PMESII acronym: political, military, economic, societal, informational and infrastructure.

The British used high levels of force during COIN operations. Their operations in Malaya was not in any way a "hearts and minds" they used excessive force. Repression measures included forcibly resettling 500,000, mass arrests, death penalty for carrying arms, detention without trial, deportations, control of food and shops, arson against the homes of communist sympathizers, collective punishment, incidents of massacres, and treating prisoners as criminals (Dixon, 2009). In Northern Ireland they also used a considerable level of coercion.

## COIN Strategies

There are two basic strategic approaches in counterinsurgency: military and multidimensional. The military strategic approach is mainly focused on the use of power to physically defeat the insurgents. However, this approach entails the use of extreme power on both the insurgents and the population. The Argentinian military dictatorship (called the National Reorganization Process) used this approach during the Dirty War in the 1970s to suppress political dissidents, leftists Peronists and the Montoneros urban guerrillas, which led to more political disorder (Moore, 2007). The other strategic approach is the multidimensional that looks into the military strategy but also includes empowering the political, economic and social aspects, while tackling the root causes of the problem. This strategy might also require political accommodation of insurgent groups (Moore, 2007).

Watts et.al. (2014:19-20) discussed four strategies for counterinsurgency: classic counterinsurgency, strong state repression, informal accommodation, and containment. This typology is based on three variables: bounded accommodation (armed opposition has the opportunity to share in power), discriminate violence, and provision of public goods. The first strategy is the ***classic counter-insurgency***; this includes high levels of political accommodation of reconcilable opposition, discrimination in use of violence against irreconcilable opposition, and public goods provision to disaffected communities. The second strategy is the ***strong state repression*** strategy where the regime is unable or unwilling to offer accommodations to any part of the opposition, relies on indiscriminate use of force, and offers substantial services to the general population to buy off discontent. The third strategy is the ***informal accommodation*** strategy where the government is unable or unwilling to provide public goods to discontented people, able to reach agreements with insurgents, and high discrimination in use of violence against the irreconcilable elements. The fourth strategy is the ***containment*** especially used by weak states. This strategy is based on the use of indiscriminate force to repress insurgents, low provision of public goods, and low political accommodation.

In summary, to counter insurgency, the strategy should contain a wide spectrum of policies including diplomatic, political, economic, ideological and military. These could be applied in different combinations. The tasks of counterinsurgency strategy should include: establishing and maintaining security, providing humanitarian relief and essential services, promote effective governance, sustain economic development, support reconciliation, and foster social change (Moore, 2007). Whatever combination is decided, the strategy should not be implemented in phases, all tasks and policies should be intermingled.

## International Law in regulating Counter-insurgency

One of the most challenging issues in COIN is to determine its legal framework. The United States characterized its response to the attacks of 11 September as "armed conflict." Hence, their responses towards these attacks is according to the law of war. However, this law applies only when a state conducts military operations against the armed forces of another state. Yoram Dinstein suggests that there are two cases when armed conflict could be used as the reference: "first, when the operations are derived from an armed conflict with the state sponsor of a terrorist organization; and second, when the actions of terrorist organization can be attributed to the sponsoring state as the result of terrorist authority over organs of the state" (Corn, 2011, p. 24).

Military interventions are normally governed by the domestic laws when is it conducted by the incumbent government against insurgents. The challenge is when international organizations such as the NATO or countries are countering the insurgency in another state. International law allows the use of force against other countries in cases related to self-defense or if the UN Security Council decides that. "It is not an exaggeration to state that state–intervention in such situations has been subject to political issues rather than that of international law" (Bordas, 2014, p. 583). Otherwise the human rights law should be applied. However, human rights law doesn't specify when civilian and civilian objects could be attacked (Bordas, 2014).

## Impact of counterinsurgency

Most existing empirical studies revealed that the state's indiscriminate violence incites escalation of insurgents' attacks. This is demonstrated in research by showing positive relationship between the counterinsurgent-generated civilian casualties and levels of future violent incidents by insurgents in Iraq and Afghanistan (Condra et al, 2010). On the other hand, Lyall (2009) tested the indiscriminate violence effect on insurgents' attacks using Russian

artillery fire in Chechnya during the period 2000 to 2005; this indicated a reduction in insurgents attacks compared to control villages.

Other researches illustrated the relationship between soft power and level of insurgents' violence. Iyengar (2011) showed that labor-intensive development programs and employment growth reduces violence during insurgencies. Similarly, other researches indicated that improved service provision reduces insurgent violence particularly for smaller projects since the "surge" began in 2007 in Iraq (Berman et.al. 2008).

**COIN Assessment**

What is a successful counterinsurgency? This question is difficult given the different definitions available for counterinsurgency and the ever-changing objectives and goals in the conflict overtime. Different variables may be considered in this aspect: human security failure in the region achieving the publicly stated political and military goals, the control of the incumbent government of the majority of the population, or simply the perspective of the people. Despite the complexity in assessing COIN operations it is important to identify success from failure. "If an agent cannot determine whether a strategy is succeeding or failing, then how does an agent determine what should be done" (Axelrod, 2000, p. 124).

> "While we were unable to discern any single most important COIN practice, the data suggests that good practices occur together (along with success) with such regularity that we cannot even rank their importance. Victory, it appears, does indeed have a thousand fathers—a substantial collection of effective practices and a host of complementary and mutually reinforcing lines of operation is what wins the day in COIN." (Paul, Colin & Beth, 2010, p. 2).

Assessing the counterinsurgency is complex as it needs to consider the process, the outputs and the outcomes of the operations. It is complex as it needs to consider security, economics and politics. Additionally, it is dependent on population perspectives and views of their well-being and roles of the different actors. This is the idea behind the concept of 'winning hearts and minds.' It also requires measuring the empowerment and legitimacy of the local actors as it aims originally to enhance their capabilities to control the local situation (Campbell, 2009).

A new paradigm was also presented for assessment in counterinsurgency that overlooks the current state of the war while keeping an eye on future challenges and opportunities. The

paradigm considered two main aspects to measure: the strategic and the campaign assessments. The strategic is a narrative description of the strategic environment. The campaign assessments are standards that help gauge the accomplishment of campaign tasks (Schroden, et.al. 2013)

The US used a quantitative analysis to assess counterinsurgency. Although COIN is operated on a decentralized mechanism, the assessment is suggested on a centralized level. They used two methods: the effects-based assessments and the pattern and trend analysis. The effects-based assessment rests on quantifying events on the ground to produce centralized and highly accurate reports. The 'pattern and trends analysis' is a centralized quantitative analysis which includes mostly impressionistic with some deterministic analysis about the campaign (Connable, 2012). Connable criticizes the US COIN assessment claiming that "centralized assessments built from aggregated data do not produce transparent or credible reports"; also, "there is general agreement that information and data sets in COIN assessment materials are inaccurate and incomplete to a significant yet unknown degree."

Setting indicators and metrices are important to define progress towards the desired goals. Kilcullen (2010) presents a list of metrics that measures COIN. According to Kilcullen, metrices should not be limited to output indicators as the kill ratio, ration of wins to losses, ratio of kills to wounds/capture. Kilcullen suggested indicators of four categories: the population, the supported (host nation) government, the security forces (military and police) and the enemy. Within the population category, Kilcullen considers output indicators relevant to the operational side of the COIN and he also considers outcome indicators of economic security and safety.

## Critiques of Counterinsurgency

Applicability of counterinsurgency was criticized by many scholars, especially by considering the impact on Iraq and Afghanistan. Gventer (2014) presented the paradox of counterinsurgency "to apply rigid doctrine to circumstances that defy rigidification" (P. 54). Hence, Gventer perceives that asymmetric warfare should be tackled uniquely. Gventer ensures this paradox through the cases of Iraq and Afghanistan. In Iraq counterinsurgency did not reduce the level of violence. And, in Afghanistan counterinsurgency is very difficult given the absence of a competent and legitimate host government and the existence of insurgents in neighboring countries.

> "Insurgencies, like cancers, exist in thousands of forms, and there are dozens of techniques to treat them, hundreds of different populations in which they

> occur, and several major schools of thought on how best to deal with them. The idea that there is one single 'silver bullet' panacea for insurgency is therefore as unrealistic as the idea of a universal cure for cancer" (Kilcullen, 2010, p. 1)

Scholars criticized counterinsurgency using Clausewitz as a reference (Gventer, 2014 & Smith, 2014). Smith (2014) uses Clausewitz to show that since wars are different in each and every case, it is not possible to categorize wars into conventional and irregular. Smith claims this is "trying to divide war into something that is inherently indivisible" and that wars don't possess "comparable characteristics with other wars beyond describing their universal essence to achieve goals of policy through violence."

Other scholars criticized external counterinsurgency (Buntak & Mikac, 2011). These criticisms perceive that activities conducted by domestic administration are effective and more accepted than when the same task is conducted by the intervening forces. External intervention is perceived as occupation in many cases.

Some criticism favored peacebuilding processes as one part of counterinsurgency. "Counterinsurgency and counterterrorism people need to start talking more with the peacebuilding and development community, and they both need to talk much more with the rule-of-law community ... We need to look at our theories of top-down state building and recognize what empirical evidence from the field is telling us: that bottom-up, civil society approaches are having much greater success than top down, state-based approaches" (Kilcullen, 2010, p. 160).

Legitimacy is a central issue while criticizing counterinsurgency. According to the US counterinsurgency doctrine legitimacy is achieved through the acceptance of an authority by a society, and control, which are the central issues in insurgencies and counterinsurgencies.

## Conclusion

No two insurgencies are alike. Insurgency and counterinsurgency warfare differ since the context is different, the strengths of the two parties are different, the context and the support of the population is also different. The motives behind insurgency and the external support is different, and the strength of the belligerents are different from case to case. Therefore, there is no unified mechanism and strategy that should be used to tackle each case. In general, one size does not fit all.

Galula presented the insurgency; “in the cold” and “in the heat” period; the categorization is important as it helps drive the counterinsurgency direction. It is also important as in many cases the governments miscalculate the possibility of the insurgency turning from cold to heat; and hence it doesn’t resolve the political issues until a military one is needed.

As insurgency erupts out of political or economic dilemmas, the steps needed for countering its inception should tackle the root causes. A governmental strategy that is sensitive to human security and bridges policy and implementation is the one that is able to defeat an insurgency. Additionally, external counterinsurgency should mainly tackle the root causes. According to Galula, building or rebuilding the political machine should be from the population upward. It is mainly a political means with 80% political and 20% force.

Counterinsurgency, by definition, is a long-term conflict. It affects the lives of people, human casualties and human wellbeing is perhaps the biggest challenge for the international community. However, the first step in counterinsurgency is establishing security for and of the people. Every countering step should be focusing on the root causes and tackling the different dimensions of human security.

Counterinsurgency is a contest of winning the legitimacy; it is the struggle between competing legitimacies. Both the insurgents and the government claim legitimacy. The insurgents seek to develop their own legitimacy by jeopardizing the legitimacy of the host government while attempting to develop their own credibility. On the other hand, the government will try to attack the credibility of the insurgents while strengthening its own. The conflict of legitimizing their role is the basis for building counterinsurgency doctrine as they are mainly focused on winning the population. Furthermore, counterinsurgency is fundamentally a struggle over the people and over the territory. Winning the hearts and minds means winning the population and acquiring more information, more support, and more stability.

This chapter presented the life cycle of insurgency and suggested that counterinsurgency should be planned according to the different phases of the life cycle. If insurgency wins the population in the maturity phase, it will get to the level of chronic insurgency.

# Chapter 3: Human Security in Fragile States

## Introduction

Human security employs a hybrid approach that is based on protection and empowerment principles. This requires an assessment of the vulnerabilities and capacities of the communities; moreover, it involves strategies that enhance institutional structural capacities to protect the people. Different questions stem from this practicality. Who provides human security to the people? Who are the main players? What are the different roles they play? What are the available initiatives local and international? Does it really lead to human security?

In an asymmetric conflict many citizens (if not all) lack the freedom from fear, freedom from want, and freedom to live in dignity. However, various actors in the conflict come to the fore to provide or claiming that they will provide these securities. The services and protection they provide may incidentally meet the citizens' security needs but the motivating factor is usually not to provide human security, but rather to realize political goals.

A complementary map of humanitarian players has been developed by the Global Humanitarian Assistance program (see Figure 8). The range of actors is broad and diverse. There is the local government and the international governments that provide humanitarian funding through the UN, the International Red Cross and Red Crescent, NGOs, and the local government. The map also includes the UN organizations that provide direct support. The list includes the private donors who provide financial support for the different partners. Additionally, the map includes the military actors with specific reference to the peacekeeping missions and the military actors deployed to support humanitarian response.

In order to answer the main question of this research "What is the impact of counterinsurgency on human security?", this chapter considers the players that have a role during counterinsurgency. These include the insurgents who have their own objectives; the state that is trying to regain control; the humanitarian organizations that are there to ensure humanitarian presence, and often there are international peacekeeping or peace enforcing missions, whose functions and capacities depend on the context of their mandate. This section illustrates human security provided by each and an analysis of the intervention with respect to human security aspects.

Figure 8: **Map of Aid players**


Source: Scott, 2014.

## State

The state has the primary responsibility for the well-being of its citizens. It is the duty of the state to respect all human rights, to protect individuals from a third party that might threaten the human rights or the quality of life, and to fulfil needs derived from rights. It is thus the responsibility of the state to respect the human security needs of its citizens; to ensure economic security, food security, health security, environmental security, personal security, community security, and political security. It is the state responsibility to protect citizens from threats including poverty, hunger, diseases, pollution and environment degradation, all forms of violence, discrimination, and political repression.

The contractarian view of the state suggests that citizens adhere to the government for a guarantee of protection (McCord, 1999). According to Thomas Hobbes (2001) living without the state is "continual fear and danger of violent death, and the life of man solitary, poor, nasty, brutish, and short." Hence, it is the security of the citizens that justifies the state's existence. According to Immanuel Kant, the State is the necessary instrument of peace, and that peace will follow if states had liberal governments and if they opened themselves to trade with other similar states in a liberal league. Kant's theory is based on two core principles: respect of the human beings and the legal principle that underlies the government (C.J, 1949). According to

John Locke, people entered into two contracts, one is social and the other is political. In the social contract people unite as a community, while the political contract is concluded with the government to enforce the law (Obo & Coker, 2014).

For Marxists the state is primarily an apparatus used by the class of wealthy people. The state is based on the material basis in relation to "relative scarcity." In general, the state is controlled by the economically dominant class, enabling it to maintain its control over the exploited classes, which implies a separation of the ruling class from the state. Additionally, the state is part of the "superstructure" of society; where the base is made up of the instruments of production, the social class and laboring classes and the relations between these classes. The highest form of the state is the democratic republic, in which the capitalist class exercises its power indirectly (Obo & Coker, 2014).

From the political systems perspective, according to David Easton, the essential variables on which the political system depends are the values for the society, which will then need to be induced and form the binding principles. With this, he considers that the main function of the state is the distribution of values for its citizens. According to Easton, the political system model focuses on a system with defined inputs and outputs, which is based on the confining variables of the systemization, scarcity, allocation, maximization, self -regulation, and feedback. (Easton, 1965). The input is comprised of demand and support: demands refers to a set of claims, desires and needs of the public; while the demand is formed of appeals and agitations. There is also the support mechanism that sustains the system; this refer to political obedience, values or ideologies that people hold towards the system. Easton also suggests the intra societal and the extra societal environment in which this system operates. Almond and Coleman list seven functions of political systems: political socialization, interest articulation, interest aggregation, political communication, rulemaking, rule application, and rule adjudication (Almond & Coleman 1960). Apparently, the state in this system is concerned with the interests and wants of its citizens thus supporting freedom from want, freedom from fear and freedom to live in dignity.

Charles Tilly, on the other hand, perceives the states as "relatively centralized, differentiated organizations the officials of which more or less successfully claim control over the chief concentrated means of violence within a population inhabiting a large, contiguous territory" (Tilly 1985, p. 170). For him the state is a "protection racket"; it offers protection from local and external violence. Tilly also suggests that the prices charged from the citizens are in return to the protection provided; which is generally perceived as insufficient by the states (Tilly 1985). Accordingly, there are four different activities carried out by the state: war making

(eliminating or neutralizing rivals outside the territories), state making (eliminating or neutralizing rivals inside the territories), protection, and extraction (Tilly 1985). According to Tilly, the state is the main provider of human security of the people; the state provides protection and services. The state is the source that ensures the freedom from fear and freedom want.

Gildenhuys (1988: 4-9) presented the role of the state based on four dimensions; the laissez-faire capitalism, socialism, social welfare state, and the economic welfare state. The primary goal of the laissez fair is providing an environment of free competition amongst citizens while protecting the individuals and their property and defending the national community. The role of the state in socialism is to control markets, redistribute income, and to provide welfare services for all citizens. In the social welfare state, the goal is to ensure an enabling environment to provide citizens the good life through education, pensions, medical care, housing, and protection against loss of employment or business. The state based on economic welfare creates an environment where individuals can achieve their personal economic welfare.

Critical theorists and feminists have different perspectives of the role of the state. Critical theorists perceive that the state force protected people to accept the power and values of the state that are often inconsistent with those individuals, thus neglecting the voice of the people. Feminism considers the state as the center of power dominated by masculine nature and patriarchal ideologies, which have created wars and human sufferings. Therefore, critical theorists and feminists consider the state as the threat producer (Peou, 2014: 146-175). Apparently, suggested definitions reveal that a state could be the human security provider, but could also be the threat-producer. Although the definition of the state relies on a basic function which is protection of the individuals, implementation could be much different.

According to international law another responsibility of the state is to provide human security for non-citizens living in its territories. Non-citizens are those with permanent resident status, migrants, refugees, asylum seekers, victims of trafficking, foreign students, temporary visitors, and other non-immigrants and stateless people (UN, 2006). According to international law non-citizens should be guaranteed their full rights:

> *"Non-citizens should have freedom from arbitrary killing, inhuman treatment, slavery, arbitrary arrest, unfair trial, invasions of privacy, refoulment, forced labour, child labour and violations of humanitarian law. They also have the right to marry; protection as minors; peaceful association and assembly; equality; freedom of religion and belief; social, cultural and*

> *economic rights; labour rights (for example, as to collective bargaining, workers' compensation, healthy and safe working conditions); and consular protection. While all human beings are entitled to equality in dignity and rights, States may narrowly draw distinctions between citizens and non-citizens with respect to political rights explicitly guaranteed to citizens and freedom of movement."* (UN, 2006, p. 5)

Hence, international law suggests that it is the responsibility of the state to provide all aspects of human security to non-citizens under its protection. However, despite the fact that non-citizens are guaranteed human security through international law, the reality on the ground is often very different; as the treatment of asylum seekers in eastern Europe has shown in the summer and fall of 2015 (Hegedűs, 2016).

Based on the above, human security is the basic responsibility of the state. However, sometimes states are not able to protect their people. This is due to lack of state effectiveness and "fragile state" (Stewart & Brown, 2009). The Centre for Research on Inequality, Human Security and Ethnicity provided an operational definition of fragile state based on three factors. First, authority failures; these include significant organized political violence and a high level of crime. Second, service failures where the state fails to ensure all citizens access to health services, basic education, water and sanitation, basic transport and energy infrastructure, and reduction in income poverty. The third factor is the legitimacy failure that occurs where the state lacks legitimacy with no popular support. The International Monetary Fund (IMF), defined fragile states as: "States in which the government is unable to deliver basic services and security to the population" (Corinne, et al 2015).

Failed states fail to provide human security, it is a trap of humanitarian and security threats (Rada, 2011). They are typified by enduring violence, where civil wars stem from ethnic or religious enmity. Failed states are not able to control their borders or some parts of their territory. Therefore, states fail to provide security or freedom from fear, they also oppress their citizens while privileging some elite and limiting the goods and services provided, with effective education and health services only privatized and discriminate economic opportunities. Additionally, failed states are associated with criminal violence, criminal oppression of the citizens leads to criminal gangs taking over the control. Failed states also lack the proper judiciary system, while the armed forces are highly politicized. Moreover, they are characterized by deteriorated or destroyed infrastructure and shortage of food. Failed states also have high levels of corruption (Rotberg, 2003).

Another measure to consider the failed states is the state effectiveness criteria. The crisis affecting state effectiveness is mainly discussed in terms of stages and crisis which the political system has to pass through while achieving political development (Pye, 1966 & Binder et.al, 1971). The identity crisis is the first factor affecting state performance; there must be shared identities and sense of loyalty amongst population. “The absence of national identity could be a powerful centrifugal force” (Wang, 2007, p. 5). The second crisis is the legitimacy crisis which refers to people’s recognition of the political authority as legitimate and valid. The third level is the penetration level which ensures that the political system reaches to every level of the society in regards of policies and services. Participation crisis is the fourth level, which refers to the degree of people’s participation in political decision making and the influx of new participants. The fifth is integration crisis that reflects “the extent to which the entire polity is organized as a system of interacting relationships.” The distribution crisis is the sixth criteria that refer to the equal and egalitarian distribution of goods and services.

In 2014, the term “failed state” faced a verbal twist, with the publications using the term “fragile states” instead. This change reflected the continuum of state development. The “failed” status reflects a denouement status of no return and a permanent instability. Fragility, on the other hand, demonstrates the importance of measuring the state effectiveness and the indices to achieve development, increase in human security and improved livelihoods. Goodfellow (2015, p. 3) defined state effectiveness as “situations where the stated aims of government, codified in policies, laws, and regulations, are translated into accomplishment”. Therefore, the concern is about the implementation. Every state has its own strength even the weakest states.

The Organization for Economic Co-operation and Development OECD has presented a new term for fragile states; namely, “states of fragility”. This term helps identify countries that are most vulnerable to five dimensions of risk and vulnerability linked to fragility: violence; access to justice for all; effective, accountable, and inclusive institutions; economic foundations; and capacity to adapt to social, economic and environmental shocks and disasters (OECD, 2015). The African Development Bank defines “situations of fragility” as: “A condition of elevated risk of institutional breakdown, societal collapse or violent conflict” (Cooke & Downie, 2015, p. 7). Despite the lack of a consensus on a definition, all definitions presented above entail that fragile states are generally not capable of providing the various elements of human security for all.

The United Kingdom Department for International Development DFID perceive that state fragility is mainly linked to weak state institutions and that all fragility indicators are linked to institutional performance:

> *"…the central driver of fragility is weak state institutions. All other factors associated with fragility are in themselves linked to weak state institutions as a driving force. For example, we shall see that poverty is certainly linked to fragility, but not all poor areas are necessarily fragile. Fragility can occur when poverty or economic decline are combined with the presence of weak state institutions that cannot manage the very real grievances caused by, for example, inequitable distribution of resources or unequal access to formal institutions. Essentially, this means that in fragile states political institutions are not strong enough to manage effectively the natural conflicts that occur in society. This 'fragility' or weakness will be most evident at any time that the state undergoes processes of economic, political and social change." (Vallings & Moreno-Torres, 2005, p. 7)*

Global indices of state fragility categorize states according to a cross-section of several symptoms of fragility; thus, ranking countries according to different sectoral indicators. Accordingly, the countries are ranked in accordance to different indicators and receive similar rankings with different situations. To overcome these nuances, those tools have been refined to ensure meaningful rankings. The German government developed multiple "fragility profiles": levels of authority, legitimacy and capacity. The Organization for Economic Co-operation and Development OECD indices are based on economy, environment, politics, and security. And, the World Bank refers to fragile situations rather than fragile states (Bressan, 2020).

In fragile states, even the least effective, a certain percentage of the citizens will defend the legitimacy of the state and its capacity to provide human security. This segment usually benefits in some way from the status quo of the state. Its members are among the decision makers, or depend on the state for their economic prosperity, or are associated in some other way with the existing government. They feel that the government is their source of human security to live free from fear, free from want and free to live in dignity; they perceive that the attrition of the state is an attrition of their own human security. Others may have an ideological commitment to the state in its current form, and defend it even if it is contrary to their economic or other interests. Hence, they defend the state as a means to defend their existence and their human security, which may be perceived by external observers as irrational and sometimes immoral.

## Insurgents

Insurgencies arise for reasons that differ from case to case; however according to Bard O'Neill (2005) there are nine types of insurgents, each characterized by a different goal: anarchist, egalitarian, traditionalist, apocalyptic-utopian, pluralist, secessionist, reformist, preservationist, and commercialist. Here we will discuss the most prominent type that poses the highest threat in the twenty-first century. The traditionalist insurgents "articulate primordial and sacred values" O'Neill (2005); values that are religiously or ancestrally rooted. Traditionalist insurgents perceive that their belief is the only right belief, and they feel contempt towards any who do not share their belief. Most traditionalist insurgents try to restore old systems. This type seeks to establish political structures lead by autocratic leadership. The Islamic State as such falls under the traditionalist insurgency: its adherents fight to turn back the clock to form a government that fits the 9th century, and to retrieve what they claim as their God-given rights. They are revolutionaries aiming to build a world order based on the *Sharia*.

According to Galula (1964: 9-10) an insurgency is fluid since the insurgents neither have responsibility nor concrete assets; therefore, any service provided for their associates is perceived as value added for the insurgents. They will provide all possible services and use their propaganda value to recruit new adherents and gain more control. All efforts are designed to weaken the government's control and legitimacy while trying to gain more control, legitimacy, and more popular support for the insurgency.

Public support of insurgents is due to provision of human security or an alternative to state effectiveness. One main factor underlying public support for insurgency is the effectiveness of the insurgents, which includes strong leadership, ideological package, resource mobilization, opportunist adaptation, presence, and tactics. The second factor is the motivation for supporting the group or the cause. Those motivation factors could be due to ideological, religious or even glory excitement attractions; duty and honor; or financial, power or prestigious rewards. Davis et.al. (2012. Stewart (2015) indicates that some insurgencies divert financial and personnel resources to benefit both supporters and non-supporters, while other groups limit the benefits to their supporters. Providing social services are means used for recruiting new members. The third factor is the perceived legitimacy of violence; this legitimacy could be grounded in religion and ideology, a desire for revenge, cultural propensity, or necessity and desperation. The fourth reason is the acceptability of costs and risks which could be due to intimidation, assessment of likely victor, personal risks and opportunity cost, or countervailing social costs and pressures.

External support to insurgents is also related to insurgent's effectiveness. "External support is more likely for moderately strong groups where support is more likely to be offered and accepted, in the presence of transnational, international rivalries, and when the government receives foreign support" (Salehyan et.al. 2011, p.710). External support to insurgents exists when insurgent have a clear central leadership that exercises control over its activities. It is also possible to receive this support when the state itself receives external support (Salehyan et.al. 2011, p. 64).

The insurgents usually provide human security for a segment of people who are strongly committed to them. These people usually deny the government's legitimacy and capacity to provide human security. They are the elite of the insurgents; they are provided with the highest level of security the insurgents are capable of; hence, their association with the insurgents provides them a perspective of freedom from fear, freedom from want and freedom to live in dignity. It is a mutual benefit as insurgencies achieve their strategic goals to expand and get empowered through their affiliates; by winning hearts and mind.

## Counterinsurgents

Counterinsurgency is the state's (and sometimes international actors') response to an insurgency. As the insurgents apply violence to seize power, the state responds with more violence, and this is how the counterinsurgency starts. According to Galula, "Counterinsurgency cannot be defined except by reference to its cause" (Galula, 1964, p. 1). It is an asymmetric condition that results from the difference between each party's assets and liabilities; asymmetry also lies in the diplomatic power and the legitimacy. Though the Government strives to sustain its services to all during counterinsurgency, sustained operations carry high political and economic burdens. The escalation in insurgent operations results in the government's increase in the expenditure on counterinsurgency as in the case of Malaya and Algeria (Galula, 1964, p. 9). Hence, insurgency affects the ability of the state to provide human security to all. The state may also attempt to provide services to the population in these areas. In this case the resources poured into these areas will be helping the insurgents, rather than the population; they are likely to take most of the resources for themselves, and blame the government for failing to provide. If the state also loses control over some territory, it will be unable to provide services to the people in lost or contested areas (even if the resources are otherwise available).

According to NATO doctrine counterinsurgency is defined as the "comprehensive civilian and military efforts made to defeat an insurgency and to address any core grievances" (NATO AAP-06 Edition 2019. p. 60.) It is the set of political, economic, social, military, law enforcement, civil and psychological activities with the aim to defeat insurgency and address core grievances. From the definition it is clear that counterinsurgency employs various methods and tactics; it is not only based on military operations: it is also based on political, economic social, information, and infrastructure activities. In fact, the military aspect – however important it may be – is only a relatively small, subordinate part of the whole. NATO also emphasizes that in a fragile state counterinsurgency is needed as people will lack human security. Although NATO doctrine focuses on the military interventions per se, it describes major indicative activities and tasks in counterinsurgency that reflect non-military intervention; these include (but are not limited to): build human security, stimulate economic and infrastructure development, and foster host government capacity and legitimacy.

The US doctrine defines counterinsurgency as the "comprehensive civilian and military efforts designed to simultaneously defeat and contain insurgency and address its root causes" (US Army, 2014, JP 3-24). It also defines counterinsurgency using the military and nonmilitary measures: "the military role should be coordinated with the other instruments of national power that include diplomatic, informational, and economic parts" (US Army, 2014).

The involvement of external forces in the counterinsurgency does not reinforce the legitimacy of the state. Although the fragile state needs support, usually foreign counterinsurgents are not welcomed, and do not strengthen the position of the state. On the contrary, their intervention may lead to more opposition towards the government and to a more active insurgency – as the cases of Iraq and Afghanistan have shown.

The direct impact of military intervention on the people is visible. It affects the daily life of the people; it affects economic and social structures. The result is the deterioration of all services including education, health, the operation of all economic facilities, etc… It affects the targeted areas along with areas not directly targeted by the various belligerents. It degades freedom from fear, freedom from want and freedom to live in dignity.

## Humanitarian Organizations

The humanitarian organizations play a non-military role through relief and ensuring humanitarian presence. They also focus on denunciation of rights violations (Breakey, 2012). The humanitarian aid usually aims at preventing the disastrous consequences of the conflict; it

is simply aid for victims of the conflict (Perrin, 1998). "The need for outside help arises when the parties to a conflict are unable or unwilling to shoulder that responsibility" (Perrin, 1998, p. 1). According to Albert Schweitzer "Humanitarian consists in never sacrificing a human being to a purpose" (DuBois, 2018).

Several initiatives attempted to set the principles for humanitarian action. There are the providence principles identified by the Fundamental Principles of the Red Cross and Red Crescent Movement, UN General Assembly Resolution 46/182 and the Code of Conduct for the International Red Cross and Red Crescent Movement and NGOs in Disaster Relief (1994 Code of Conduct) (ICRC, 1994). Variations of the principles also emerged in the Humanitarian Charter and Minimum Standards in Disaster Response elements of the Sphere Project (Donini and Gordon, 2015). In 2003, a set of *"principles and good practices of humanitarian donorship"* was agreed in a meeting convened by the Swedish Government. The 23 principles and good practices provide both a framework to guide official humanitarian aid and a mechanism for donor accountability[15]. These include: responding to humanitarian needs, integrating relief and development, working with humanitarian partners, implementing international guiding principles, and promoting learning and accountability. In 2007, the Humanitarian Response Index HRI was developed that aims to identify and promote good donor practice and contribute to greater transparency, accountability and impact in humanitarian action. This index contributes to efforts to improve effectiveness and impact of relief and recovery efforts (López-Claros & Hidalgo Silvia, 2007:3).

Humanitarian assistance is based on four principles: humanity, impartiality, independence, and neutrality (Rufini & Ozerdem, 2005). According to the ICRC, the principle of impartiality means that the organization "makes no discrimination as to nationality, race, religious beliefs, class or political opinions. It strives to relieve the suffering of individuals, being guided solely by their needs, and to give priority to the most urgent cases of distress." The principle of neutrality entails that "in order to continue to enjoy the confidence of all, the Red Cross may not take sides in hostilities or engage at any time in controversies of a political, racial, religious or ideological nature" (ICRC, 1994, para 4)

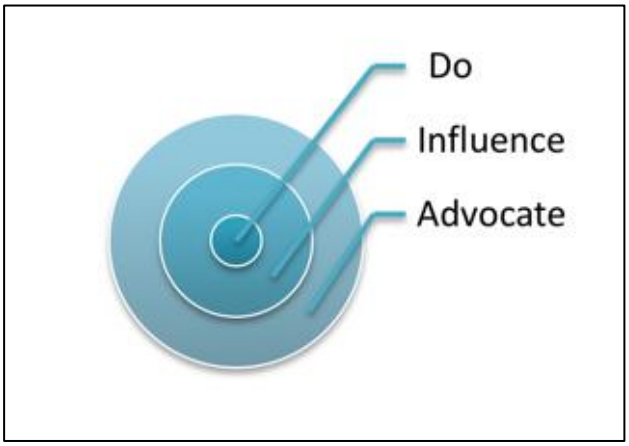
There has been a shift in the humanitarian aid from the delivery of emergency relief to long term developmentalism (Chandler, 2001). This has been flagged through the World Humanitarian Summit in 2016; where Ban Ki-moon called for the shift from delivering aid to "ending need" (Ban Ki-moon, 2016). The World Humanitarian Summit was held on May 23,

[15] https://reliefweb.int/sites/reliefweb.int/files/resources/EN-23-Principles-and-Good-Practice-of-Humanitarian-Donorship.pdf

2016 to set a new vision for addressing the growing humanitarian needs. The event called upon states, international organizations, and all the relevant stakeholders to commit to Ban Ki-moon's five core responsibilities of the agenda for humanity. These responsibilities include: to prevent and end conflict, to uphold norms that safeguard humanity, to leave no one behind, to move from delivering aid to ending need, and to invest in humanity (Ban Ki-moon, 2016). DuBois (2018) also focused on the idea of "emergency aid and beyond". He included two main principles: (a) a disequilibrium or set of extraordinary circumstances that marks a significant departure from 'normalcy' (the average); and (b) consequences (immediate needs that endanger or diminish life) that surpass existing or customary response capacities. According to Nascimento (2015), humanitarianism promised a "combination between the immediate needs and future development, reinforcement of local services and structures, empowerment, participation and enhancement of the population's capacities, human rights promotion and protection (including gender issues) and contributions to peacebuilding."

The Good Practice of Humanitarian Donorship defines the objective of humanitarian programming "to save lives, alleviate suffering and maintain human dignity … as well as to prevent and strengthen preparedness for the occurrence of such situations" (Scott, 2014, p. 1). In reality, not all organizations have the same role. Interventions range from the advocate to the influence and finally the do (see figure 9). There is a limited margin of what actors are able to do or control, some wider margin of what they can influence, and some due to the limited power or mandate can only advocate for others to act (Scott, 2014).

Figure 9: **Do, Influence, Advocate Interventions**




Source: (Scott, 2014)

However, in reality humanitarian assistance is politicized as it operates in a politically sensitive area "[all] actions are political; even to do nothing is political, since it implies acceptance of the status quo" (Rufini & Ozerdem, 2005).
Research has found that "the preponderance of the evidence indicates that aid has not been effective" (Doucouliagos & Paldam 2009, p. 433). In some cases, the aid modality leads to negative impact and increase in the level of conflict. One of the main challenges faced is when the assistance falls into the hand of the belligerents. For example, "in Bosnia, militias commandeered UNHCR relief" (Addison Tony 2000), and in Afghanistan border areas humanitarian aid was diverted to some terrorists based in refugee camps (Addison Tony 2000). Moreover, gathering people in refugee camps can give some belligerents the opportunity to recruit fighters, regain their power and intensify their attacks.

ICRC identified several negative effects of humanitarian aid on the victims of the conflict and their local systems. Aid leads to a dependent community in the long term, while it also prompts national leaders to allocate resources to arms rather than socio-economic programs. This would affect community expectations and government misuse of resources (Perrin, 1998, p. 324). In many cases, the humanitarian organizations face accusation of being on one side of the conflicting parties. This is usually a result of the difficulty to secure aid delivery as it was the case in supporting Rwanda refugees (Addison, 2000).

One of the main challenges facing humanitarian organizations during conflict is their access to the different areas of conflict. In some cases, humanitarian organizations are not able to monitor the work and are subcontracting their work to local NGOs. The UN monitor group to Somalia has revealed "corruption within the delivery of WFP food assistance" (Gha, 2010). On the other hand, during the intensive level of conflict humanitarian organizations face extreme restrictions on their work due to security reasons. In certain conditions, they cannot access areas of conflict, and they are able to provide only limited aid in comparison to the humanitarian needs.

At the essence of humanity is the idea that human beings are connected; however, in many cases humanitarian support lacks this connectivity. This is manifested through the physical separation between the humanitarian agencies and decision makers from one side and the communities affected by the crisis from another side. This is justified by the securitization of the humanitarian field mission, and is displayed by remote management of interventions. The Western humanitarian sector works from within 'a highly visible and separate "island of modernity that exposes the exclusivity of the international space and its unequal relationship

with the surrounding environment" (DuBois, 2018, p. 9). DuBois (2018) also addresses another separation, this time between humanitarian work and humanitarian outcomes. He mentioned that the effort is mostly on output level and doesn't reach the level of the outcomes describing it as the "growing gap between being busy and being productive" (p. 9).

The aims and objectives of the humanitarian organizations is based on human security. This is evident through the change in the vision from pure emergency to development, from planning for the people to planning with the people, and from working all for the case to working as one for all. However, the implementation is not always as envisioned, this is due to the lack of coordination with the other organizations and the local people along with the impact of the context they are operating in.

## Civil Society Organizations

Civil society organizations (CSOs) means "everything between the citizen and the state" (Oxfam, 2013). According to the UN, the CSOs are "Non-State, not-for-profit, voluntary entities formed by people in the social sphere that are separate from the State and the market. CSOs represent a wide range of interests and ties. They can include community-based organizations as well as non-governmental organizations (NGOs). In the context of the UN Guiding Principles Reporting Framework, CSOs do not include business or for-profit associations."[16] It is the organized society outside the sphere of the government and the private sector. It includes the development organizations operating locally and internationally including: media, labor unions, political parties, human rights activists, non-governmental organizations (NGOs), traditional and religious institutions and sport and welfare associations (Leeuwen & Verkoren, 2012).

The CSOs' capacity to respond to individual concerns is unique due to their knowledge, experience and organizational nature. They "could be the most able to mount a rapid response to sudden downturns in their areas" (Michael, 2002, p. 8), especially since they are engaged in the people's daily life and are aware of the changes that are taking place. Those CSOs emerge as a result of the local needs and through active engagement with the people. CSOs operate through a bottom-up approach, which position individuals at the center of concern, thus

[16] Source: https://www.ungpreporting.org/glossary/civil-society-organizations-csos/

fostering freedom from want and freedom from fear. This is ensured through motivation and mobilization of the people to take part in the implementation (Michael, 2002).

CSOs work on preventing threats to human security. They address health, education and economic development needs (Michael, 2002). They are the "imagined agent of development" (Pearce, 2005, p. 41), and the "imagined agent for peace" (Leeuwen & Verkoren, 2012). They are able to provide protection, prevention and empowerment (Michael, 2002). According to Oxfam (2013) empowerment is accomplished through encouraging active citizenship, especially among marginalized groups; protection is attained by making sure that the state is accountable to all the citizens and by providing services to complement the state. CSOs help support the vulnerable to be able to control their own lives, while addressing poverty through ensuring inclusion of all. Peinado (n.d.) considers humanitarian aid equally important to building capacities and empowerment of the vulnerable.

In fragile states, the role of CSOs is vital, and different from other countries. In fragile states, when public services are broken, CSOs become the hope for development. The role of the CSOs changes from advocacy to "public service delivery, improving governance and participatory decision making, and peacebuilding and conflict management" (World Bank, 2005, p. 6). In this case even donors channel their support and resources towards the NGOs. However, this implies reliance on a limited number of CSOs and hence on limited number of people or section of the people, as in most cases the CSOs do not serve on a national level. And in many cases CSOs are politicized and their activities are politicized too. Under conflict situations, these CSOs are supported for the time-span of the conflict thus hindering sustainability of operations and services. In Guinea Bissau, community-based organizations (CBOs) are being created to overcome the state inefficiency; however, they are supported on a project-by-project basis, giving them no potential for institutional development or sustainability (World Bank, 2005). Operations are threatened by repressive legislations and restrictions of authoritarian governments. In Togo, the repressive state and the donor cutbacks affected the services provided by both the state and the CSOs. This enabled NGOs to take advantage of the poor communities. In Afghanistan, the CSOs face different challenges that include lack of financial sustainability, possible internal corruption in some segments of the CSOs, the perception of NGOs as donor or charity-driven, fund dependent agents, and imported models (Nemat & Werner, 2016).

In Europe the CSOs play a key role in the provision of social services and they facilitate social inclusion (Neumayr, 2009). In some parts of central and eastern Europe CSOs have become important partners of the public sector by advocating for social services.

> *"They are seen as drivers of change, a space for initiatives and society's development. They are also providers of alternative economic models and social innovations. Their work is affected most by the emergence of new and diverse needs that require new types of responses. It seems that civil society is considered a panacea for almost all EU problems." (Divjak, Forbici, 2017, p. 6)*

However, in other parts of Eastern Europe, CSOs are labeled as foreign agents and treated as enemies by the authorities.

The CSOs in general are in the field directly working with the people and therefore they are able to provide human security. However, there are always preventing factors that halt the support and avert the impact. These could range from lack of financial capacity, corruption, to lack of governmental support.

## Humanitarian interventions

The provision of humanitarian assistance takes place in a variety of settings. These include: occupation, international and internal armed conflicts and in the events of crisis and disasters.

Humanitarian interventions are based on the International Humanitarian Law IHL. The two main treaty sources are the Hague Convention (1907) that restricts the means and methods of warfare and the four Geneva Conventions (1949) that provides protection to categories of vulnerable people and property affected by armed conflict. it limits the rights of the conflicting parties to use methods of warfare of their choice.

It is also based on the international human rights law IHRL, international refugee law, international criminal law ICL, and international disaster response laws rules and principles IDRL. The IHRL outlines the obligations and duties of states to respect, protect and fulfil human rights. The international refugee law aims at protecting and assisting individuals who have crossed an international border and are at risk or victims of persecution in their country of origin. The ICL prohibits certain categories of conduct viewed as serious atrocities (primarily war crimes, crimes against humanity and genocide) and seeks to hold accountable individual

perpetrators of such conduct. And, the IDRL aims ensuring humanitarian assistance to populations in the context of natural disasters (GSDRC, 2013).

The target of humanitarian interventions is the state that does not consent or request the intervention. The beneficiaries – as perceived by the intervener – are the people of the target state. The reason behind the intervention is extreme violation of human rights from the target state towards its citizens. In theory humanitarian intervention aims at preventing human misery and enforce justice.

The UN Charter in 1945 defined the use of force and consequently the humanitarian intervention. The basic law regarding the prohibition of the threat or the use of force is laid in Article 2(4) of the UN Charter:

> *"All Members shall refrain in their international relations from the threat or use of force against the territorial integrity or political independence of any state, or in any other manner inconsistent with the Purposes of the United Nations."*

Two exceptions to this prohibition are clearly mentioned: (1) the right of individual or collective self-defense in response to an armed attack against a state (Article 51 of the UN Charter), (2) the use of force can be mandated by the UN Security Council in case of a threat to or a breach of international peace or an act of aggression (Chapter VII, Articles 39 and 42 of the UN Charter). These prohibitions were not present in the NATO intervention against the Federal Republic of Yugoslavia (FRY). On 24 March 1999, the NATO started its Airstrikes against the FRY with the justification that the FRY did not comply with the demand of the international community regarding the actions in Kosovo. Thus, this intervention does not comply with the two prohibitions: it was not a case of self-defense, and the operation was not authorized by the UN Security Council (Chesterman 2001:1). However, additional exceptions have been discussed that allow for humanitarian intervention. Ian Brownlie (1974) included additional exception "the threat or use of armed force by a state, a belligerent community, or an international organization, with the object of protecting human rights."

> *"When a state commits cruelties against and persecution of its nationals in such a way as to deny their fundamental human rights and to shock the conscience of mankind that matter ceases to be of sole concern to the*

*state and even intervention in the interest of humanity might be legally permissible" (Chesterman 2001, p. 2).*

The Danish Institute of International affairs presents the competing discourse for and against the humanitarian intervention. Proponents of humanitarian interventions perceive that justice is a prerequisite for state stability and hence for stability on the international level. Critics of humanitarian intervention perceive that order is a prerequisite for justice and humanitarian intervention endangers this order (DUPI, 1999, p. 44).

Critics perceive that in civil wars humanitarian interventions cause more armed resistance and high levels of conflict. The Danish Institute of International affairs argues that "military intervention in civil wars between oppressed minorities and central governments as well as sharp rhetoric about the universal protection of minorities involves a risk of changing the calculations of leaders of minority groups and encouraging armed resistance against government coercion" (DUPI, 1999, p. 42). Therefore, humanitarian interventions do not lead to human security for all; on the contrary it leads to a vicious cycle of more conflicts and more sufferings.

The principle of non-interference is that sovereign states shall not intervene in each other's internal affairs. It is based on the respect of sovereignty governing the states relations of rights and obligations.

## Responsibility to Protect R2P

The UN Security Council is the principal body established to maintain international peace and security. Ever since its founding, the main concern was interstate relationships. In the past the UNSC rarely focused on the wellbeing of individuals. With the ever-changing global forces of economy, information and mass migration flows, the focus changed to individual human security. Within this change and with attention to the Canadian initiative of human security and responsibility to protect, the international practice of UN operations was affected.

International law recognizes the right to military intervention following the principle of "the responsibility to protect". State sovereignty implies responsibility, and the primary responsibility for the protection of its people lies with the state itself. However, "where a population is suffering serious harm, as a result of internal war, insurgency, repression or state failure, and the state in question is unwilling or unable to halt or avert it, the principle of non-intervention yields to the international responsibility to protect" (ICISS, 2001). The

responsibility to protect is restricted to the following cases as identified in the 2005 World Summit Outcome Document that include atrocity crimes of genocide crimes against humanity, war crimes and ethnic cleansing (GA: UN, 2005).

> ***Responsibility to protect populations from genocide, war crimes, ethnic cleansing and crimes against humanity***
>
> *"138. Each individual State has the responsibility to protect its populations from genocide, war crimes, ethnic cleansing and crimes against humanity. This responsibility entails the prevention of such crimes, including their incitement, through appropriate and necessary means. We accept that responsibility and will act in accordance with it. The international community should, as appropriate, encourage and help States to exercise this responsibility and support the United Nations in establishing an early warning capability.*
>
> *139. The international community, through the United Nations, also has the responsibility to use appropriate diplomatic, humanitarian and other peaceful means, in accordance with Chapters VI and VIII of the Charter, to help to protect populations from genocide, war crimes, ethnic cleansing and crimes against humanity. In this context, we are prepared to take collective action, in a timely and decisive manner, through the Security Council, in accordance with the Charter, including Chapter VII, on a case-by-case basis and in cooperation with relevant regional organizations as appropriate, should peaceful means be inadequate and national authorities are manifestly failing to protect their populations from genocide, war crimes, ethnic cleansing and crimes against humanity. We stress the need for the General Assembly to continue consideration of the responsibility to protect populations from genocide, war crimes, ethnic cleansing and crimes against humanity and its implications, bearing in mind the principles of the Charter and international law. We also intend to commit ourselves, as necessary and appropriate, to helping States build capacity to protect their populations from genocide, war crimes, ethnic cleansing and crimes against humanity and to assisting those which are under stress before crises and conflicts break out." (UN, 2005)*

Article 138 refers to the responsibility of the local individual state ensuring that it is an internal responsibility. Article 139 comes next to clarify that in case of the state's unwillingness or inability to provide protection, then it becomes the responsibility of the international community.

Another important milestone in the development of the R2P is the work done by the Panel on Threats, Challenges and Change that was established by the Security General. The Panel included the concept in their report A More Secure World: Our Shared Responsibility. The Panel suggested indicated that it is the responsibility of the state to protect its citizens; however, when the state is not able or willing to do so this responsibility is handed to the international community. The important aspect in the view presented is the collective vision of the responsibility to protect aiming to strengthen collective security (Stahn, 2007). This implied the use of military force as a last resort. The Secretary General embraced this in his report "In Larger Freedom: Towards Development, Security, and Human Rights for All". In this report the responsibility to protect was "removed from the context of collective security and the use of force, and replaced to that of the rule of law in the chapter on the freedom to live in dignity" (Sulyok, 2013, p. 742); this ensured that the military intervention is the last resort, which should be authorized by the by the Security Council.

Another important milestone in the R2P came in 2009 through the UN report "Implementing the Responsibility to Protect" (UN, 2009). The report introduced the three pillars on which the responsibility to protect stands. The first pillar is the protection responsibilities of the state. This is the enduring responsibility of the state to protect its population. The second pillar is the international assistance and capacity building. This pillar ensures the commitment of the international community to assist states to meet these obligations. The third pillar is the timely and decisive response when a state is failing to provide such protection.

The responsibility to protect includes three responsibilities: responsibility to prevent, responsibility to react, and responsibility to rebuild (Massingham, 2009). The responsibility to prevent is the first responsibility of the sovereign state and the communities and institutions within. This requires ensuring fair treatment and fair opportunities that guarantees accountability, good governance, and protection of human rights, promoting social and economic development, and ensuring a fair distribution of resources. However, in certain cases this prevention needs the support from the international community, through means of development assistance, addressing root causes of the conflict, support initiatives of good governance and rule of law, or mediation efforts (ICISS, 2001).

The responsibility to protect also entails responsibility to react to situations requiring human protection. When the responsibility to prevent fails or the state is not willing or unable to institute preventive measures, the responsibility to react is followed. This responsibility is ensured through political, economic or judicial measures and in extreme cases through military action (ICISS, 2001).

After reaction the responsibility is to follow up and rebuild. This implies that following any military intervention there is a responsibility to build a durable peace and promoting good governance and sustainable development. This requires working closely with the local government who will progressively take over this responsibility to rebuild in a manner that ensures sustainability of reconstruction and rehabilitation. This includes financial and technical support to the local authorities and local institutions (ICISS, 2001). The post-intervention responsibility is as important as the military intervention, otherwise the conditions that prompted the intervention will be exacerbated. The responsibility to rebuild must be prioritized and work on the following:

> *"encouraging reconciliation and demonstrating respect for human rights; fostering political inclusiveness and promoting national unity; ensuring the safe, smooth and early repatriation and resettlement of refugees and displaced persons; reintegrating ex-combatants and others into productive society; curtailing the availability of small arms; and mobilizing the domestic and international resources for reconstruction and economic recovery."* (ICISS, 2001, p. 66).

The commission regarded the Security Council as the appropriate body to authorize intervention. However, it also indicated that the permanent members have the right to call for alternative solutions if this body fails to discharge its responsibilities (ICISS, 2001, p. 53).

According to the report of the Secretary General "Implementing the Responsibility to Protect" the responsibility of protect rests on three equally important non-sequential pillars. Pillar one is the 'protection responsibilities of the state' aiming to protect its population. Pillar two is the 'International assistance and capacity building' aiming to support the state in meeting those obligations. Pillar three is the responsibility of member states to respond collectively in a 'timely and decisive' manner. The response could range from "pacific measures under Chapter VI of the Charter, coercive ones under Chapter VII and/or collaboration with regional and sub-regional arrangements under Chapter VIII" (UN, 2009d). The responsibility to protect targets

four violations within this document: genocide, war crimes, ethnic cleansing and crimes against humanity. This implies a narrow consideration of human security.

The responsibility to protect stands on the state (pillar one), the international community (pillar two) and the member states (pillar three). Pillar two is the responsibility of the international community; however, the international community is not defined in this case. Pillar three is the responsibility of the member states; "the use of R2P is predicated on the assent of the UN Security Council" (Stark, 2011). However, it is the structure of the UN Security Council that affects the decision of the R2P (Stark, 2011). This will define the type and duration of the intervention.

The question is: does R2P provide human security. In its first pillar the focus is on the obligation of the state, this ensures prevention and punishment of genocide, war crimes and crimes against humanity. As mentioned earlier the role of the state is not only to prevent but also to provide human security in its broad sense. Pillar two is about the assistance and capacity building; however, this responsibility is not clear as to what it includes and when to interfere; therefore, although this is a means to support the provision of human security, it is not clear how this will indeed support human security. Pillar three is the right to intervention of the member states.

The Libyan counterinsurgency is an example of official planning that focused on humanitarian aspects, and undeclared aims that utilized military measures only. The aim of the operation mandated by the UN Security Council was "No-fly zone, the protection of civilians, and the enforcement of arms embargo" (Ucko & Egnell, 2014). The intervention in reality was commenced by NATO without deploying ground forces with the unofficial aim of "regime change in favor of the National Transitional Council" (Ucko & Egnell, 2014, p. 70). This model depicts that although the R2P focuses on human security; however, when it starts the political factors become the drivers of the situation.

With this structure the R2P helps provide human security for the people. However, the question is whether this is the reality on the ground, or implementation is different. In reality, the focus is mostly on the responsibility to react and the use of military intervention (Sulyok, 2013). Although all documents admit the importance of early warnings, of the prevention and the concern to human security, they all in fact focus on the reaction and the military aspects. Mostly such interventions do not even consider the engagement of the local community or authorities, as was the case in Lybia.

The analysis of the R2P reveals that in theory this is a noble concept; however, the impact of political background always comes to the surface. In its doctrine the R2P includes the military actions while including human security and preventive measures. This has limited to some

extent the sovereignty of the state by subordinating it to international law that the state may not be signatory to, and by monitoring the state's domestic situation. Human security perceives that the ultimate goal is the security of the people is the freedom from fear, freedom from want, and freedom to live in dignity. As such, human security did not advocate for intervention; "[i]n its essence and in its broad conception, the human security framework does not advocate responsibility to intervene to protect but one to engage in order to prevent" (Tadjbakhsh, 2010).

## Peacekeeping and Peacebuilding

According to the United Nations, the term UN peacekeeping means:

> *"an operation involving military personnel, but without enforcement powers, undertaken by the United Nations to help maintain or restore international peace and security in areas of conflict. These operations are voluntary and are based on consent and co-operation. While they involve the use of military personnel, they achieve their objectives not by force of arms, thus contrasting them with the "enforcement action" of the United Nations under Article 42. (UN, 1990, Article 42)*

The first characteristic of peacekeeping is involving military personnel but "without enforcement powers." This ensures that the mission carries out its duties with the utmost impartiality. However, the Security Council authorized the Second United Nations Operation in Somalia (UNOSOM II) by its Resolution 837 (1993) to take "all necessary measures against those responsible for the armed attacks and for publicly inciting them, including their arrest and detention for prosecution, trial and punishment." To implement resolution 837 (1993), UNOSOM II initiated military action on 12 June 1993, conducting a series of air and ground military actions in south Mogadishu (UN, 1995). This has also been the case with the United Nations Operations in Congo (ONUC). With Resolution 169, the Security Council further authorized ONUC to 'take vigorous action, including the use of requisite measure of force, if necessary, for the immediate apprehension' of all non-UN foreign personnel (Aksu, 2003). Thus, the 'non-enforcement' principle is not fully realized in practice. However, not all operations involve military personnel, as is the case with the United Nations Missions in Bosnia and Herzegovina (UNMIBH) and the United Nations Civilian Police in Haiti (MIPONUH), as these missions are accompanied by non-UN peacekeepers for a post-conflict community (UN, 1991).

The second characteristic of peacekeeping is the consent of the disputants before deploying forces. The UN and the host country sign the 'Status of Forces Agreement' that covers the jurisdiction of the operation and the rights and responsibilities of the force (IPA, 1984). Peacekeeping – in contradistinction to peace enforcement – is carried out with the agreement and support of the disputants. Thus, peacekeepers are lightly armed in the classical peacekeeping operations (Hearn, 1999). The third aspect of peacekeeping is that it is a tool for reaching resolution. "Its overall aim should be in attempting to enhance the conditions for peace whilst a settlement is being sought" (Hearn, 1999, p. 4).

There are many types of UN peacekeeping operations, and there are many attempts to classify these operations. There are two policy documents that define the nature of peacekeeping operations: An Agenda for Peace and the Brahimi Report.[17] Mats (1993) classifies the peacekeeping missions into: (1) electoral support, (2) humanitarian assistance, (3) mine clearance and training and awareness programs, (4) observation and verification of cease-fire agreements, buffer zones, and foreign troop withdrawal, (5) preventive deployments, (6) separation of forces, their demobilization, and the collection, custody, and/or destruction of weapons, (7) establishment of secure conditions for the delivery of humanitarian supplies, and (8) disarming paramilitary forces and private and irregular units. John and Jarat (1992) use the following categories: (1) conventional observer mission, (2) traditional peacekeeping, (3) preventive peacekeeping, (4) supervising a cease-fire between irregular forces, (5) assisting in the maintenance of law and order, (6) protecting the delivery of humanitarian assistance, (7) guaranteeing rights of passage, (8) sanctions, and (9) enforcement. According to the UN the types include: (1) supervision of cease-fire, (2) regrouping and demobilization of forces (including their reintegration into civilian life and the destruction of their weapons), (3) design and implementation of de-mining programmes, (4) return of refugees and displaced persons, (5) provision of humanitarian assistance, (6) supervision of existing administrative structures, (7) establishment of new police forces, (8) verification of respect for human rights, (9) design and supervision of constitutional, judicial, and electoral reforms, (10) observation, supervision, organization, and conduct of elections, and (11) coordination of support for economic rehabilitation and reconstruction.

The goals of peacekeeping missions have changed since the first mission in 1948. It changed "from assisting in the maintenance of ceasefires during cold war peacekeeping operations during the 1990s increasingly becoming peacebuilding missions" (Ndulo, 2011, p. 7). This

[17] https://www.stimson.org/sites/default/files/file-attachments/BR-CompleteVersion-Dec03_1.pdf

change entails a wide range of experience needed and wide range of support promoting political transitions, assisting in political structuring, demobilizing armed forces, humanitarian relief, establishing rule of law, electoral support, and economic support (Ndulo, 2011).

According to the ex-UN Secretary-General Boutros Boutros-Ghali peacebuilding is the "action to identify and support structures which will tend to strengthen and solidify peace in order to avoid relapse into conflict" (UN, 1992, para 21). This definition was expanded in the "2000 Report of the Panel on United Nations Peace Operations" declaring that "peacebuilders work to make that environment self-sustaining… making peacekeepers and peacebuilders inseparable partners" (UN, 2000).

The goal of peacebuilding is lasting and sustainable peace with and between states. "The activities, strategies and goals pursued by international actors in the name of peacebuilding have ranged from grassroots development projects to ambitious statebuilding and stabilization operations" (Tschirgi, 2013, p. 197). Peacebuilding emerged in a manner that links security with development. It sees security and peace as the ultimate objective through human wellbeing initiatives focusing on socio-economic solutions. Thus, this approach changed the interest from pure state-centric to human centric (Tschirgi, 2013, p. 197).

By definition, peacebuilding considers the root causes of the conflict through a people-centered multidimensional approach. Barnett et.al (2007) categorized peacebuilding activities into four sectoral interventions: (1) security and military (2) social, economic, developmental, humanitarian (3) political and diplomatic (4) justice and reconciliation. It includes different levels of intervention and "an overall strategy of human security" (Dulic, 2008, p. 2). It is an extension of peacekeeping that develops by time to be able to respond to needs and challenges through activities related to election monitoring, provision of humanitarian aid, demobilization, reintegration of civil society and nation building exercises (Krishnasamy, 2015)

In reality, the peacebuilding initiatives were criticized due to its state-centric approach (Gitau, 2018). Call (2007) perceives that peacebuilding is a state building mechanism ensured through effective and transparent performance of the state. Peacebuilding is characterized by a language of power; it is concerned about the integrity of the state considering the political stability as the means rather than the end (Conteh-Morgan, 2005). Peacebuilding operations include good governance initiatives that are basically state-centered. These interventions are mainly supporting transparency and efficiency of institutional capacity; however, these interventions mainly do not address the grassroots, rather they form a layer of bureaucracy that they can easily operate through (Ginty, 2013, p. 4).

> *"The 'peace-building community' seldom refers to human security dimension as an integral element of overall nation-building and state-building strategies. Moreover, human security has been neglected or underestimated when international peace-building missions prioritized state-building, under the pretext that individual rights are best protected through a system of relatively strong states; and that among three variables - state, democracy and human rights, state is the most important as conditio sine qua non"* (Dulic, 2008, p. 2).

Past experiences revealed frequent failures in peacebuilding interventions due to the challenges and drawbacks faced (Paris, 2004; Dobbins et.al. 2007). Ismail (2008) mentioned that there are no criteria to tell success from failure. Peacebuilding is seen as an external intervention; thus, it is planned and implemented by those who are not familiar with the culture and traditions (Topalovic, 2017). Peacebuilding must seek to establish consent and real partnership with the local community. Also, being external and state-centered, peacebuilding is foreseen as illegitimate by the people, given the mass violence and the lack of common societal consensus (Gitau, 2018). Moreover, the skewing of peace accords to co-opt and reward potential spoilers legitimizes new relationships of power and relocates violence from the public (state-level) to domestic, private and community domains (Ismail, 2008). According to Hazen (2007, p. 324), "peace building has remained a largely amorphous concept without clear guidelines or goals. International interventions in post-conflict countries exhibited few clear examples of success." Another main critique is the "strategic direction agenda-setting, timing of entry and exit" of peacebuilding (Ismail, 2008, p. 22).

Human Security Now Report (HSC, 2003:59) identified four gaps in the post-conflict strategies: security gaps, governance gaps, gaps in international response and resource gaps. The security gaps are related to the ill-equipped military troops to deal with public security issues, exit strategy not related to the security needs of the people, and security strategies that do not consider the needs of humanitarian and development actors. The governance gap is related to the lack of national institutions and people ownership of the process, minimal attention to coexistence of divided communities and too much focus on national elections. Gaps in international response include the desire to accomplish speedy interventions with no consideration to the impact of those activities, and the lack of integration of efforts. The resource gaps, the lack of financial sustainability and the improper distribution of funds form another shortcoming of the post-conflict strategies.

The conception of peacebuilding is human security centered while practice is largely skewed towards domestic and international priorities of interveners, mostly state-centric. Therefore, the impact of such interventions excludes the roots of the conflict and the interests of the masses.

## Dynamics of the Various Players

The various players on the ground strive to accomplish their desired objectives; the officially announced ones and their hidden agendas. Some agendas complement each other while others contradict and conflict with the others. Some aims at human security for all, while some target a limited group of people and some try to resolve the problem while others try to tackle the consequences.

The insurgents and counterinsurgents specifically have the most conflicting agendas. The actions of insurgents and the counterinsurgents are shaped by two factors: the willingness to control and the necessity to gain more popular support. The people also might have conflicting agendas. Those benefiting from the existing state are keen to maintain the status quo, and those benefiting from the insurgents maintain their support either because they are benefiting directly, or because their ideology matches those of the insurgents.

The competition between the insurgents and the government is played out to attract those who are neutral; it is high-stakes competition, made even more so with international intervention. Those neutral (generally the majority of the population) are eager to return to the normal situation, but they favor a nationalistic approach. Mostly, they do not perceive the insurgents as providers of human security; neither do they perceive the intervention forces as the saviors especially with the collateral damage they cause during military operations. They believe that their source of human security is national, and mostly they see it through a different national party. It is not the government because it proved to be more fragile than ever – on the contrary, they see it a source of insecurity. It is not the insurgents, because they have experienced the conflict through this group. It is not the intervention forces, either since these are perceived as another source of violence and damage. This competition leads to more disintegration; new parties or new insurgents arise at this point. As a result, the conflict becomes a vicious cycle, in which an insurgency is leading to more conflict and more disintegration. External military intervention in this case intensifies and aggravates the situation, leading to an inexorable decline in human security.

Though the humanitarian organizations play a critical role in this framework, their intervention is usually insufficient due to the restrictions they face and the escalating crisis conditions that

require ongoing assistance. In such a framework, the humanitarian organizations are not able to reach all the targets, they are usually working in cooperation with the counterinsurgents, and sometimes they are perceived as partial. With more conflict, more disintegration is engendered, this leads to insecurity; hence, humanitarian organizations are not able to provide sufficient assistance due to more restricted areas, more conflict, more players on the ground, and insecurity to access different conflicting areas.

No single approach will have all the answers. However, the dynamics of the players should tackle the individual sources of human insecurity, the institutional sources of human insecurity, and the cultural sources of human insecurity. The individual sources of insecurity include the harm directed by the people. The institutional sources are related to harms directed by the failure or the politicization and neglect of institutional performance; this is when the institutions are not providing services for all or fail to provide services or even salaries to the people. Cultural sources are the harmful actions resulting from modes of thinking of the local people or even the international community which results in conflicts between groups (Conteh-Morgan, 2005)

## Conclusion

Governments have the responsibility to ensure their citizens' human security; however, in many cases they might not be able or might not be even appropriate for this task. Hence, there are different players who take part in ensuring human security either voluntarily, forcefully or by invitation of the host government. Those players could be groups, organizations or governments; they could also be local or foreign. The question is if the state is not able to ensure human security, who is there to ensure human security for all? And is there any other party who is really capable of an all-inclusive approach? The analysis in this chapter illustrated that different parties that provide human security; however, these do not and cannot replace the state. They could be vital players within a fragile state, they might be able to complement, but they cannot compete with a strong state willing to ensure human security for all.

Power dynamics are a major factor in determining the effectiveness of the support and the mitigation of insecurity. In a fragile state, the dynamics of the players is vital to ensure human security to save lives, and alleviate suffering. However, many groups never cross paths. There is no shared planning, no sharing of success criteria, nor sharing of data. And, in many cases the competition amongst the players leads to a more devastated condition, worse than the lack of support would be, as each provides the support that fulfills its individual agenda, and in many cases, they have competing agendas even if they are all supporting the government.

A combination of a bottom up approach along with a top-down approach is crucial to address human security. Thus, although interventions should tackle the state governance effectiveness, it should also involve transformation of social, economic and political aspects. Additionally, it should be based on a participatory approach, where people and local organizations should be included and empowered. Moreover, it should be noted that human security incorporates a short term along with a long-term intervention.

# Chapter 4: Impact of counterinsurgency on Human Security

## Introduction

This chapter clarifies the impact of counterinsurgency on human security taking into consideration the humanitarian and military perspectives. This is analyzed through a metaphor that highlights the different variables affecting the situation. The chapter helps identify the impact of counterinsurgency on the population as a whole depending on the context and on the constituent elements of the society. The impact is illustrated through a metaphor from natural sciences. The use of metaphor has been beneficial in different utilizations and different fields. Numerous theories transfer from natural science to the socio-political theories. Tolstoy used the physics metaphor to explain war. He said:

> *"As in a clock the result of the complex movement of numberless wheels and pulleys is merely the slow and measured movement of the hands pointing to the time, so also the result of all the complex human movements of these hundred and sixty thousand Russians and French – all the passions, desires, regrets, humiliations, sufferings, bursts of pride, fear, rapture – was merely the loss of the battle of Austerlitz, the so-called battle of three emperors, that is, a slow movement of the world- historical hand on the clock face of human history" (Tolstoy, 1962, p. 258)*

Several terms were transferred from different fields to military science and became commonly used terms. Military science has used center of gravity from physics, the term operational art was derived from the design studio, and enemies that operate asymmetrically and as networks come from geometry and the biological sciences.

Clausewitz used the term “friction” from the field of thermodynamics. He said: “Friction is the only concept that more or less corresponds to the factors that distinguish real war from war on paper” (Clausewitz, 1976, p. 119). Clausewitz used Newtonian mechanical concepts of mass, force, friction and center of gravity.

The aim here is to provide a model that uses a simple analogy between human security under the influence of asymmetric warfare in fragile states and the intermolecular forces and Newtonian laws. It provides a proxy model that helps understand the relationship between different variables while mapping the structure of the two domains.

Although a metaphor is rarely a complete and perfect representation of the concept that it stands for, and it is likely to break down, if it is carried too far. Nevertheless, it is a very useful vehicle to represent abstract concepts, to gain new insights, and use these to identify solutions to problems.

The thesis utilizes a process model that considers both the concepts and the processes. The process model of the metaphor comprehension and inference is usually set through analogical reasoning and parsing process (Carbonell & Minton, 1983). First the concepts of the target and the source concepts were identified. Then, an analogical mapping of the domains, sub-concepts and relations from the two domains are analyzed to ensure that they map each other. Then knowledge from the source domain is transferred to the target domain.

This chapter is composed of two parts; the first is the impact of counterinsurgency on human security of the people in the fragile state, and the second is the impact of counterinsurgency on the human security of the neighboring countries. The first part is completely driven from the metaphor of centrifugal force; while the second is analyzed through the consideration of the economic, political, social, educational, and health factors (called crossover effect).

## The Impact of Counterinsurgency on human security of the People

### The Metaphor

#### Suspension, colloids, and soluble vs elite, minorities and neutral

In general, the elements of a society (individuals, groups and classes) behave as particles within a solution. Some particulates in the solution are dissolved and homogeneously distributed within the solvent, just like dissolving salt in water, it becomes part of the system that you cannot even see the salt when it is dissolved; it is part of the solution. When light is passed through a true solution, the dissolved particles are too small to deflect the light. These dissolved

particles are the individuals who are immersed in the society and are part of the system; they cannot be separated easily from the system. They cannot be separated by the natural forces (gravity forces).

Other particles are colloidal dispersions that appear to be homogeneous; they cannot be separated from the solvent by filtration. It is a heterogeneous system. These are individuals who appear to be part of the system; however, they can be separated through certain internal or external factors or agents. In colloidal dispersion one substance is dispersed as very fine particles in the dispersion medium. In case of dust, solid particles are dispersed in air as dispersion medium. Both the dispersed particles and the dispersion medium could be liquid, gas, or solid. Colloids are not like solutions because their dispersed particles are larger than those that are dissolved in a solution. Mayonnaise and milk are examples of colloids. Mayonnaise is formed of vinegar and oil that do not mix. However, adding egg yolk (the emulsifying agent) causes the mixture to become stable and not separate. When light is passed through colloids, the dispersed particles are able to deflect the light as is the case in a diluted milk solution. These particles are the individuals who seem to be part of the society, only with certain factors they are dispersed, and they can be separated from the medium under certain conditions and the effect of external factors.

The third type is the suspensions, which are heterogeneous mixtures that settle down as a result of the gravitational force.$F_g$. In this type the solute does not get dissolved, rather it gets suspended in the liquid. The particles in suspensions are larger than those in colloids, which is the reason why they settle down easily as a result of the natural gravity. These particles are the elite who settle down as a result of the gravitational force.

The state is like the blood, it is a solution, a colloid, and suspension at the same time. It is a solution of salts, glucose, urea and a few other small compounds; a colloid of plasma proteins, including albumin, transport proteins and antibodies; and a suspension of blood cells and platelets. The state is composed of the suspension-like individuals, these are the elite; the solute-like individuals, these are the neutral population; and colloid-like individuals, these are the marginalized.

Every particle in the fluid is subject to three forces at the same time: (1) the gravitational force; (2) the buoyant force, which is parallel to the gravitational force but in an opposite direction; and (3) the drag force, which affects the particles when there is a relative motion between the particle and the fluid. The gravitational force is the power that pushes the particle to the ground in the direction of center of gravity. The buoyant force is the force that holds the particles in the system with a direction opposite to the gravitational force. It is the force that we feel pushes

us upward while swimming. The drag force is the force that acts in an opposite direction to the relative motion of an object moving with respect to a surrounding liquid.

Similarly, elements of the society are subject to three forces affecting the different elements in the same manner. Individuals in the state are affected by three forces: (1) Gravitational force to the state (perception of human security, support received and the state strength); (2) up thrust or uplift force (these are the ambition and aspiration of the people); and (3) the drag force (this is the governments precaution measures to preserve the system that is imposed whenever there is a difference between the individual's disposition and that of the government).

The first force is the gravitational force $F_g$. This is dependent on two factors: the mass of the particle ($m_p$) and the gravitational acceleration (acceleration due to gravity of the ground) (g). This factor is constant regardless of the particle under study.

$$F_g = m_p g \qquad (1)$$

The mass of the particle ($m_p$) is equal to the density of the particle ($\rho_p$) multiplied by the volume of the particle ($V_p$).

$$m_p = \rho_p \times V_p \qquad (2)$$

$$F_g = (\rho_p \times V_p) \times g \qquad (3)$$

In the state this gravitational force is the amalgamation of the perception of human security, the received support and the strength of the state. The factor that is constant regardless of the individual is the strength of the state. This is measured by the state fragility index.

$$g = \frac{1}{State\ fragility\ Index} \qquad (4)$$

The mass of the particle (in this case the mass of individuals) is composed of two factors. The first factor is the volume of the particle (V) that is reflected here by the support (S) it receives whether internal or external, government or opposition. The second factor is the density of the particle ($\rho$), this is reflected by the willingness to control the government or be part of the government.

Support in this model could be through different resources and of different means. Individuals receive support through the government or through other organizations that could target minorities. Although the government provides support for all, the elite receive the maximum support while the marginalized and minorities receive the minimal support. Pareto (1935) introduced two types of elites: the governing elites and the non-governing elites. According to Mills (1956), these include the political, economic, and military elites. As Dye has mentioned, US public policy does not emanate from the masses, rather it is based on such elites as the think tanks, special interest groups and the prominent lobbyists. Minorities on the other hand receive the least support from the government. However, there are different organizations or entities that help support minorities due to religious or ideological reasons. Support provided could include economic, political and cultural support. According to the theory of "ethnic bargaining" such support can give rise to mobilization that is possible to create collective desires for more radical demands. "Minority leaders then use these demands to bargain for greater concessions from the central government" (Jenne: 2007, p. 10). The support is in many cases economic and political; however, it is expanded to reach cultural support. The cultural support is vital to enjoy other rights including education, health, language, and livelihoods. As in equation (5) below, the support to the elite is greater as they hold ownership or have full access to the resources, the marginalized receive support from internal or external resources due to their status, while the marginalized receive the least support.

$$S_e(elite) > S_n(marginalized) > S_m(neutral) \quad (5)$$

While preliminarily speaking the minorities have the least control over the government and the least participation in it; their conscious of their rights and demand for support leads to more assertiveness and willingness to control (W). The elite on the other hand holds high interest of maintaining the control of the government due to the optimum benefit they receive. Hence the willingness to control will be higher for the elite, and least for the neutral.

$$W_e(elite) > W_n(marginalized) > W_m(neutral) \quad (6)$$

The ***gravitational force*** that attracts the individual to the system is the amalgamation of the *strength of the state, the support received by* ***the individuals or groups and the willingness to gain control of the government***.

$$F_I = S \times W \times g \quad (7)$$

where $F_I$ is the force affecting the individual.

S is the support provided (internal or external)

W is the willingness of the people to control the government

g is the strength of the state

$$\rho = density \equiv W = Willingness$$

$$V = Volume \equiv S = Support$$

$$g = gravitaional\ acceleration \equiv g = Strength\ of\ the\ State$$

The Second force is the one that reflects the ***buoyant force*** ($F_b$). It is the upward force exerted on objects submerged in fluids. It is the power that keeps objects floating in fluids. In the state it is the individuals' ambitions and aspirations that affect the individuals and balances what is being provided to the individuals. It *is the* ***aspiration for development for gaining more services and for achieving change.*** It is similar to the buoyant force affecting particles in a solvent. For some individuals this force is very low in comparison to the gravitational force $F_g$; hence, these particles settle down as is the case of the suspensions.

The third power is the ***drag force***($F_D$). Whenever a difference in velocity exists between the particle and its surrounding the fluid exerts a resistive force. Similarly, whenever the individuals or groups move in a different direction or in opposition, ***the government exerts force on them to maintain the situation by resisting the opposition force***.

Particles within the fluid behave in accordance with the effect of the three forces; similarly, the individuals and groups within the society are affected by the three forces. The *suspensions* in the solvent settle down as a result of the gravitational force due to their large mass (high density). These are the individuals and groups benefiting from the government and receiving all the services. $F_G$ is high as a result of the benefits gained by the government and their willingness to maintain the control of the government. These resemble the elites and the pro-government part of the community; where $F_g$ is high compared to $F_b$. These are part of the system, but they are settled down maintaining all the possible benefits compared to their ambitions and aspirations. The support they receive is huge and is driven by their close connections with the government.

The solutions are formed when small sized particles are homogenously distributed within the system. These are the neutral people who become part of, and are not easily separated from, the

system. These individuals receive minimal support, as they are not reinforced by the government or by external parties. They receive the minimum support necessary to keep them quiet and contented to the extent that they do not turn against the government and are not receptive to influences by external parties, andf such they donot have willingness to control the government.

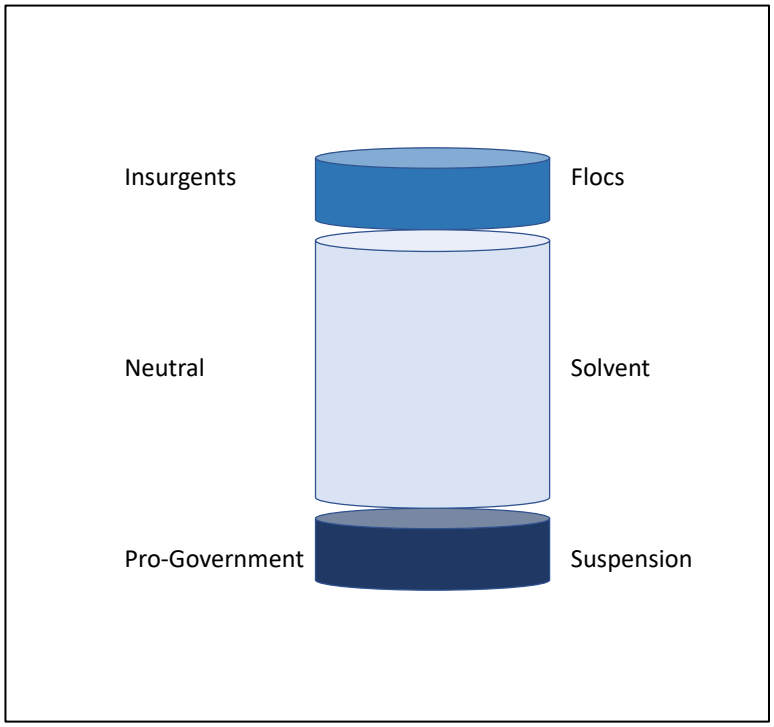
The colloidal dispersions are dispersed insoluble suspending particles. These particles are not fully dissolved in the system. The interaction between the particles is stronger than the interactions between the particles and the system. In the state these are the marginalized and minorities. Their interaction within and among their groups is stronger than their interaction with the rest of the community and the government. Their weak interaction with the government is either voluntary due to the feeling that they are not part of the system, or is forced by the outward driving force of the government. Their support (that is the volume of the colloidal particle) is less than the elite. However, these minorities do in many cases receive support depending on the group they are affiliated to. It is external support. It is in fact this support that makes them able to remain in the system since they receive minimal internal support. These are the colloids that you can observe easily in the system under certain conditions (same as with colloids that you can view easily within the system as in the milk example that reflects the light, although we do not visually observe these particles).

When colloidal individuals feel insecure or unstable; when they feel the gravitational force is not sufficient to hold them in the system or when they receive more support from external parties they tend to form opposition groups and strive to gain control of the government. These are the individuals in the society who are not immersed in the system, who lack the sense of belonging or feel that they are not receiving proper services that suit their ideology. It is a similar behavior of the unstable colloidal dispersions that form flocculates (as is the case of oil-in-water emulsion: oil droplets form without being dissolved).

Physically, flocs are either formed naturally (through internal forces) or through an external force. It can be accomplished either by a change in the pH of a suspension or by adding positively charged polymer. Likewise, individuals have the chance to flocculate when there is a change in the pH; that is when there is a change in the system either through neglect, corruption, or lack of respect. They also have the tendency to flocculate when there is an external factor providing the positive charge towards flocculation. This is attained by the increase of the external support. It is a destabilizing process that can be rather long. Flocculation starts as coalescence where smaller drops join together, these then form bigger drops; which ultimately can get to the breaking phase where the drops float as one portion on the surface (see

figure 10). In a similar manner, marginalized groups floccule together to form bigger groups and be detached from the system. These can form the insurgents if the ambitions and aspirations are high enough and the external and internal agents are forcing more flocculation.

Figure 10: **Categorization of Individuals and Groups within the fragile State as compared to the Types of Solutions**




Source: own design

In general, this is the spark of insurgency; where the insurgents seize to gain control or to enforce the ideological and economic change. These insurgents flocculate with their associates. They receive more external support. This is where they gain organizational strength, resources, popular support, and ideology. These are all factors that will help in their strong flocculation. Under these circumstances, there is also a tendency to affect the neutral population by providing more support and opportunities for increasing consciousness about the deteriorating situation and more willingness to change the government. They might not become insurgents, but they could become passive or active supporters of the insurgency. They will receive support from the insurgents; hence their status will change from solutes to colloids. These are recruited by increasing support and increasing the willingness to change the government. In particles this leads to the affected ones floating to the surface and in some cases becoming part of the flocs. In the state, these are the individuals who are attracted by the insurgents for a simple reason of dissatisfaction and lack of trust in the government or for receiving support from the insurgents.

On the other hand, the elite and the pro-government population are benefiting from the existing state; they are receiving the utmost governmental concern and benefit. The government tries to widen this category by giving incentives and support for some of the neutral population, either through financial resources or powerful positions within the government. These will form the pro-Government category. That is, the volume of the particle (the support received whether internal or external) defines the category to which the individual is likely to drift. Support is not necessarily financial; support could be physical, emotional or any other type of support. It is the inward force exerted by the government.

Both the government and the insurgents operate under two main factors: the willingness to control and the popular support. They are both seeking more control of resources, of power, legitimacy and of political control. They are also striving for more popular support; where both the insurgents and counterinsurgents are trying to attract or recruit individuals from the neutral section of the population.

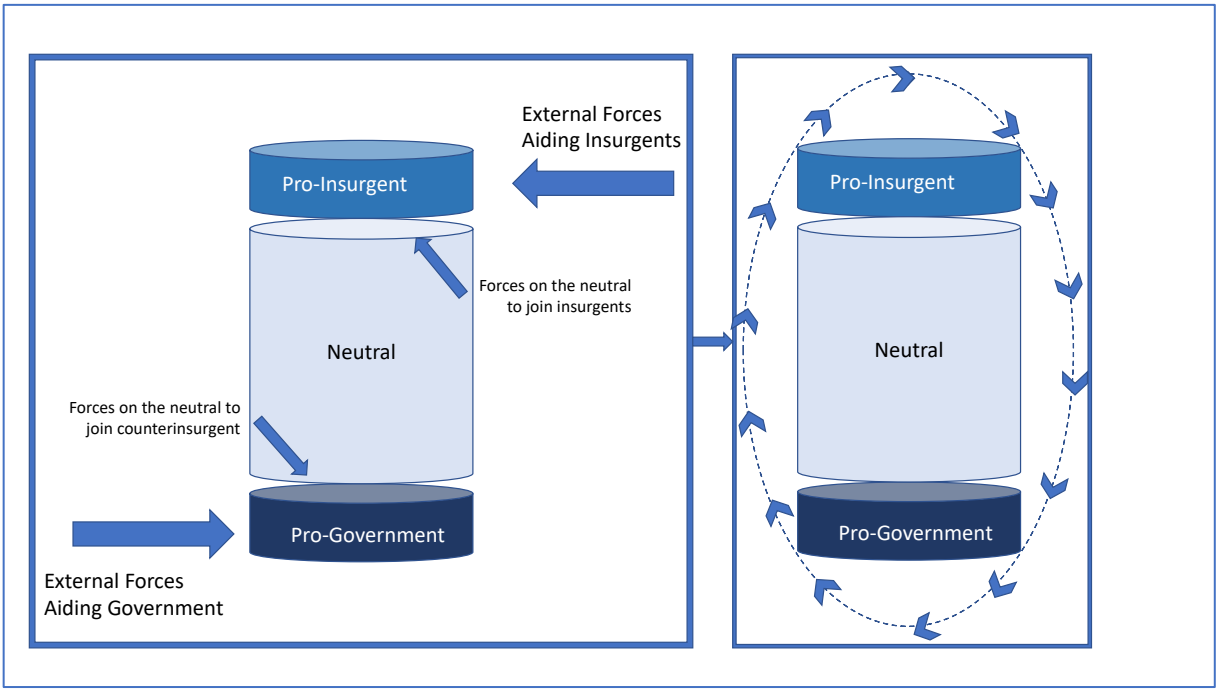
The high support, the ambitions and aspirations, the development of the organizational strength, the acquisition of resources, the gain of popular support, and the ideology leads to stronger bonds of flocculation that leads to radicalization, violence, and active insurgency. This is then faced by counterinsurgency whether internal or external. As we are considering here a fragile state, more external players will be part of the picture; there are the players supporting the insurgents, and there are others supporting the counterinsurgent or the government.

Throughout the process, the different individuals whether pro-insurgents, pro-government or neutral are still under the effect of the three forces: gravity, buoyancy and drag. But the question is: what is the impact of the counterinsurgency on the conflict that has arisen? And what is the impact on human security, whenever external players supporting insurgents or counterinsurgents are in place?

Elements of the society are driven by their ambitions and aspirations along with the support they receive. However, after the escalation of the external forces' role in the game the three main forces are distorted; it affects the ambitions and aspirations while affecting the perception of human security. Pro-government individuals perceive the government as the main source of support, while those pro-insurgents perceive that the insurgents are the guarantee for their support. However, the majority of the population who are neutral, perceive things differently; in fragile states they perceive that under a weak government they should look for alternative solutions, they either rely on personal efforts or on the support of the tribe and the community. The forces affecting them are shaken; hence, they perceive that services cannot be provided by the government or those supporting the government, especially due to the use of force affecting

their daily lives. On the other hand, they do not see the insurgents as a source of any service or benefit, as they are perceived the source of conflict or at least a driving factor of violence. The neutral part does not welcome the external forces as these increase the intensity of conflict and the collateral damage. Rather they favor a nationalistic approach; through a different national party that could stabilize the gravitational acceleration and form a strong state. Additionally, they perceive that maintaining this gravity is not through the use of counterinsurgency, and surely not through the intervention of external sources. The two opposing external forces lead to more conflict and hence the situation is trapped in a vicious cycle in which more interventions lead to more conflict and then to more interventions (see figure 11 below). Consequently, more conflict leads to an inexorable decline in the services while changing the structure of the whole system with a no possibility of returning back. The increase in conflict leads to an increase in the velocity of the cyclic motion similar to the movement within the ultra-centrifuge[18].

Figure 11: **Effect of External Support for both Insurgents and Counterinsurgents (Start of the Vicious Cycle)**




Source: own design

[18] The ultracentrifuge is a centrifuge optimized for spinning a rotor at very high speeds, capable of generating very high acceleration, which imposes high centrifugal forces on suspended particles or molecules in a solution and causes separation of such matter on the basis of differences in weight. It is used in almost every blood test; where red cells are separated from plasma of blood.

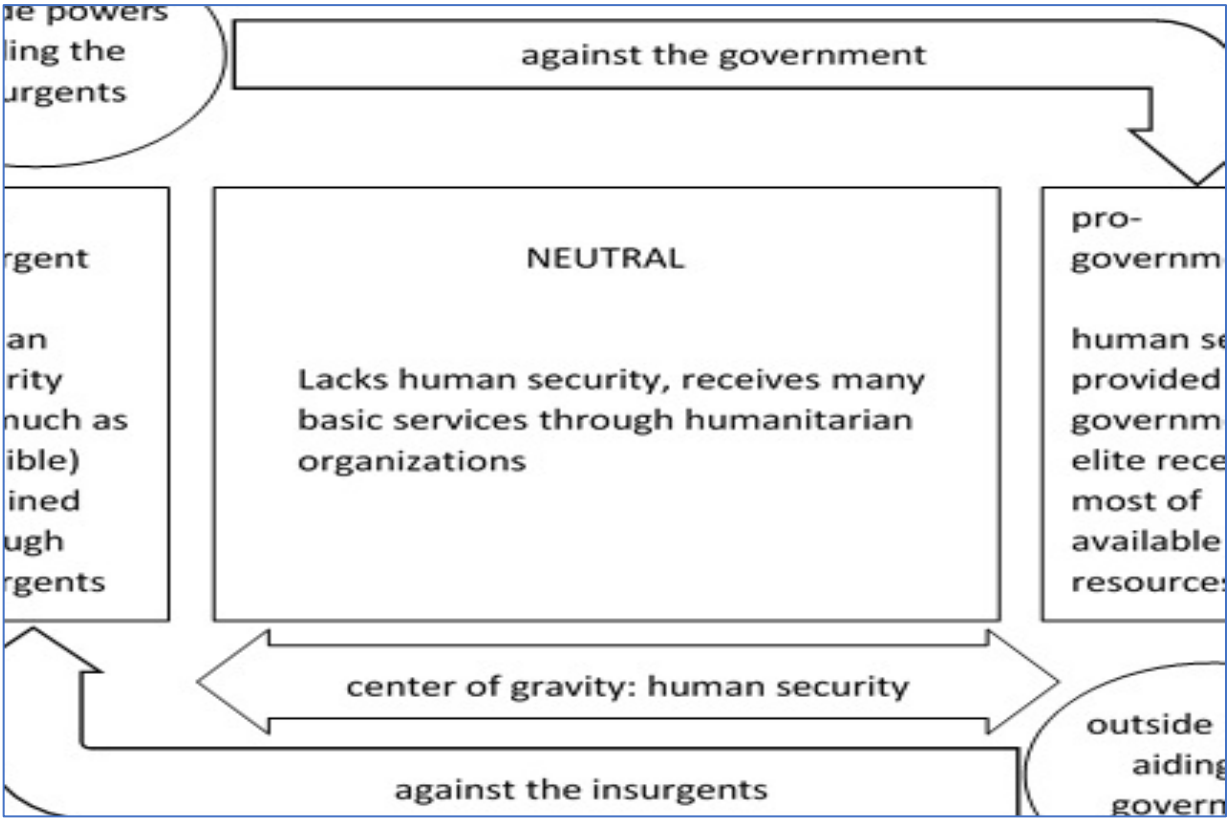
Richard Hartshorne (1954) analyzed the centripetal forces that bind the states together (including: national unity, religion, language, etc.) and centrifugal forces that pull them apart (including: diverse ethnic groups within a state). According to Hartshorne nations are either centripetal or centrifugal. For stability, the country must have centripetal forces of greater magnitude than the centrifugal forces. This means that the forces that unite a country should be greater than the forces that tend to divide. When centripetal forces are greater, the country will be able to face global and internal challenges. When centrifugal forces are greater then there is a high potential that the government will breakdown. The centripetal force is mostly based on the attitude of the people towards the system. It is composed of the national identity that is reinforced through different events and symbols to ensure the national awareness amongst all. It is also related to the availability of sufficient resources and services where people perceive that these are provided fairly for all people. It is also related to the religion and language that insures a sense of unity amongst all. The centrifugal forces are the attitudes and the forces that tend to divide a state. These are composed of the diverse religious beliefs, culture and economic activities. If these forces become critical, the state might break down as a result of inter-group struggles. Centrifugal forces also include the lack of trust of the government or competing political ideology, or when people are mistreated. Also, the religious differences can also be a force that limits interaction and that might lead to separatist movements.

The analysis in this model suggests that the impact of counterinsurgency leads to an accelerating cycle movement that helps create a centrifugal force.[19] This metaphor helps explain the impact of the use of counterinsurgency and the possible outcomes resulting from this intervention.

The centrifugal force has its impact on the system of rotation. In physics, when the cyclic movement starts, all elements of the society will be subject to the centrifugal force. The more external interventions are used; the more the vicious cycle is experienced and the more instability there is in the system. Figure 12 below illustrates the vicious cycle as result of the external intervention supporting both insurgents and counterinsurgents.

[19] In Physics, centripetal force and centrifugal force are really the exact same force, just in opposite directions because they're experienced from different frames of reference. If you are observing a rotating system from the outside, you see an inward centripetal force acting to constrain the rotating body to a circular path. However, if you are part of the rotating system, you experience an apparent centrifugal force pushing you away from the center of the circle, even though what you are actually feeling is the inward centripetal force that is keeping you from literally going off on a tangent (Lucas, 2019). Hence, to understand the concept from an internal perspective and to consider the perception of the people about human security, this research has considered the centrifugal force.

Figure 12: **Impact of the external support on the conflict**




Source: own design

## Where is the center of mass? Where is the human security?

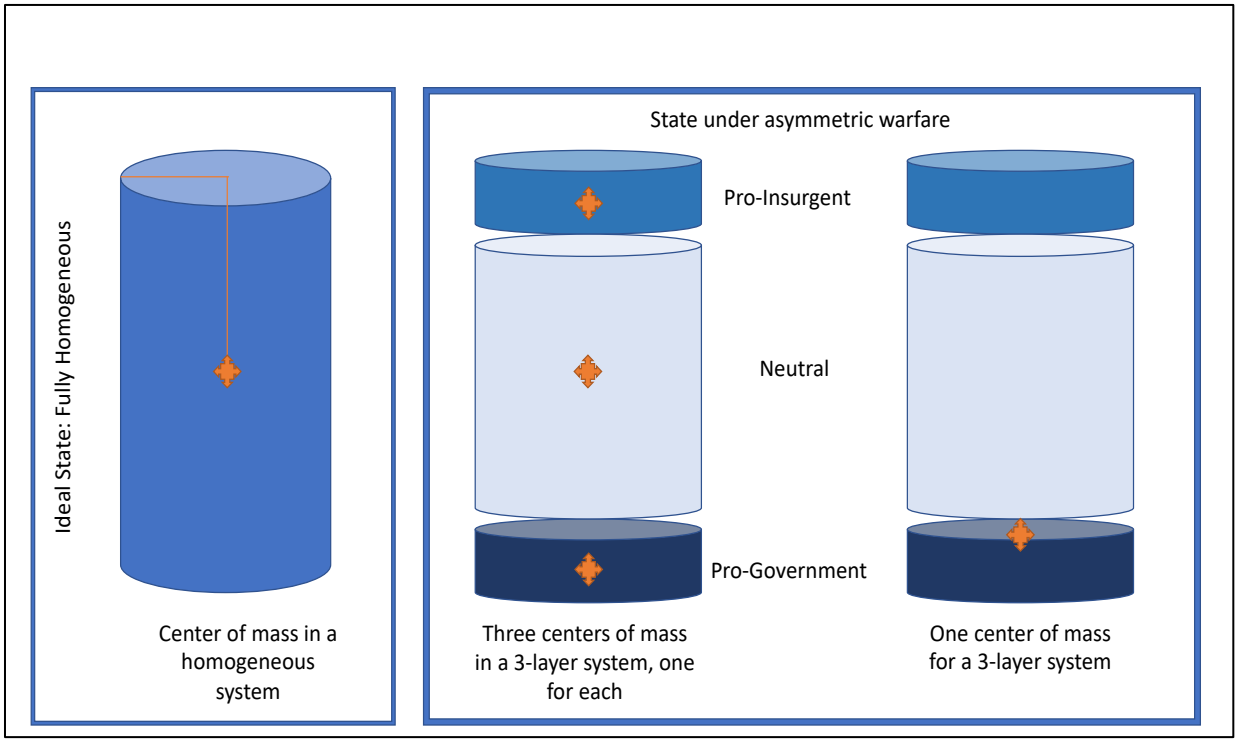
In physics, the center of mass represents the mean position of the matter in a body. It is the unique point in an object or system which can be used to describe the system's response to external forces, the point at which the object can be balanced.

In an ideal and fully homogenous system the center of mass is located at the centroid; center of the system. This represents the point where human security is fulfilled for all. In a non-homogeneous system this is dependent on the mass distribution. In a fragile state under asymmetric warfare there are three distinct parts of the community and three types of masses: the pro-government, the neutral and the pro-insurgents, these have different densities and characteristics and therefore each has a different center of mass. However, the center of mass for the system as a whole is far from the center of mass for the ideal situation (see figure 13 below). Since neutral people are recruited for either the insurgents or the government, the population distribution and association differs; thus, this center of mass is subject to change and will be moving rapidly which affects the stability of the system.

The reference frame is the point of human security for all people. It is the centroid that has been discussed in the ideal state with fully homogeneous system. This point helps ensure human

security for all people. However, due to the recruitment and the change of the masses, the center of mass is not anymore that point of reference. It is a new point depending on the masses; that is, it depends on the support provided and the willingness of the people to gain control of the government (see equation 7). The change in this position compared to the reference frame destabilizes the system and hence destabilizes human security. The high level of recruitment on both sides ensures a ceaseless deterioration of human security resulting in the persistent change in the center of mass.

Figure 13: **Center of mass for ideal case situations and fragile states under asymmetric warfare**




Source: own design

## Vicious Cycle

The question is how does the vicious cycle start and how does it affect the system as a whole. As has been discussed earlier, in a fragile state people are driven by the support provided, they either stay neutral looking for personal or community support or they get associated to the government or insurgents in search of support. This support could be ideological, economic, political, societal and cultural or all of the factors combined. In a fragile state not all individuals see the government as the service provider; however, they might be recruited through special incentives provided by the government. The State is able to maintain loyal associates through

some incentives including power and cultural association. The insurgents are not service providers; however, in many cases they are able to provide services that the neutral people need. Insurgents try to attract and recruit fighters and associates through certain services and motives. Many of the citizens remain neutral, which is the "market opportunity" for both competitors. The use of foreign interventions on the side of the insurgents or the state (or both) leads to changes in the center of mass and hence eliminates human security, which increases the level and extent of force used and attracts more external intervention. This is when the vicious cycle starts: more support, leading to more radicalization, then to more recruitment, and more distance from the human security condition, and again to more violence. Figure 13 illustrate the various players in the field and how each party is working against the other causing this vicious cycle.

The more support received by the government and the insurgents and the more willingness to control the government by the two poles, the more intensive violence prevails. Moreover, the more extensive the military intervention, the more people feel that there is an inexorable driving force leading to increasing instability due to widening the distance from human security conditions. It is an irreversible vicious cycle. Meanwhile the elements of society (individuals, groups, and classes) behave as objects traveling in a circular path – as a stone being whirled round on a string – that would react as if there were an outward force – the centrifugal force – affecting it.

The centrifugal force metaphor explains the effect of the various factors leading to change in human security of the people and their perception of instability, and hence on the unity of the nation. The feel of the outward force (the centrifugal force) disturbs the feel of stability, human security, and of national security. The imbalance impacts all elements of human security. It leads to diminishing freedom from fear, freedom from want, and freedom to live in dignity.

The centrifugal force is usually calculated by the following equation:

$$F_c = \frac{mv^2}{r} \qquad (8)$$

where

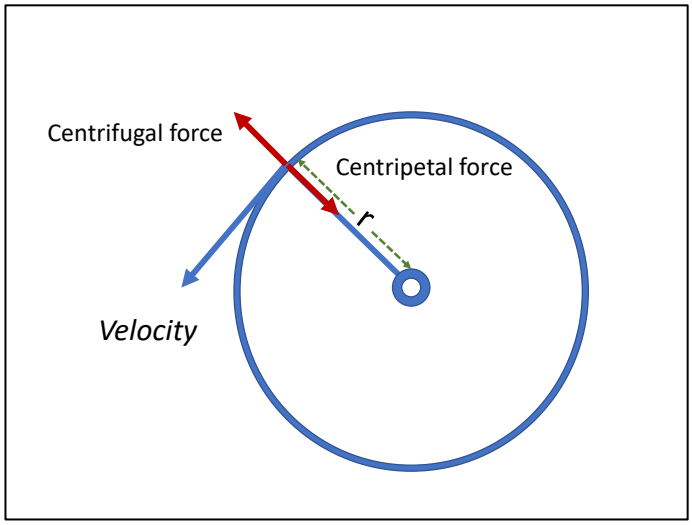
$F_c$ = centrifugal force

$m$ = mass of the object

$v$ = velocity

$r$ = length of the string or the radius of the circular movement (see figure 14)

Figure 14: **Centrifugal Force variables**




As discussed earlier the mass (m) of the object is dependent on the volume and the density; the volume (V) is represented by the support (S) provided by the poles (internal and external) and the density (ρ) represented by the willingness to control the government (W). This model suggests that the centrifugal force affecting the individuals and groups within a fragile state under asymmetric warfare could be calculated according to the following:

$$F_c = \frac{(S \times W)v^2}{r} \qquad (9)$$

where

$F_c$ = centrifugal force (it is the force that people feel disturbs all stability and their human security

$v$ = violence level during the conflict; originally this is the velocity

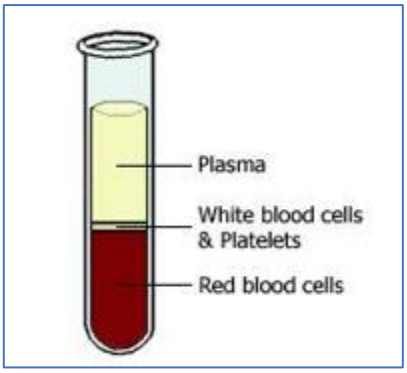
$r$ = is the ratio of those engaged in the conflict to the total population; originally this is the length of the string or the radius of the circular movement, which is calculated according to the following:

$$r = 1 - \frac{\#\ of\ those\ engaged\ in\ the\ conflict}{total\ \#\ of\ population} \qquad (10)$$

According to equation (9) of the model there is a positive correlation between the independent variables: support of the poles, the willingness to take control of the government, and the intensity of violence and military operations used; and the dependent variable the centrifugal force. The radius (r) ranges from zero to one; when r = 1 this means no one is engaged in the violent conflict, and when r = 0 all the population are part of the conflict. Therefore, when all the population are part of the conflict the state reached the state of chaos and the centrifugal force is infinite. Also, when the number of those engaged in the conflict increases the radius decreases and hence the centrifugal force increases.

Despite the fact that the counterinsurgency effort is trying to stabilize the movement of the object rotating in a circular motion (that is the state driven into the vicious cycle), the use of military force and the traditional means of warfare strategies is increasing the centrifugal force. In fact, it is a main factor that drives the centrifugal force. Many actors are playing a role; however, all the efforts are not contributing to enhance the security perception amongst the locals. As time passes the neutral segment of the society is pushed /pulled from the neutral position to the insurgents or counterinsurgents leading to more violence and higher rotational speed and stronger centrifugal force and more distance from human security.

*Figure 15: Blood post-ultracentrifuge*

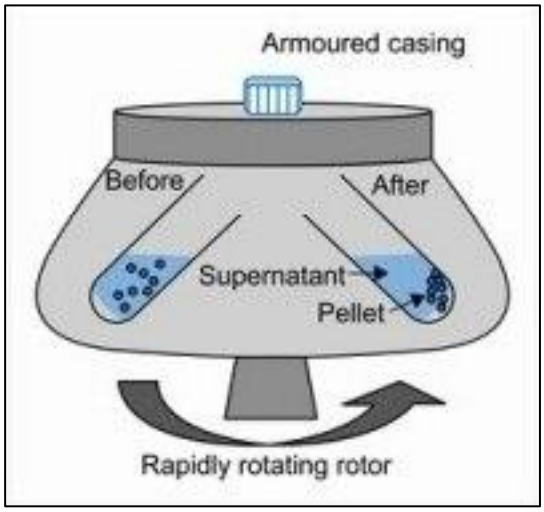



Source: www.chegg.com

As the conflict reaches the various segments of the community, the state becomes an ultra-centrifugal system; it separates the various elements, as blood is separated into three different layers in an ultra-centrifuge.[20] This ensures more fragmentation of the society with more sub groups and more new groups that emerge.

[20] This is similar to the blood test; where the blood sample is placed in a test tube in a machine called the ultracentrifuge. The test tube is then rotated at a constant speed called centrifugation; centrifugation is based on the centripetal acceleration. During this process the heavier part (red blood cells) moves outwards. The white blood cells and platelets (which are lighter) form the middle layer. The plasma (being the lightest) moves toward the upper layer.

*Figure 16: Ultracentrifuge Machine*




The effect of the outward force leads to some being separated easily by leaving the whole system; those who are not willing to remain part of the system emigrate. They are similar to the particles with low density that are easily separated from the system in the ultracentrifuge. These represent those who are willing to emigrate from the country as a result of the conflict. Others remain within the system; their willingness to look for alternative solutions makes it harder to break them lose from the system. Their alternatives might be participation in the conflict, exploitation of economic opportunities that might arise, or simply starting a new group of insurgents or a new political faction. These alternatives might be sufficient to keep them within the system, or they might end up with very little capacity and energy to maintain, and then they are also jolted away out of the system. The result in all cases is a separation of the constituent elements of the community, destroying all forms of unity, and leading to human insecurity. It leads to the formation of various parties, each trying to conserve its new characteristics, and each trying to ensure human security aspects – if any – for its own adherents. It is conflict that leads to more disintegration and to even more conflict. The balance between fighting and restoring human security to adherents drives the behavior of the competitors. However, this balance is not possible since it is a provision of human security to adherents only while dismantling human security of the rest; an equation that is never balanced and never possible to maintain.

## Results of the centrifugal force

The causes of the centrifugal force are inauspicious; however, the results are even more disastrous. The results are more fragmentation and more deterioration of the economic, political and cultural aspects. The following are the results:

1. Gravitational force will be replaced with the much more powerful centrifugal force. This implies that the state strength will not have an effect on the system anymore; the resolution of the conflict then cannot take place through state empowerment, but through the elimination of the driving factors of the centrifugal force. It should be ***the elimination of the external intervention, decreasing the violence by all parties***

(insurgents and counterinsurgents) and decreasing the number of those engaged in or supporting the conflict.

2. According to the model an unrestrained particle would leave its orbit if the centripetal force is removed; therefore, any individual who feels there is no support provided and there is no ambition to change would leave the system. ***This will escalate the emigration level*** from the system with no looking back. The increase in emigration is thus due to the lack of any support to the people on the ground and their lack of aspiration and hope in the system. The strength of the state is not a factor for them, as the centrifugal force exceeds the state capability force. As such the driving factor to decrease emigration is to ensure service provision to the people directly even if not through the government. The solution for this goes beyond the humanitarian assistance to developmental assistance.
3. The ultracentrifuge leads to more flocculation and creation of different layers. This result implies an unprecedented ***creation of different parties, factions, opposition and isolated communities***. The new floccules have minimal connections towards the state; their primary relationship and loyalty is to the faction or the group rather than to the state. This entails full disintegration and more chaos. As a result, winning the hearts of the people will not be the solution for this case; any intervention should be directed towards the leaders of the new floccules rather than the individuals.
4. The fragmentation leads to different centers of mass. This means different centers of gravity for the different segments of the society. The result is then a ***massive deterioration in human security***; a life full of fear, with no needs fulfilled and a life of indignity. Affecting the economic security, food security, health security, environmental security, personal security, community security and political security. As a result, interventions of such cases need to tackle all aspects of human security while supporting the communities under such unrest.
5. The fragmentation and the diverse centers of mass also lead to the ***formation of a new community that is not similar to the original structure***. It is an irreversible case. The one community is now multiple new communities; communities that cannot live together, and communities that are now of different aspirations, different cultures and different wellbeing. This occurs when those communities believe the only way forward is claiming independence from the state, or maintaining the state of war.
6. The resultant of the vicious cycle is ***complete chaos and violence similar to the status that Hobbes called the "State of Nature"*** (Leviathan, 1651); it brought to the fore the

grimmest dismay of a destroyed state structure. It is a ***failure of the social contract and a "war of all against all."*** There are no constraints on behavior, anyone at any time can use the force, and all are ready to counter the force with force. This failure of the social contract and the complete chaos created by the vicious cycle leads to an irreparable and irreversible situation that completely alters the community structure and diminishes social cohesion. Hence, any solution should consider the nucleus of the system; including the center of mass and the social structure. The solution depends on the phase of the conflict. Prior to the conflict security should be considered a continuum that starts with conflict prevention (Heinbecker, 2000). Prior to the vicious cycle and the social contract failure a mixed *military and political strategy is needed*; with more focus on the political. The solution should be based on the factors defined in the vicious cycle model. Hence the following factors should be controlled: support provided to the poles, willingness to control the government, the violence level during the conflict, and the number of those engaged in the conflict.

> *"…no account of Time; no Arts; no Letters; no Society; and, which is worst of all, continual fear and danger of violent death, and the life of man solitary, poor, nasty, brutish, and short." (Leviathan, 1651)*

# Impact on the Neighboring Countries

## Spillover-Crossover model

**Spillover Effect**

Asymmetric warfare affects human security of the people within the countries involved in the conflict. Costs of asymmetric warfare include security, economic, and social costs. Furthermore, the costs of asymmetric warfare extend to reach the neighboring countries and the international community. "Peaceful countries that are adjacent to countries engaged in civil war suffer from direct and long-term effects caused by the civil wars of their neighbors" (Collier, 2003). Neighboring countries receive the most evident spillover of the conflict through the arrival of the refugees. The largest number of Syrian refugees is currently in Lebanon and Jordan, and the largest number of Afghan refugees moved to Pakistan.

**Negative effects**

Considering the different cases of asymmetric warfare, it is evident that the conflict's spillover into the neighboring countries stimulates political instability, economic instability, and influx of refugees.

Political instability of neighboring countries results from the spillover of conflicts, combatants, and arms. The spillover of refugees might entail crossover of the conflict, affecting various sectors of the host country. This may occur through the use of refugee camps as bases for armed groups (Salehyan, 2008). During the refugee crisis in the Congo, the Rwandan Hutu militias established training bases in the refugee camps; where they stored weapons, trained refugee fighters and launched cross border attacks into Rwanda (Lischer, 2006). A conflict between the neighboring countries broke out as a result. Hence, the spillover of a conflict onto another country's territory can escalate into regional or international war. Lischer identified different types of political violence involving refugees; these include: conflict between sending state and the refugees, between the receiving state and the refugees, and among refugees themselves resulting in intra-state and interstate conflict (Lischer, 2006). In the case of Somali refugees, they served as domestic opposition groups in the host country, where they often worked closely with ethnic Somali separatists in the Ogaden region of Ethiopia (World Bank, 2010).

Researches show that instability in the region affects negatively the economic performance of neighboring countries (Ades & Chua, 1997). The effect is evident in the living cost and the trade cost affected by the conflict: "Mozambique doubled Malawi's international transport costs

and triggered an economic decline" (Collier, 2003: 34). In another case "Congo closed the river route to the sea for the landlocked Central African Republic" (Collier, 2003, p. 35).

Some recent research indicates that the economic benefits of refugee influx resulting from conflict conditions outweigh the costs of the influx to the host countries. However, so far only the economic strains and burden on the host communities of the refugees' influx have been researched and discussed thoroughly (IMF & WB, 1999). The adverse effect on the neighboring countries may lead to a "contraction in growth, higher inflation, large fiscal and current account deficits, loss of reserves, and weakened financial system" (Sab, 2014). It has also been indicated that the economic impact depends on the initial economic conditions in the host countries, along with the number and income of refugees they receive (Sab, 2014). Others found that directly bordering countries receive negative spillover while non-bordering neighboring countries receive a positive spillover as those wealthier and more skilled are able to travel further distances (De Groot, 2010).

Research has also revealed possibilities of transferring endemic diseases as a result of the conflict. For example, there is a high correlation between the increase in the malaria incidents and the number of war refugees (Collier, 2003, p. 35).

***Positive effects***

The results of several research projects reveal that the benefits of refugees' influx to host communities exceed the costs (Jacobson, 2001). It has been shown that refugees often make positive contributions to the state economy. For example, in Uganda "these contributions are exemplified by the significant volume of exchange between refugees and Ugandan nationals, as well as by refugees' creation of employment opportunities for Ugandan nationals" (Betts, et.al, 2014).

In Uganda, which received a huge influx of refugees from Rwanda, Sudan, Kenya and Congo; the educational sector has witnessed benefits to host communities. The assistance strategy was based on development rather than emergency projects. The policy used was "integrating refugee primary and secondary schools into the district education system" (Dryden-Peterso & Hovil 2003). Assistance that was provided for the refugees targeted the host communities including those that did not originally have access to educational services. The goal of this temporary infrastructure is to provide support beyond the crisis such that it supports the host communities directly (Dryden-Peterso & Hovil 2003).

Another significant benefit is filling the gap in the labor force. Refugees usually accept lower-skilled jobs that are not filled or demanded by the host community labor force. Additionally, refugees coming from different backgrounds and educational levels usually pursue diverse job opportunities. The refugee labor force does not necessarily compete with, but complements, the host community labor force (Betts, et.al, 2014).

In the most adverse conditions, refugees find ways for income generating activities. Some are able to relocate their businesses from their country of origin to the host countries, while other start innovative ideas and activities. In Kenya, refugees were able to engage in creative income generating activities despite the challenging security conditions (Betts et.al 2015). In Uganda, several cases of successful innovative entrepreneurship were established, which were able to contribute to the local economy (Betts et.al 2015).

Generally speaking, the spillover of refugees has both negative and positive consequences, which depends on the host communities. In Tanzania, after the spillover of refugees from Rwanda, Burundi and Congo, "hosts who already had access to resources, education, or power were better poised to benefit from the refugee presence, while those who were already disadvantaged in the local context became even further marginalized" (Whitaker, 2002).

The spillover of refugees leads to interaction between the host communities and the refugees. This interaction has been heavily discussed in the acculturation theory. The theory was first suggested by Redfield and his colleagues (Redfield, Linton, & Herskovits, 1936). In the Interactive Acculturation Model (IAM) Bourhis and his colleagues proposed that the intergroup relations between the host and the refugees are defined by the "relative fit" between the two groups. The three levels of fit are consensual, problematic, and conflictual (Bourhis, Moise, Perreault, & Senecal, 1997).

## Spillover-Crossover Model[21]

This section provides an illustration of the spillover-crossover model to help understand the positive and negative consequences of asymmetric warfare on neighboring countries. The spillover of the refugees and arms starts as the asymmetric warfare erupts. The extent of spillover depends upon the level of conflict and its impact on the human security of the people. The number of refugees depends on the severity of the conflict. However, the distance they travel depends in part on their financial capacity. Many would rather stay close to the borders

[21] The "spillover-crossover model" term is borrowed from psychological research that examines the impact of the work domain on the home domain.

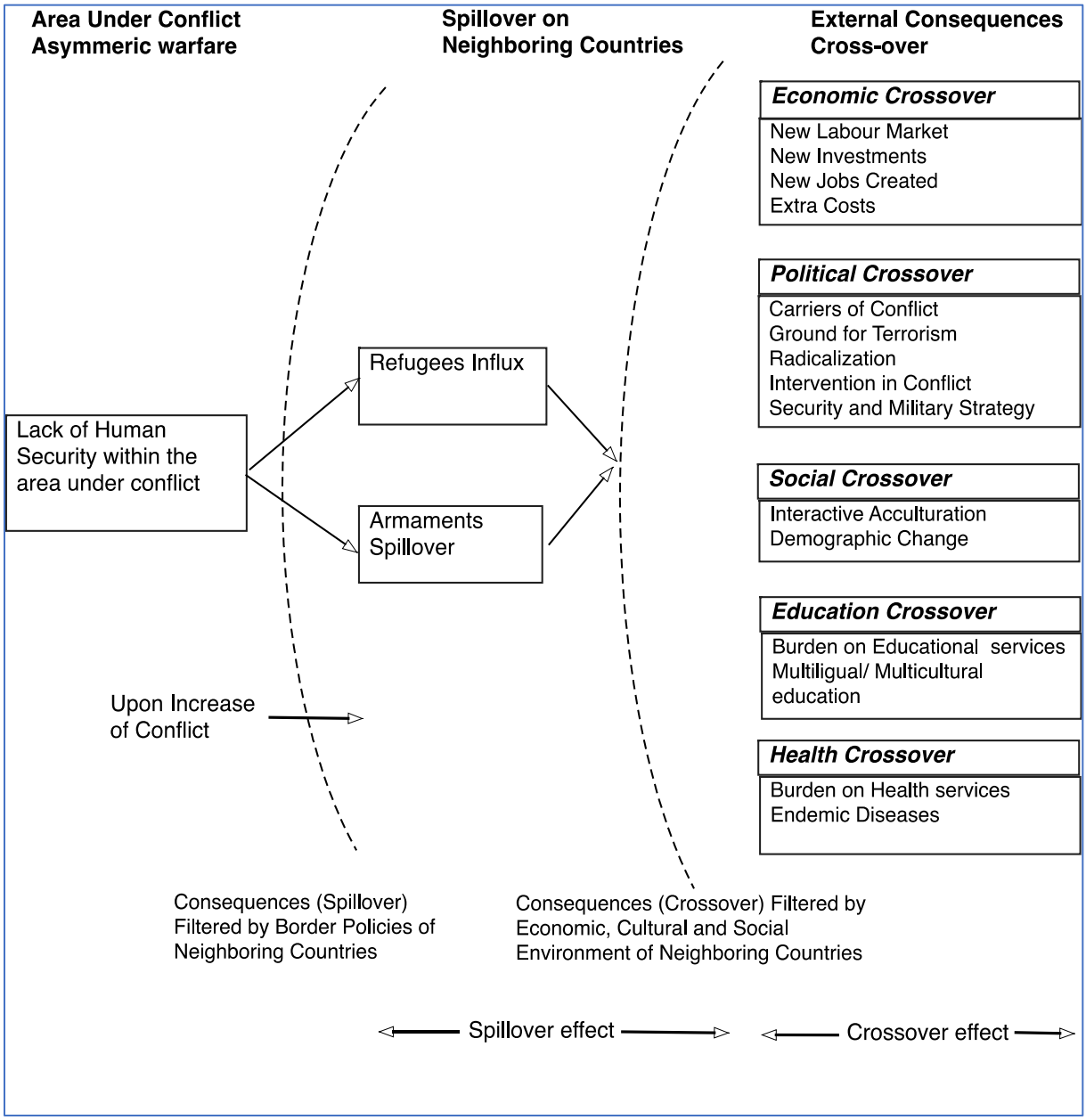
in the hope of returning; others have little choice, due to their limited financial resources. Syrian refugees first crossed into the neighboring countries, then many made it to Europe and reached further, to Canada and the US. Those who were better off ended up in more distant countries and those who were worst off ended up in the neighboring countries.

Given the literature and arguments reviewed above, the spillover-crossover model is proposed (see figure 17). It suggests that during an asymmetric conflict there is lack of human security amongst certain groups. As the conflict intensifies, an increasing segment of the community lacks human security. This starts to spill over into the neighboring countries. These could be part of the minorities or the neutral population discussed in the first part of this chapter. The spillover is usually filtered by the border policies of the neighboring countries. Hence, those countries with strict border policies are able to prevent spillover more than those with flexible border policies. Border policies may filter armaments to enter the neighboring countries and may also be able to decrease the influx of refugees. For example, during the Syrian conflict border policies in Jordan and Lebanon were stricter towards the Palestinian refugees from Syria; therefore, the number of refugees was minimized to a certain extent.

The spillover may affect significantly the various sectors within the host countries, which is called the crossover effects. These effects could be either positive or negative depending on the original economic, social and political environment of the neighboring countries. They also depend on the historical engagement in civil war, and the relationship between the two governments and/or the people of the two neighboring countries. They also depend on the characteristics of the refugees. Those refugees who are better off from an economic and educational point of view have positive economic crossover and less of political or social burden. It also depends on the policy of the host government towards the refugees: those who encourage integration are better off; whereas, those with unwelcoming policies are worst off.

The model suggests that five main consequences of crossover factors are possible in the neighboring countries: economic, political, social, educational and health consequences. These crossover factors are usually filtered by several economic indicators in the neighboring countries, which include poverty, labor market, and local economic policies. They are also filtered by the political environment, which includes internal conflict and the political system. Additionally, they are filtered by the cultural environment that include the acceptance of refugees, conflict and power differences, ethnic affinity or animosity, and feeling of relevance to the country of conflict and its nature of conflict. The crossover factors are also filtered by political factors, including history of conflict in the area, history of refugee influx, internal conflicts, and different policies especially those targeting refugees.

Figure 17: **Spillover-Crossover Model**




Source: own design

Economic crossover is especially filtered by the economic environment; countries with stronger economic conditions are benefiting from the influx more than those with weak economy. This is also dependent on the local economic and investment policies. Some researchers suggest that due to the conflict investors might be discouraged to start their businesses in the region. However, those who started or planned to start in the area under conflict would rather move their investments from the area of conflict to the neighboring countries. Therefore, the neighboring countries will be a potential area of investment for internationals and for nationals

of the area under conflict. Small and micro businesses would be a big market attracting refugees. Upon their settling down, refugees would want to start new businesses to be able to cope with their new status. This could help create niche markets that did not exist or new crafts that originate from the sending country. It also helps create new jobs for the refugees along with the host communities.

Labor might be considered a threat to the local economy, as it forms a competition to the existing labor force. However, new labor force is a source of new skills and knowledge that could enrich the existing market. Moreover, in many cases the new labor force could help fill the gap in the labor market, either because of the lack of certain skills or the lack of interest of the locals to work in certain sectors. Additionally, it helps in providing diversified skilled labor and diffused competition (Betts et.al 2015). The refugees' competition on low-skilled jobs "doesn't hang native workers out to dry, but rather forces them to develop a set of complementary – and usually higher skilled – contributions to the labor force" (Shellito, 2016).

During the conflict, several humanitarian organizations start working in the neighboring countries, either to support the refugees in the host countries, or to support those in the area under conflict. However, due to security reasons they mostly operate remotely, from the territory of the neighboring countries. These new projects usually create new job opportunities for the locals there. Accordingly, humanitarian organizations open opportunities in the neighboring countries depending on the severity of the conflict and the influx including new job markets and attraction of internationals.

Despite the possible advantages discussed earlier, refugee influx can also cause a huge economic burden on the neighboring countries. The costs of services provided to the refugees and the humanitarian attention are inevitable and include the educational, health and welfare support that brings strains and burdens on the budget of the host country.

The political crossover factor in the neighboring countries is another consequence that could cause disruption in a neighboring nation. However, this is filtered by the local policies of those receiving countries and the political environment in general.

The arrival of refugees is already filtered by the refugee policies in the neighboring countries. However, as the conflict increases even those countries that are strict in accepting refugees receive the spillover of refugee influx. Strict policies cannot eliminate the influx, it can only reduce and manage the numbers. The crossover effect of the refugees' arrival impacts the neighboring countries in various ways, depending on the local policies and of the characteristics of the arriving refugees; including their educational level and their economic status.

In some cases, the flow of refugees disrupts and alters the structure of the state, by importing – and imposing – different religious, ethnic or cultural structures. For example, the majority of Syrian refugees in Lebanon are Sunni Muslims, while the religious structure in Lebanon is formed of Sunni and Shia Muslims, Catholic and Maronite Christians, and Druze, among others. The influx has led to a feeling of existential threat amongst some due to the disruption of the existing structure.

Within the huge influx of refugees, there is a high potential of an influx of carriers of conflict. The influx itself facilitates the flow of arms and combatants, which may lead to the onset of a conflict in the neighboring countries. This could be in the form of conflict among the refugees themselves, between the refugees and the host community and/or the host government, or with the sending countries. The host country could become a sanctuary for terrorism, where it becomes possible to recruit and arm combatants. However, this crossover is usually filtered through the political positions, security policies and the state strength of the host countries. Countries filter the flow of conflict by having strict security measures. In many cases the refugee influx is securely managed by accepting the refugees in temporary camps on the borders for security check until they are transferred to the refugee camps to mitigate the conflict, while some have very strict policies on the movement of refugees outside the refugee camps.

Radicalization is another crossover factor that may influence the neighboring countries. This is possible when the host community identifies a certain group or case of conflict as relevant either ethnically, religiously or even humanely. The host community might act vigorously to show their solidarity and sympathy to a certain group, or they might even demand their government to intervene in the conflict. This causes internal conflict within the host communities. Such crossover is filtered by the social environment within the neighboring countries.

Another possible crossover is the intervention of the neighboring country in the conflict. This happens when the government decides to support one group, or when conflict is foreseen to affect their own people. At this point the conflict is altered from a local to a regional or from an intra state to an interstate conflict. It is altered from a radicalization to war status.

Social crossover is possible through interactive acculturation. It is the interaction and the possible merger of two different cultures. Although more changes tend to be experienced by the refugees, both the host and the refugees are affected by acculturation. It is possible that that refugees will face one of the four strategies suggested by Berry (Berry, 1997). These are: integration, assimilation, separation or segregation and marginalization.

Educational crossover is a factor that affects neighboring countries depending on their policies towards refugees. In general, the influx of refugees is a burden on all the public services

including education. However, crossover may also have a positive effect on the educational sector, especially in the case of integrating refugees within the system. This integration helps create social diversity, mutual awareness of the societies and cultures, along with possible multilingual and multicultural communication and education. This integration through the inclusive educational system and the intercultural dialogue facilitates the integration in the society as a whole and the linkage of the diverse communities achieving mutual benefits for the two communities (LLLP, 2016).

Health is another main crossover factor resulting from the spillover. The refugee influx may cause strains that burden the health services provided by the host communities by increasing the number of beneficiaries. It may also facilitate the transfer of epidemic diseases causing a widespread health crossover effect. For example, researchers have observed an increase in the incidence of malaria during civil war in the regions under conflict and in the neighboring countries (Montalvo & Renyal-Querol, 2007).

## Conclusion

Since the end result of any intervention should be human security oriented; interventions must be evaluated with this notion in mind. This chapter provided a model that helps analyze the implications of counterinsurgency starting from the causes that leads to insurgency and counterinsurgency.

The model used categorized the people in a fragile state into three segments: the elite, neutral, and minorities. A simple analogy was used to compare those with the dispersions, solutes, and colloids. The comparison is based on the characteristics of each and the extent to which these are integrated within the system. The dispersed are the elite with the biggest mass and density that settles down as a result of the gravitational force. The solutes are the neutral population that are fully dissolved. The colloids are the ones that neither settle nor get dissolved. The colloids are the minorities that easily flocculate as a result of some external or internal reasons. The model suggests that due to the external forces the system is forced into a vicious cycle, where all the elements are affected. This escalates the fragmentation process of the society; where the different layers are visible and more disconnected with a no way of returning back. The centrifugal force that affects the system under this vicious cycle is dependent on the violence used, the interference of the external parties, the population willingness to control the government, and the percentage of population engaged in the conflict. Therefore, to eliminate the effect of the centrifugal force, it is suggested that those factors should be considered.

This chapter also discussed the center of mass as the centroid point in a homogeneous system, which is the point of human security for all people. However, due to the change in support of the insurgents and counterinsurgents accompanied with the change in the number of people associated with those two poles, the center of mass point changes relentlessly.

Impact on the security of the neighboring countries was also discussed through the spillover-crossover effect. The model suggested that the spillover of the conflict is mainly refugees and armaments, while the crossover is the economic, political, social, educational, and health effects. These effects could be positive or negative depending on the policy of the hosting state. According to the model conflict prevention should be the way to security through considering the external supporters of the insurgents and support of the government. It should consider security continuum that starts with conflict prevention (Heinbecker, 2000). "At worst, counterinsurgency's human security discourse may simply represent the 'velvet glove' surrounding the 'iron fist' of traditional war fighting" (Gilmore, 2016). However, counterinsurgency could be a "velvet glove" surrounding preventive measures that ensures human security.

# Case Studies

This chapter aims at applying the vicious cycle theory presented in chapter four on three different cases, to discuss the applicability of the theory. It presents the structure of the society as per the three different types: government and elites, minorities and neutral (dispersions, colloids and solvents), how insurgency starts, and the impact of counterinsurgency on human security of the people.

Three cases were selected for deep analysis of the impact of counterinsurgency on human security; these cases include *Iraq, Afghanistan and Libya*. The cases were selected on the basis of the fundamental criteria:

1. They should compose the same context; insurgency starting after external intervention to change the existing regime. This better allows comparison between the cases.
2. They should have adequate and accessible information about them.
3. They are the most prevalent examples in the region for the chronological span: Afghanistan (2001-present), Iraq (2003-2011), Libya (2011-present)

The cases are examined within an analytic framework that helped use the same structure for the three cases. The analysis starts with a historical and geopolitical background of the country that helps understand the context of the conflict. Then the community structure along with a description of the minorities is described to help understand how and where insurgency starts. This is followed by listing the insurgents along with an analysis of the counterinsurgency. Lastly, a description of the vicious cycle and its impact on human security is examined. The analysis of human security is mainly focused on personal, community and political security; though it touches base on the other threats to human security. Personal insecurity will be discussed in regards of physical violence, human trafficking, and child labor; community insecurity will be discussed will be discussed in regards of inter-ethnic religious and identity-based tensions, crime and terrorism; and political insecurity will be discussed through political repression, human rights violations, lack of rule of law and justice.

Data sources in the analysis include both primary and secondary data. Secondary data include reports about the missions and previous researches; along with statistics of RAND; international indexes including corruption index, rule of law, and global terrorism index; and US and NATO mission reports. Primary data refers to the data from direct observation through the researcher's field visits.

# Chapter 5: Case 1 - IRAQ (2003-2011)

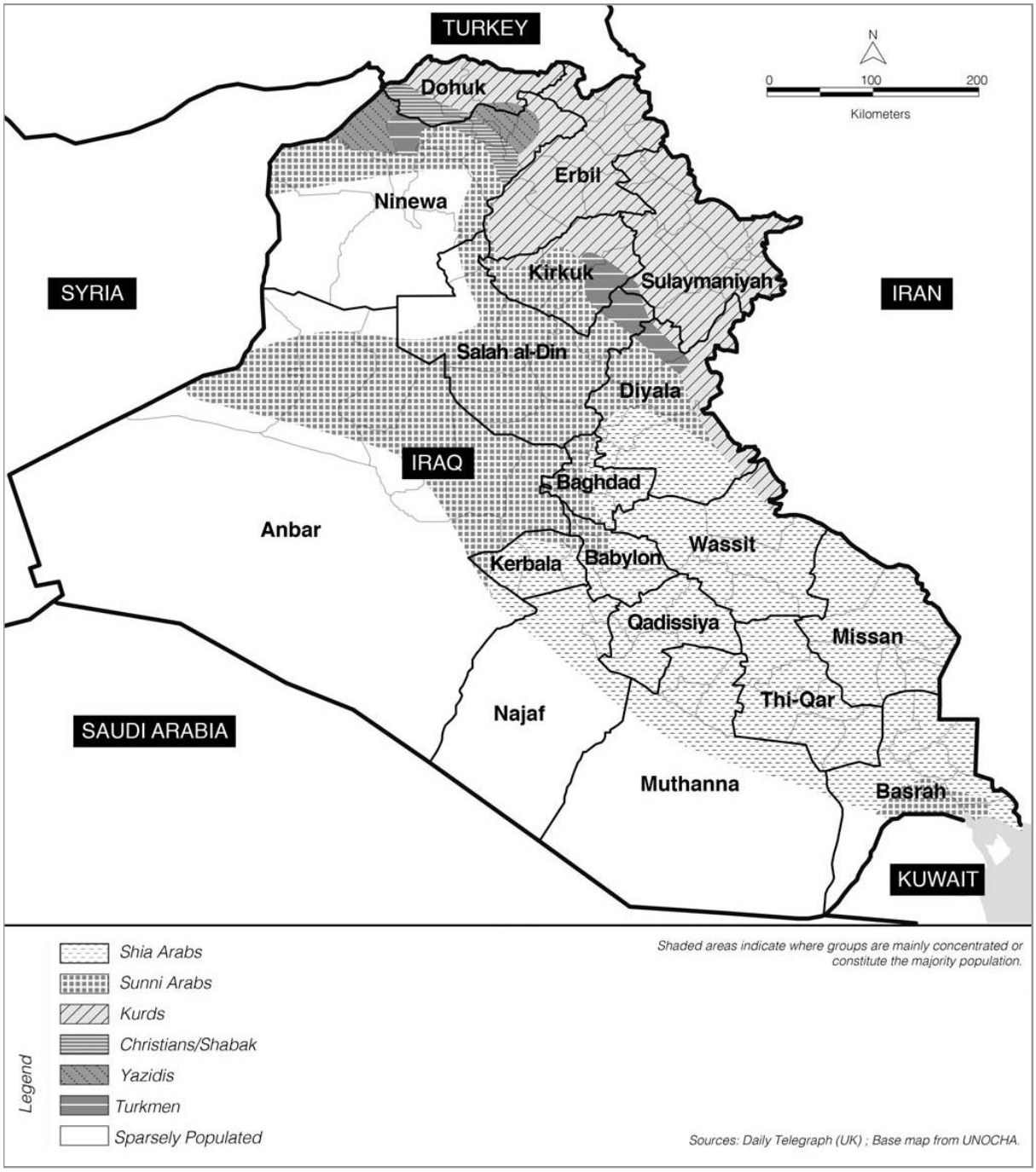
## Introduction

The History of insurgency and minority issues in Iraq precedes the 2003 invasion. The Arabization of the minorities affected their status, which was evident in different events and cases. Iraq is mainly composed of three main communities, the Sunni, the Shia and the Kurds (who are mostly Sunni). However, the Mosaic that forms the country is even more complex as it is composed of many ethnic, religious, and ethno-religious minorities.

The Iraqi government accommodated the Kurds during the Iraq-Iran war; a strategy they used to persuade the Kurds not to support Tehran. Nevertheless, the two Kurdish rivals, the Kurdish Democratic Party KDP and the Patriotic Union of Kurdistan PUK, reacted to this accommodation differently. Despite this, in 1988, the Iraqi forces attacked Kurdish targets, including the Halabja incident where 5000 were killed (Katzman, 2010). Additionally, in 1988, the Iraqi government launched its 'Anfal campaign' against the Kurds forcing Kurds to leave their houses, thus setting up a "cordon sanitaire" along the borders with Iran. Yet, after the 1991 Gulf war, the displaced Kurdish people were able to return to their villages in that zone. (HRW, 2004: 13).

The 1991 Gulf war was followed by uprisings in the south by the Shia and in the north by the Kurds. This is when Kurdish Guerillas "occupied nearly all of the areas they considered historically Kurdish including Kirkuk. Some vengeance killings took place as the population acted out its anger against those associated with the Iraqi government, ... the government soon mounted a counter-offensive and quickly crushed the uprisings" (HRW, 2004: 13-14). Accordingly, a "No-fly zone" was declared over northern Iraq. On October 1991, the Iraqi government withdrew from Erbil, Duhok and Sulaymaniyah granting de facto autonomy for the Kurds. This guaranteed the return of Kurds to the area while it led to expulsion of Arabs living in the area. Consequently, the Iraqi government focused on the Arabization of Kirkuk. "Kurds, Turkomans, and Assyrians came under constant pressure to sign "ethnic identity correction" forms relinquishing their ethnicity and registering officially as Arabs" (HRW, 2004: 15).

Figure 18: **Map of Iraq showing the Ethno-Religious Population Distribution Before 2014**




March 2003 marked the turning point in Iraq's history and the invasion started with a US call. In November 2002 President George W. Bush announced at the NATO summit the decision to assemble a "coalition of the willing." In March 2003 the initial list of countries was announced with forty-nine states, by the end of the year the list was reduced to forty-eight after Costa Rica left the coalition. Even though this number was announced differently by different resources,

only four nations sent troops during the invasion, these were the United States, the United Kingdom, Australia and Poland (Carney, 2011).

When the US removed Saddam Hussein from power aiming at replacing the regime, the region shifted to a protracted sectarian violence in a collapsed state. It resulted in security vacuum and incapable organizations; the security forces were not in place anymore and the level of crimes increased. Violence against the American forces started in the conservative religious city of Falluja. The attacks against the US forces and the counter attacks gradually increased in the city and then throughout the country.

**Timeline of Events**

- March 2003: invasion started
- April 2003: announcement of the Coalition Provisional Authority (CPA) creation
- August 2003: explosion destroying Jordanian Embassy in Baghdad and another explosion targeting UN headquarters
- September 2003: Iraqi interim Governing council names new cabinet
- October 2003: UN Resolution 1511 legitimizes the US-led occupation
- November 2003: heaviest loss for the coalition troops in Fallujah
- December 2003: Saddam is captured

***Inter-ethnic tensions and conflict with international intervention***

***2004 Abu Mosab al-Zarqawi established al-Qaeda in Iraq***

On April 16, 2003, General Tommy Franks, the commander of U.S. Central Command, issued a "Freedom Message to the Iraqi People," in which he noted that "I am creating the Coalition Provisional Authority [CPA] to exercise powers of government temporarily." (Dobbins et al, 2009, p. 11) President Bush said that the CPA would establish "an orderly country in Iraq that is free and at peace, where the average citizen has a chance to achieve his or her dreams" (Dobbins et al, 2009, p. 11). To develop the constitution of the new country, the US announced the formation of a constitutional council; however, this was rejected by the Iraqis. This announcement formed two rivals: the Americans with those working for them or part of the new administration structure and those opposing the Americans. The conflict became even more complex with the different sects being part of the conflict and with the rising of the different insurgencies leading to a low intensity war. The invasion of Iraq was initially a conventional war but developed into counterinsurgency campaign (Carney, 2011).

After the 2003 war there was a change in the sectarian relations in Iraq. With the Shi'a triumph, Sunnis had to familiarize themselves with the new "minority status" *(Haddad, 2014, p. 69).* "[T]he roles have been reversed: Sunnis have replaced their Shi'i compatriots as the self-perceived victims of sectarian discrimination. It goes without saying that the previous regime was not a "Sunni regime" any more than today's is a Shi'i regime" *(Haddad, 2014, p. 82).* The

flipped status was attempted through compensating the victims (the Kurds and the Shiites) and punishing the transgressors (the Sunnis); where the victims were competing to take the lead. The first expansion of violence beyond the conflict between the two rivals was in August 2003. It was a car bomb destroying the Jordanian embassy in Baghdad killing 19 people. After two weeks another explosion targeted the UN headquarters, killing Sergio Viera de Mello, the UN Secretary-General's Special Representative, and 19 others (Metz, 2007).

Kirkuk witnessed the most severe inter-ethnic tensions between Kurds, Turkomans, and Arabs. Violence erupted between Arabs and Kurds and deadly violence exploded between Turkomans and Kurds. Kurds fought to achieve federalism, while the Turkomans and the Arabs were against this (HRW, 2004).

Since 2003 Iraq has become a battlefield for al-Qaeda. The marginalization of the Sunni community led to even more conflict and resurgence of al-Qaeda. Bombing Sunni resistance led to a high number of displaced and to a higher level of extremism, which created a humanitarian crisis that has ended up with targeting the Shia leading to a chaotic situation. In 2004, Abu Musab al-Zarqawi, the leader of al-Qaeda in Iraq started to implement his strategic priorities on the ground; expanding the region beyond Iraq and engaging in mass killings even of other Muslims. By the year 2007, the Iraqi people started considering this movement as terrorist. This is the moment when the al-Qaeda lost the hearts and the minds of the people. This extremism pushed more Iraqis to support the 'Sahwa' (Awakening) (Ross, Gartenstein-Ross & Jensen, 2015).

**Timeline of Events**

- March 2004: Provisional Iraq constitution signed
- March 2004: four US contractors killed
- April 2004: the first battle of Fallujah known as "Operation Vigilant Resolve"
- November 2004: Second Battle of Fallujah which is considered the highest point of conflict
- January 2005: Informal independence referendum for Kurdistan Region
- September 2006: Al-Anbar uprising against al-Qaeda
- May 2006: 1st permanent government by Nouri al-Malki
- August 2007: Yazidi communities bombing
- January 2008: Turkish incursions into northern Iraq
- November 2008: attacks on Christians in Mosul
- December 2011: Full withdrawal of troops from Iraq

***Inter-ethnic tensions and conflict with international intervention***

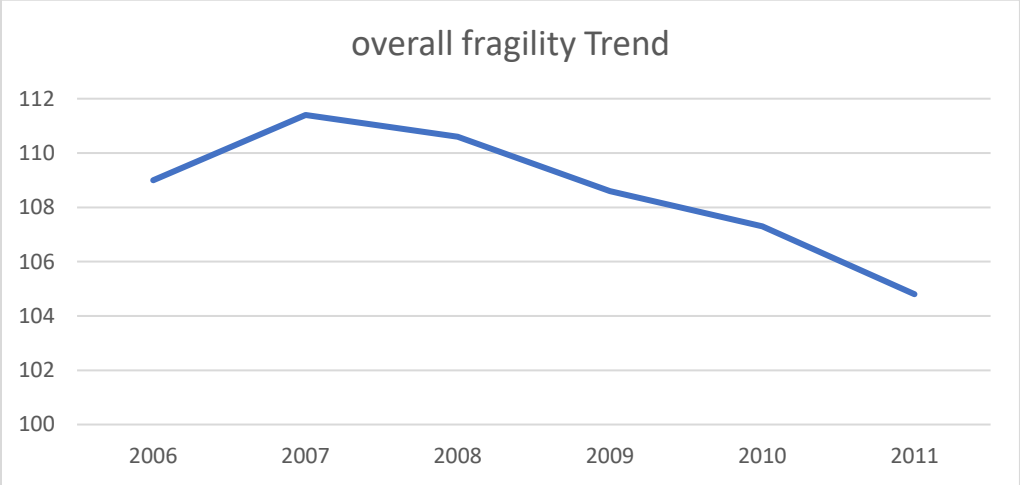
Al-Anbar tribe started its uprising against the al-Qaeda in Iraq in September 2006; this was referred to as Sahwa al-Anbar. This was due to the aggressive measures used by al-Qaeda. However, it is also related to the fact that al-Qaeda opposed any tribal structure that might affect alliance with them (Ross, Gartenstein-Ross & Jensen, 2015). The disloyalty that al-Qaeda saw from the Sunni communities and the Sunni's will for political participation led to massive executions. On the other hand, these measures raised

awareness amongst the tribes questioning whether this is the right Islam and that tribal affiliation is a key social safety (Ross, Gartenstein-Ross & Jensen, 2015).

The first permanent government was formed by Nouri al-Malki in May 2006, as successor of the Iraqi transitional government that replaced the Iraqi Interim Government in May 2005. The new government faced challenges, and the reconstruction of economy and the systems remained slow.

From 2006 to 2008 the State Fragility Index[22] showed critical indicators where the rank ranged between two and five. During the period 2009 to 2011 the index ranged from 6 to 9.[23] Figure 19 below illustrates the State Fragility Index in Iraq in the period 2006-2011[24]. The graph includes some improvements, though it is still within the high alert category.

Figure 19: **Overall Fragility Trend (2006-2011)**




Source: Raw data retrieved from State Fragility Index

## Different Categories… Different Interests… Segregation

> *"As the state collapsed, the illusory veneer of relative uniformity and harmony that the Ba'ath had forcefully and violently upheld was abruptly removed, unleashing passions and identities that had been at best, poorly understood, and at worst, completely overlooked." (Haddad, 2014, p. 68)*

[22] In State Fragility Index countries ranking are according to the following: from 1-5 refer to those with very high alert, ranking from 6-9 refer to those with high alert, 10-31 alert, 32-60 high warning, 61-95 elevated warning, 96-119 warning, 120-132 stable, 133-149 more stable, 150-160 very stable, 161-171 sustainable, 172-178 very sustainable.

[23] Source: Fund for Peace (2019), available at: https://fragilestatesindex.org/country-data/

[24] No data available prior to 2006

The focus of communal groups in Iraq is mainly on Shiites, Sunnis, and Kurds. However, beyond this other distinctions existed between diverse ethnic, religious, sectarian, and linguistic groups. These minorities have faced intimidation and persecution resulting from this diversity and due to stereotyping of the majority. Some minorities have a distinct ethnic background; others have a different religion or sect, while others have unique ethno-religious backgrounds. Those diverse backgrounds embraced cultural distinction with different customs, traditions, clothing, and languages.

Discrimination against minorities already existed prior to 2003 but deteriorated even more during the different phases of the insurgency. Discrimination existed and was evident in their daily life events. In some cases, discrimination was also reflected in the law. For example, Law No. 105 of 1970 prohibits the practice of the Baha'i faith, and a 2001 resolution prohibits the practice of the Wahhabi branch of Islam (UNHCR, 2018). The absence of recognition of some religious minorities in Iraq, such as Baha'is, Kaka'is, and Zoroastrians is still a systematic official denial (Salloum, 2016).

The following list consists of some minorities that exist in Iraq [25]:

***Turkmen***

Turkmen are the third largest group in Iraq, with an estimate of 2.5 to 3 million (IILHR, 2016). An ethnic group of whom 60 percent are Sunni, less than 40 percent Shia, and the rest are Christians (Lamani, 2009). Most reside in the northern area of Iraq, mostly in Kirkuk (IILHR, 2016). Turkmen are perceived as remnants of the Ottoman Empire (Salloum, 2016)

Some of the Turkmen support the Kurdish case, while others oppose their claims fearing assimilation under the Kurdish communities; therefore, they oppose the creation of autonomous regions and strives for a strong central government that respects the diverse cultures (Lamani, 2009).

Turkmen were intimidated by the Kurds and the central government along with militias for religious and ethnic purposes (IILHR, 2016). Shia Turkmen were intensively targeted by ISIS.

[25] Kurds are not considered in this section as in this period the Kurds already established their own independent regional government. Kurds are considered as separatists

***Christians***

Different Christian sects exist in Iraq including Armenian Catholics, Orthodox, Assyrian, Assyrian Orthodox, Chaldean Catholics, Evangelicals, Protestants, and Syriac Catholics. These are considered ethno-religious groups as they speak their own languages and some do not identify themselves as Arabs (IILHR, 2016). "[A] religious minority but not a separate ethnicity" (Lamani, 2009, p. 9). The Christian ethnicities include: Chaldean, Assyrian, Armenian, and Syriac.

Christians faced intimidation and were targeted by ISIS. However, Christians were different as they could stay in their homes if they agreed to pay taxes *'jeziya',* though many were killed despite paying those taxes (Lamani, 2009). The number of Christians decreased from 1.4 million in 2003 to less than 250,000 in 2014 (IILHR, 2016).

***Yezidis***

Yezidi is an ancient religion that dates back to 4000 BC. They are based in northern Iraq, and some are based in Syria and Turkey. They are not thinly spread like the other minorities. They speak the Kurmanji (a Kurdish dialect) (IILHR, 2016).

Due to misinterpretation of the Yezidi religion, some perceive them as worshipers of the devil (Salloum, 2016). As a result, they were subject to continuous violence, by March 2015, 500,000 Yazidis, predominantly from Sinjar District, had been displaced, with the majority fleeing to the Kurdistan Region of Iraq (UNHCR, 2019). By 2007, no Yezidis were left in Mosul (IILHR, 2016). In August 2014, around 3,100 Yazidis were killed in the Mount Sinjar area and 6,800 were kidnapped and many of Yazidi women were sexually abused. According to ISIS, Yezidis have the choice between conversion, expulsion and execution (Lamani, 2009).

***Mandaeans***

The Sabian-Mandaean is the oldest monotheistic religion that follows John the Baptist. They are both an ethnic and religious minority in Iraq and are part of the endogenous Aramaic people. Mandaean refers also to the language, which is still spoken by the Mandaean in Iran. However, in Iraq it is used only in liturgy, as they lost their everyday language during the *Arabization* process especially between 1950 and the 1960s, an era that adversely affected the religion (MAU, 2009). They are spread in urban areas especially in Baghdad, which exposed them to sectarian violence. The Mandaean faced extinction through forced conversion, rape and murder as they are perceived as worshipers of planets and stars (Salloum, 2016). Being wealthier than the other minorities exposed them to criminal gangs (Lamani, 2009). As a result of escaping

from persecution, their numbers decreased from 70,000 to less than 5,000 (Lamani, 2009). Taking into consideration this small population and the dispersion over a number of countries, this religion is under risk of extinction (MAU, 2009). See table (1).

**Table 1**: **Change in Population amongst Minority Communities**

| Minority | Population in 2003 | Population after the invasion |
|---|---|---|
| Christians | 1.4 million | Now less than 250,000 |
| Yazidis | 700,000 | Less than 500,000[26] |
| Mandaean | 70,000 | 5,000 |

***Kaka'is***

Kaka'i is also known as *'Ahl-e Haqq'* (People of Truth) or Yarsan, the total number of Yarsanis is estimated at around two million people living primarily in western Iran and eastern Iraq. These are about 200,000 living in south-east Kirkuk, Ninewa, and the Kurdish region. Yarsanis are mainly considered a branch of the Shia faith and a Kurdish subgroup (IILHR, 2016). ISIS considered them as infidels who must be eliminated as they were perceived as a heretical religious group (Salloum, 2016).

***Shabak***

The Shabak is an ethnic and linguistic minority with distinct religious practices that are a fusion of elements of the various Islamic sects along with some the Christianity practices. In Ninewa and near Mosul their population is estimated between 200,000 and 500,000; although they are considered infidels. The majority of them are Shia Muslims and the rest are Sunni Muslims. They experienced persecution from both Kurds and Arabs during the dispute over control of Ninewa (IILHR, 2016). About 1,300 were killed between 2003 and 2014. Shabak homes were marked by IS militias with the letter 'R' signaling the word 'Rafida' a term that refers to Shia and other sects who did not conform to their dogmatic religious perspectives (Muwafaq, 2018).

***Faili Kurds***

Unlike the Kurds, the Faili Kurds are mainly Shia. They spread along the borders with Iran in the Zagros Mountains. They are perceived to be affiliated to Iran although they suffered during

[26] Including IDPs in the Kurdistan Region of Iraq, while these numbers are not accurate due to the large number of Yazidis missing.

the Iraq-Iran war (Salloum, 2016). However, Nationality Law (2006) was more inclusive as "it removes previous distinction between Arabs and non-Arabs for the naturalization process and repeals legislation that revoked the citizenship of Faili Kurds (DFAT, 2018a, p. 31).

***Other Minorities***

There are other minorities in Iraq including: Iraqis of African Descent (sometimes referred to as "Black Iraqis'), Palestinian (these are Palestinian refugees with no citizenship), and Jews.

## Insurgency

There is a wide range if insurgency in Iraq that started after 2003, which has passed through different phases. The first phase of insurgency lasted from 2003 to 2011 following the invasion of Iraq. This refers to the period following the end of Saddam Hussein's regime, where insurgency was mainly against the US-led multinational force along with inter-ethnic tensions. The other phase started after the US withdrawal in 2011, however, a resurgence of the different groups spurred up in 2013.

Different groups with different ideologies and different levels of extremism have emerged, grown and affected the whole region. Some are fighting to change the government while others are striving to affect the people themselves, in many cases affecting the minorities and also facing also the majority. Some have operated in coalitions, while others clashed with the other insurgents. Some are supporting the return of the Iraqi security forces to the Sunni sect, while others oppose it. Many of them emerged in 2003, another significant number of them started in 2006/2007, while others came to life in 2013/2014.

The year 2006 marked the turning point of insurgency in Iraq. This is the so called "Al-Sahwa" translated for Awakening. The Sahwa movement refers to the change in the Sunni insurgency position, when they took up arms against al-Qaida in Iraq (Adnan & Reese, 2014). In 2011, the ground forces withdrew from Iraq, the moment where the Prime Minister Nouri al-Malki failed to integrate the Sunni and on the contrary started the exclusion policy that started by arresting the bodyguards of the Sunni Finance Minister. Then violence started with Sunni calls to support the armed resistance, tribal militias and insurgent groups (such as the Ba'athist Jaysh Rijal al-Tariq al-Naqshabandia – JRTN) (Adnan & Reese, 2014). Figure 20 below illustrates the different insurgent groups who were active during the period 2003-2018 according to Stanford University.

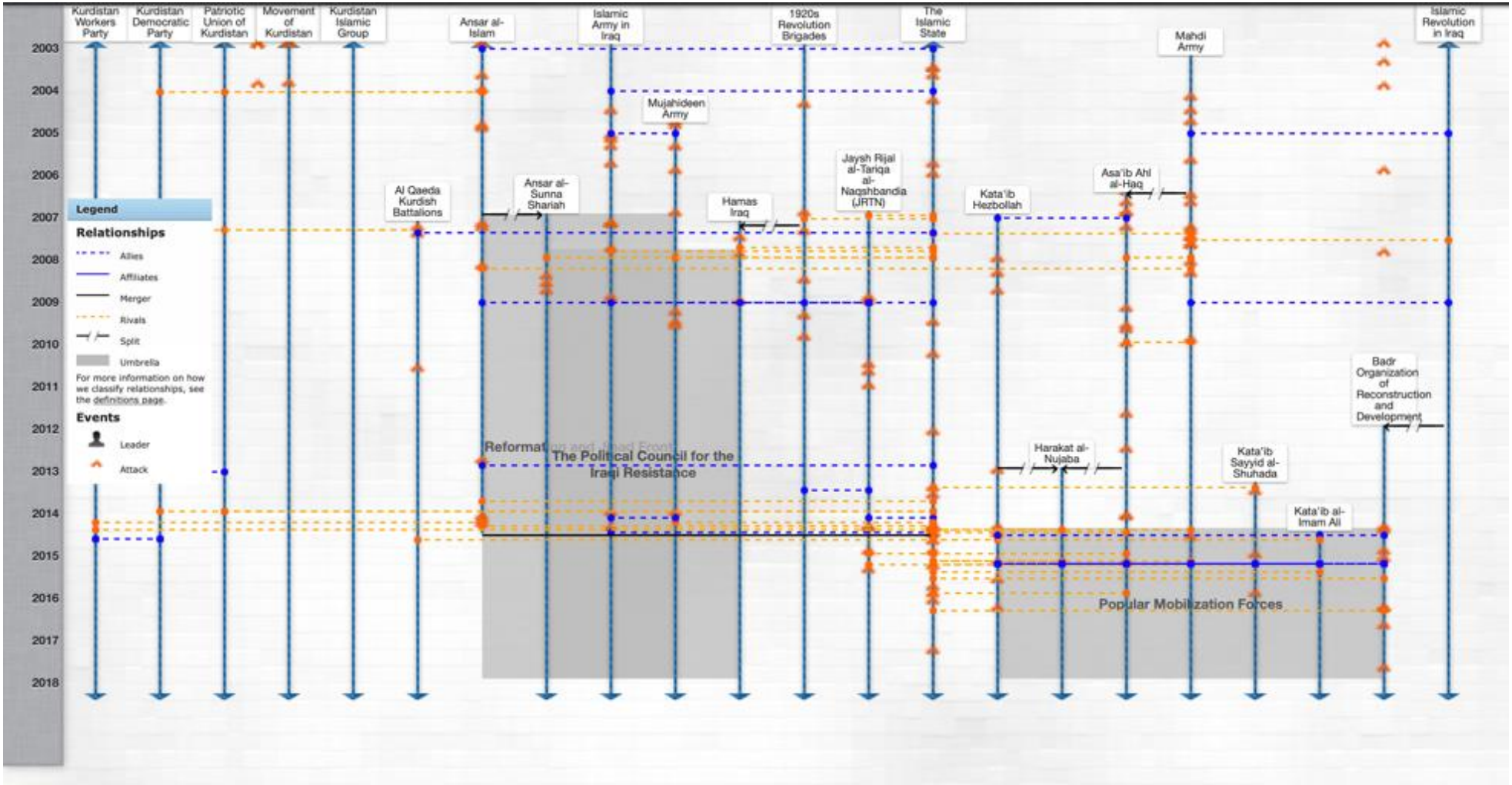
The following is a list of some of the insurgency groups active in Iraq during the period 2013-2019. The list shows the complexity in understanding the allies and rivals within the insurgency groups. It shows the different affiliations and the controversial support provided to both insurgents and counterinsurgents.

***The Islamic State (IS)***

The Islamic State (IS) is also known as the Islamic State of Iraq and Syria (ISIS) and the Islamic State in Iraq and the Levant (ISIL). It is an Islamic Salafist organization that was established with the vision of transnational Islamic State. The IS traces its origin to early 2000 when Abu Musab al-Zarqawi from Jordan became a militia and started Jama'at al-Tawhid wal-Jihad in the Kurdish area of Sulaymaniya which was targeted by the US troops during the 2003 US invasion of Iraq. This group had three major targets: the Shia, the international community, and Jordan; and hence their terrorist activities were conducted as such. In September 2004, Zarqawi announced the allegiance with al-Qaeda; where the group was then called al-Qaeda in Iraq. The relationship between al-Qaeda in Iraq and al-Qaeda was tense due to the different visions and strategies of both groups. However, the group remained attractive for supporters and followers. Ideologically, all followers come from the Saudi Wahhabism, those who believed that the Shia were heretics. Zarqawi died in June 2006, and al-Qaeda in Iraq appointed Abu Ayyub al-Masri as the new leader. Four months later the Islamic State in Iraq the Islamic State in Iraq (ISI) "Dawla al-Islamya fi Iraq" was established with a fully structured cabinet (ISI) (Shamieh & Szenes, 2015). The group faced decline after 2011, but after it gained back its strength when it got involved in the Syrian Civil war. Its name changed to ISIS at this time.

ISIS used intensive attacks targeting civilians including Shia, Kurds and especially against minorities who did not accept this vision. ISIS also targeted the Iraqi Security Forces and international forces. On the ground ISIS fought against the Iraqi security forces, Iraqi militias, the Kurdish Peshmerga, the Syrian government forces, the Syrian rebel groups, and the international forces.

Figure 20: **Map of the Insurgents in Iraq (2003-2018)**



Supporters of ISIS ranged from individuals to countries; though there is no clear evidence of any country support. Some claims refer to different countries in the region that supported ISIS including Turkey, Saudi Arabia among others (NRLS, 2019). Many of ISIS members came from different nationalities, including Arabs and non-Arabs, Asians, and Europeans. This was accomplished through the marketing strategies ISIS used to recruit new members; locals and internationals (Shamieh & Szenes, 2015).

***The General Military Council of Iraqi Revolutionaries***

The General Military Council of Iraqi Revolutionaries (GMCIR) is a Ba'athist militant group. It is estimated that there are 75,000 fighters affiliated to GMCIR, mostly concentrated in Anbar, Salahal-Din and Ninewah governorates (Hera, 2014). Reports also claim that the GMCIR are affiliated to the Jaysh Rajaal al-Tariqa al-Naqshabandia (JRTN – Army of the Men of the Naqshabandi Path). The relationship between this group and ISIS is also controversial, as they admit their participation in ISIS operations (Adnan & Reese, 2014). However, GMCIR do share the same ideological orientation of ISIS. ISIS fights were mainly against non-Sunni religious and ethnic communities; whereas GMCIR is mainly a nationalist movement seeking Iraqi unity (Adnan & Reese, 2014) despite the controversial operations in which they were included.
GMCIR strived for substantial changes in the socio-political system and were anti-Maliki and anti-Iranian. The challenges this insurgency faced include the rejection of the Shia, the association with ISIS, and its association with tribal militias (Hera, 2014).

***Jaysh Rajaal al-Tariqa al-Naqshabandia (JRTN)***

JRTN is the second largest insurgent group after ISIS. It was formed by Saddam Hussein's right-hand man, Izzat Ibrahim al-Douri in 2006 as the main front for Baathist insurgents. This group is an amalgamation of the secular nationalism and the Naqshbandi Sunni Islam; however, it utilizes the jihad terminology to gain religious legitimacy. Despite its distinct ideology, JRTN worked closely with ISIS especially in 2014 during the capturing of Mosul (CISAC, 2019a).

***The Fallujah Military Council***

The Falluja Military Council was created to face ISIS operations in Falluja. On July 8, 2014 ISIS reportedly executed a number of Fallujah gunmen for refusing to pledge allegiance to ISIS leader Abu Bakr al- Baghdadi (Adnan & Reese, 2014).

***1920 Brigades***

The 1920 Brigades group name refers to the 1920 revolution against the British colonial rule in Iraq. The group was established in 2003 to free Iraq from foreign occupation particularly from "American military and political presence" (CISAC, 2019). The majority of their attacks were against the US soldiers and bases. In 2007 and after Al-Qaeda's assassination of several group members; the 1920 Brigades were divided amongst themselves, opposing Al-Qaeda and cooperating with the US or vice versa. Those who decided to cooperate with Al-Qaeda and oppose the US formed a new group called *Hamas Iraq*. The assassinations, the division amongst the group and the internal conflict led to incapacitating the group. As of 2019, there is limited presence of the group with no publications or political activity (CISAC, 2019b).

***The Islamic Army in Iraq***

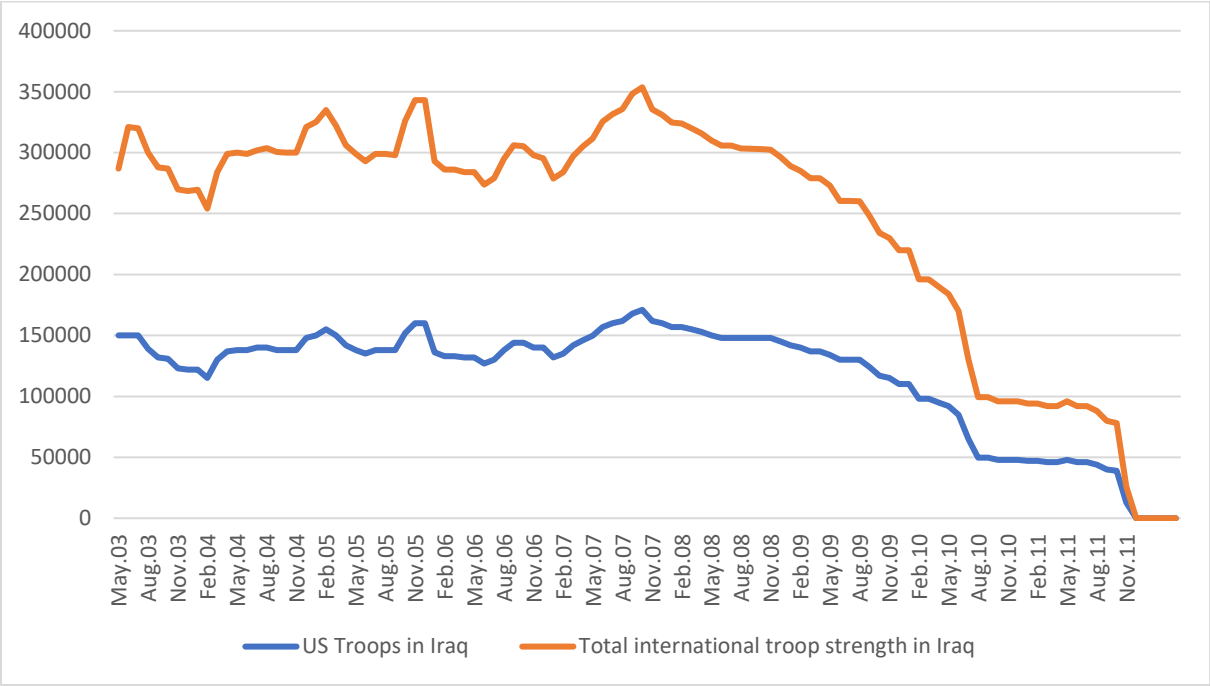
This Islamic Army group in Iraq (IAI) was formed in 2003 following the 2003 invasion of Iraq by the United States and coalition military forces. From 2003-2011, the group targeted the US military forces; while in 2006 several clashes were reported against Al-Qaeda. The group's operations declined in 2008 and rose again in 2014. The IAI's vision is to participate in a political solution for Iraq (Adnan & Reese, 2014, p. 19).

## Counterinsurgency

Following the 2003 change, the coalition forces removed all the traces of the previous regime; this led to high level of unemployment, lack of food security, lack of economic security, and lack of national security (Mabon & Royle, 2017).

Different nationalities participated in the Coalition and the counterinsurgency battles. A significant number of troops were composed of US troops included half of the ground forces and the other half formed by the other nationalities (see figure 21 below) (O'Hanlon & Livingston, 2013). During the invasion phase the belligerents included the United States the United Kingdom, Australia, Poland, and the Peshmerga forces supported by Canada, Netherlands and Italy from one side and the Iraqi government from the other side. During the post invasion phase (2003-2011), the belligerents included the United States, the United Kingdom, the Coalition Forces, the new Iraqi government supported by Iran, Iraqi Kurdistan the Baath loyalist, Sunni insurgents, and Shia insurgents.

Figure 21: **International Strength Troops (2003-2011)**




Source: Raw data available in Brookings Report "Iraq Index"

Other players of the conflict were active, and in some cases, it was not clear if they support the insurgents or the counterinsurgents. The ups and downs in the American-Turkish relations were also evident in the variation of support (Dağcı, 2012).

Private security contractors were also employed to provide services in Iraq. Services included: protecting fixed locations, guarding traveling convoys, providing security escorts, and training military personnel. The peak was in 2009 with more than 15,000 individuals employed (CRS, 2019).

Counterinsurgency experienced in Iraq ranged from absolute failure as assessed by the different belligerents to some success. The 'Operation Vigilant Resolve' that started in April 2004 in response to the killing of four American contractors in the city was an example of a strategic failure characterized by poorly timed, planned and coordinated overreaction. It was the first Marine assault on Falluja, where two marine battalions began their attack on insurgent positions. This battle confronted 300,000 citizens along with 2,000 insurgents. The battle was considered unsuccessful, and a turning point in US counterinsurgency strategy:

> *"Two reinforced battalions were tasked with isolating and attacking a medium-sized city . . . Depending on the tactical situation, manpower shortages may be compensated for by increased firepower, which the*

> *Marine commanders were unwilling-or unable-to apply in Valiant Resolve. Indeed, it appears that leaders at the scene quickly came to this conclusion. The operation never progressed beyond the foothold stage. Marines gained access to the urban area (in that case, outlying industrial neighborhoods), but did not penetrate to the heart of the city, much less take it*." (Matthews, 2010, p. 9)

Reports referred that the marines did not expect the high level of preparedness of the insurgents, which caused heavy losses. It was mainly a loss in the information operations (IO). The insurgents themselves considered it is a great victory, where the city became totally controlled by the insurgents and the supporting foreign fighters (Matthews, 2010).

Other operations were successful. Following the Fallujah failure, Muqtada al Sadr's anti-government Mahdi militia attacked government forces in the city. Within three weeks the Sadr's militia was defeated. This opened eyes back again to Fallujah (Matthews, 2010).

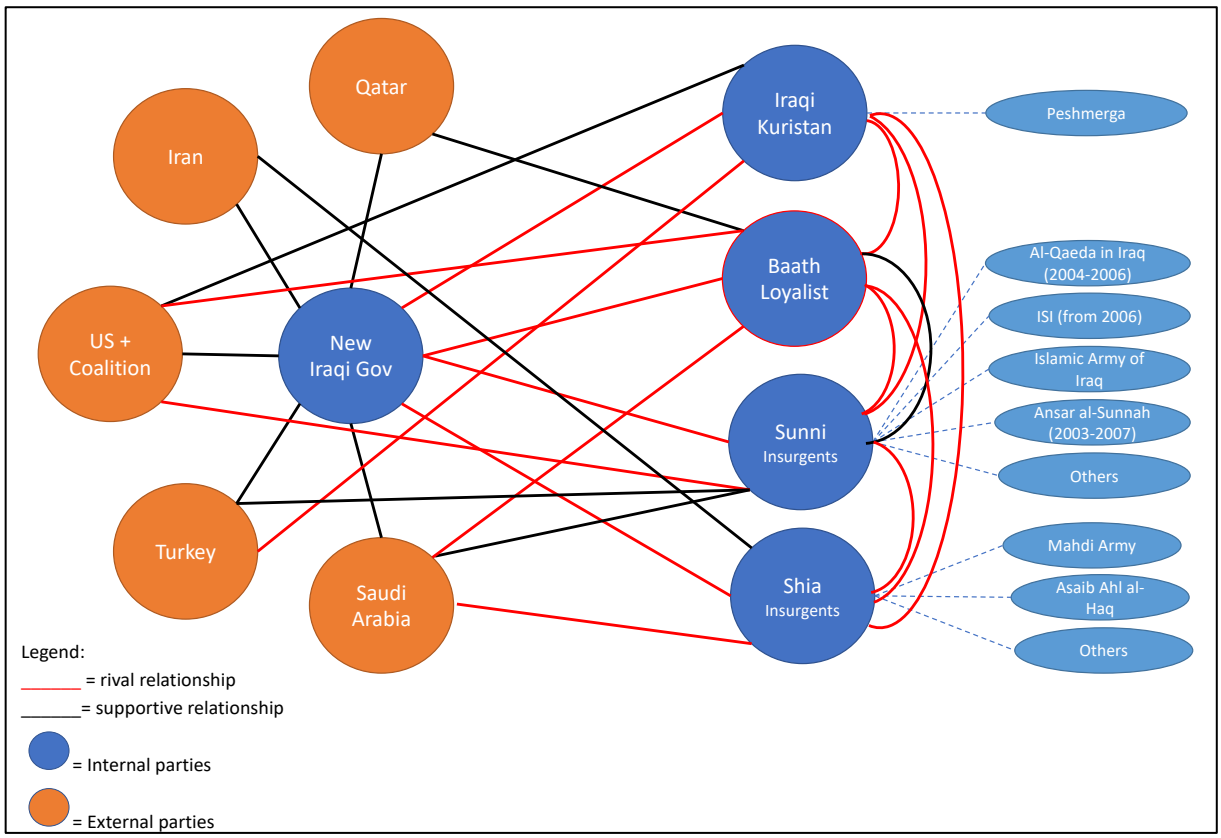
In 2008, to achieve the long-term security plan, the US paid salaries through the Iraqi Prime Minister Nouri al-Malki to the fighters. Although these were not military personnel, this fund was meant to build a military system. However, with the lack of transparency as to where this money went, a more chaotic situation was created. (Mabon & Royle, 2017).

> *"In essence, Sunni Arabs tribes became part of the Sunni 'problem', struggling for power and resources, and divided over how to respond to the worsening political-economic conditions. Al-Maliki was able to use these schisms for his own benefit, playing Sunni groups and tribes against one another across his tenure. As Sunni Arab tribal politics interacted with politics at the national level, the identity of the tribal movement that had been briefly established during the Sahwa eroded, and the tribes once again became fragmented."* (Mabon & Royle, 2017, p. 91)

Iraq's neighboring countries were also part of the game. Kuwait for example had concerns of the Iranian influence and of the spillover of Iraqi Shia across its own borders; therefore, Kuwait provided support to the US military action. Qatar also supported the US military by hosting the central command; though it also hosted the former Iraqi Baathists (Alterman, 2007). Iran has also supported the Iraqi Shiite insurgency with "material support" (CFR, 2008).

Sectarian violence escalated since counterinsurgency started, different parties embarked in the conflict and the complexity and intensity of the conflict increased by time. Counterinsurgency operations were activated and support to the different parties were provided either internally or externally and either physically or financially. Different lines of communications were initiated either as rivals or supporters. Figure 22 illustrates the network of relationship between the different players on the ground. The various players on the ground strive to accomplish their objectives; the officially announced and the hidden agendas; these contradict in many cases the objectives of the other parties. Therefore, the numerous numbers of players created a chaos and a loss of human security.

Figure 22: **Network of Insurgents and Counterinsurgents**



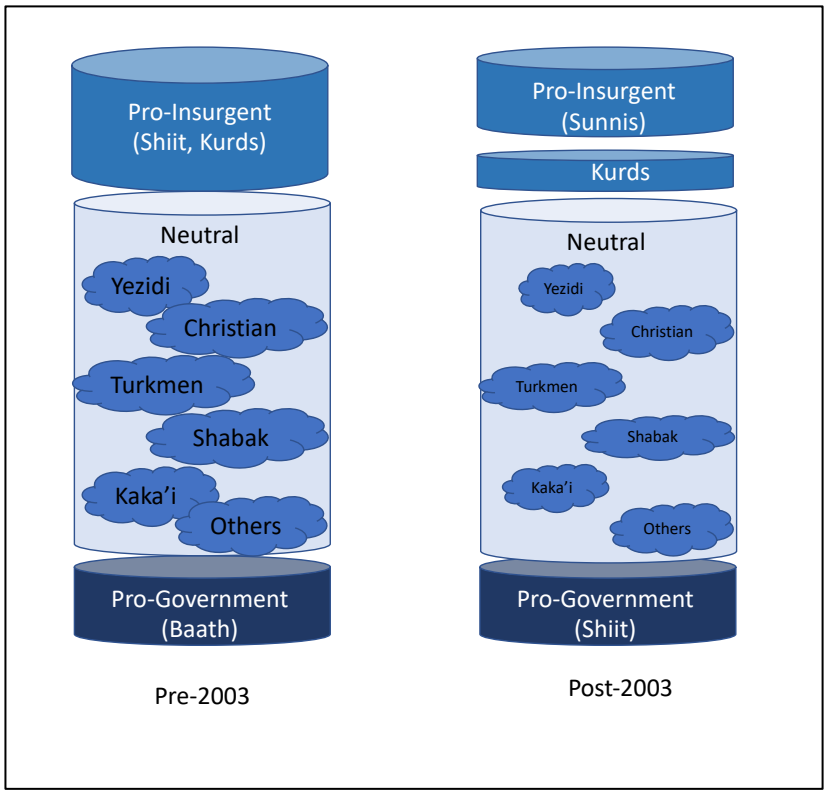

Source: own design

## Vicious cycle

The Mosaic that forms the Iraqi community has been distorted by external support of many players. However, many of the minorities in Iraq were not part of the violence due to their small demographic size, weak political participation, and their suffering from pre-conceptions stereotypes and social stigmatization (Salloum, 2016).

Community structure has changed after changing the regime in 2003. Although sectarianism has always been the key in the Iraqi community, it has never been explicit as it is nowadays. The regime pre-2003 was not Sunni in the sense that this is the ruling ideology; the ruling ideology was in fact a "Pan-Arabism". Figure 23 below illustrates the difference in the structure pre and post 2003.

Figure 23: **Community Structure and Formation of Insurgency pre and post 2003**




Source: own design

The spark of insurgency started when the insurgents seized to gain control over territory or to enforce their ideology. This is apparent with the different Sunni insurgents and the Baathists. They received support by gaining organizational strength, resources and popular support. This helped form strong flocculation. They were able to affect neutral population by providing financial and physical support. The number and size of the colloids increased rapidly. The external support affected both the government and the insurgents. The different opposing external forces available led to more conflict and hence the situation was trapped into a vicious

cycle. Affecting the center of mass for the system as a whole, where every community is concerned about their own human security creating more chaos within the system.

The centrifugal force affecting the individuals and groups in Iraq could be calculated according to the centrifugal force formula:

$$F_c = \frac{(S \times W)v^2}{r} \qquad (1)$$

where

$F_c$ = centrifugal force (it is the force that people feel disturbs all stability and their human security)

$v$ = violence level during the conflict; originally this is the velocity. Since 2003 the level of violence escalated to a high level.

$s$ = support provided by the poles (internal and external), not only did the support increase but also it was complex to the extent that it was contradictory. The support formally announced was different from the real agendas. It was provided through governments and individuals. Around 41,500 foreign fighters took part in the battles (Cook & Vale, 2018)

$w$ = the willingness to control the government, the analysis of the insurgents showed individual and group interests to control the government.

$r$ = is the ratio of those engaged in the conflict to the total population; the number of those engaged in the conflict increased by time not only between the insurgents and the government but also amongst the insurgents' groups who were fighting for tribal survival and insurgents' survival.

With an increasing violence level ($v$), support provided by the poles ($s$), willingness to control the government ($w$), and number of those engaged in the conflict to the total population; the centrifugal force ($F_c$) increased to an alarming level.

## Impact of the Vicious Cycle

According to the vicious cycle model, an unrestrained particle would leave its orbit under the impact of the centrifugal force. The feeling of lack of support provided and lack of ambition to change will facilitate immigration from the system with no looking back. This was evident with the high number of refugees and Internally Displaced Persons (IDPs) amongst the minorities receiving no support.

Although displacement was ongoing, there were two peeks identified; the first in 2006 when the Sunni-Shia violence forced thousands of minority families, the second in 2008 when violence against Christians, Yezidis forced thousands of families to flee their homes (Lamani, 2009). 25-30 percent of the population has been forced to leave their homes and are either internally or externally displaced (Lamani, 2009). More than 80 percent of the Mandaean population were forced to leave; 60 percent of Christians and other ethnic or religious groups were displaced. Most of the Yezidi and Kaka'i were forced from Ninewa and subsisting as IDPs (IILHR, 2016). Table (2) below shows the number of IDPs throughout the period. Despite the significant number of returnees, this displacement has not yet been over until this current period.

Table 2: **IDPs in Iraq (2003-2011)**

| Year | Internally displaced |
|---|---|
| 2003 | 400,000 |
| 2004 | 800,000 |
| 2005 | 1,200,000 |
| 2006 | 2,000,000 |
| 2007 | 2,740,000 |
| 2008 | 2,770,000 |
| 2009 | 2,764,000 |
| 2010 | 2,700,000 |

Source: Brookings Report "Iraq Index"

According to the model, the fragmentation leads to different centers of mass this means different centers of gravity for the different segments of the society. The resultant is then a massive deterioration in human security resulting from competing positions of each respective

center of mass, the following is a quick summary of the three most relevant human insecurity dimensions (community, political, and personal insecurity), with some insight around the other four dimensions (economic, food, health, and environment):

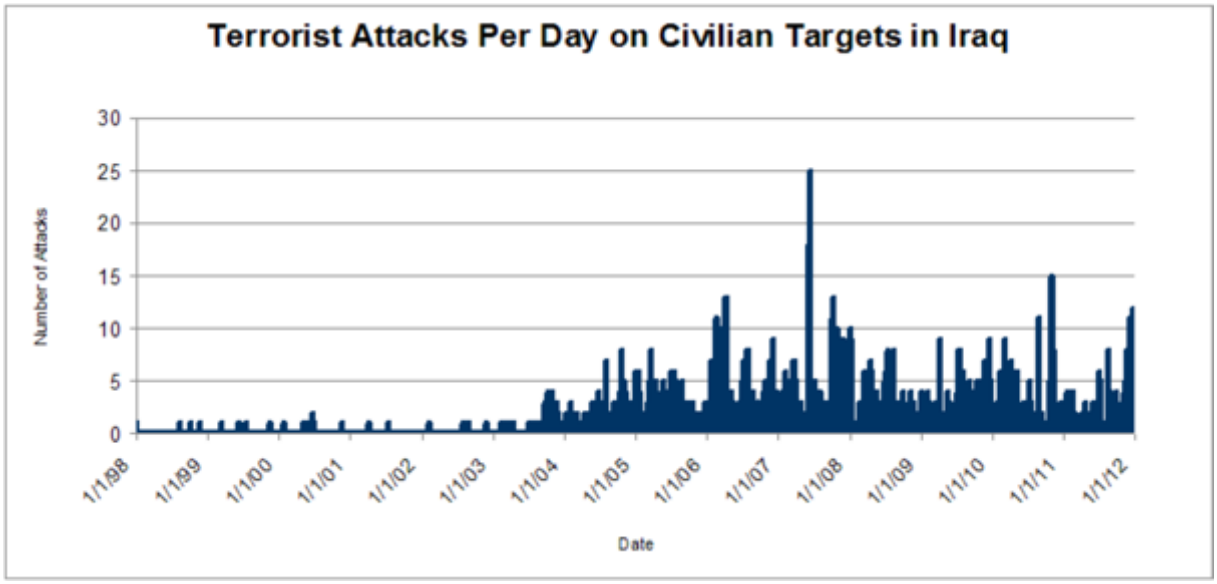
***Community Security***

Iraqis are facing dis-unification and breakdown of their families and communities as a result of the conflict, collapse of cultures; people are desperate that the community will get back as good as the pre-2003 era. Iraqis interviewed revealed that the suffering during Saddam regime is not harmful as the suffering they are now facing as individuals, communities and as a nation. They noted the inter-ethnic and identity-based tensions pre-2003, but they declared that the situation deteriorated since there is no potential of advancing back to that point.

> *"At his most vulnerable position, Saddam Hussein used sectarianism and nationalism as weapons against his internal enemies," the Civil-Military Fusion Centre (CFC) wrote in a recent briefing on the risk of a renewed breakout of large-scale violence. "Today's Iraqi Shiite parties and government appear to be doing far worse as governmental rule is justified on a sectarian basis." (IRIN, 2013, para 8)*

The rise in terrorism was evident through the escalating number of terrorist attacks (see figure 24 below). Again, the attacks may have decreased later on; however, this has not approached the pre-2003 era. Moreover, it is clearly evident through the “unprecedented education, testing their [Al Qaeda] mettle against the best trained military in the world’ (Stern & McBride, 2013, p. 2).

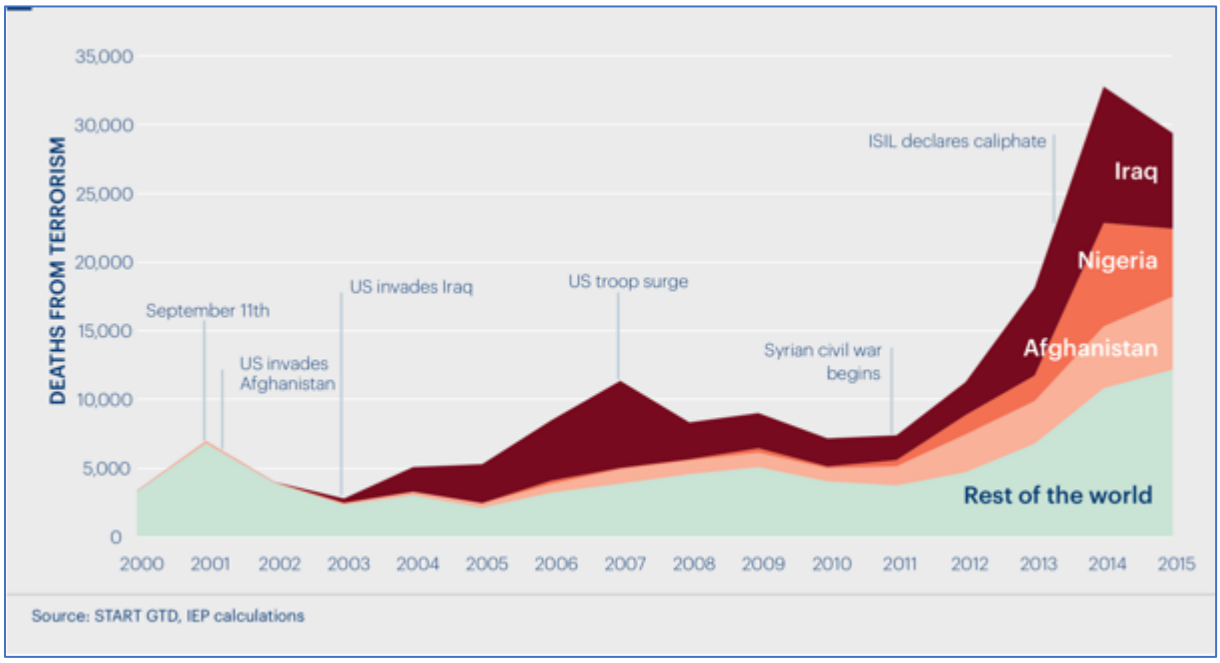
Figure 24: **Terrorists Attacks per Day on Civilian Targets in Iraq**




Source: Stern & McBride (2013)

Number of deaths resulting from terrorist attacks has also increased, figure 25 below shows the number of deaths resulting from terrorism. The number has been increasing since the 2003 invasion. Tensions including ethnic and religious tensions have affected all factions of the society. According to UNHCR statistics, about 700,000 Iraqis took refuge in Syria in the period between October 2003 and March 2005. In the same period 5,843 cases (15,855 persons) were registered as asylum-seekers by UNHCR in Damascus out of which 36% were Christians (UNHCR, 2005)

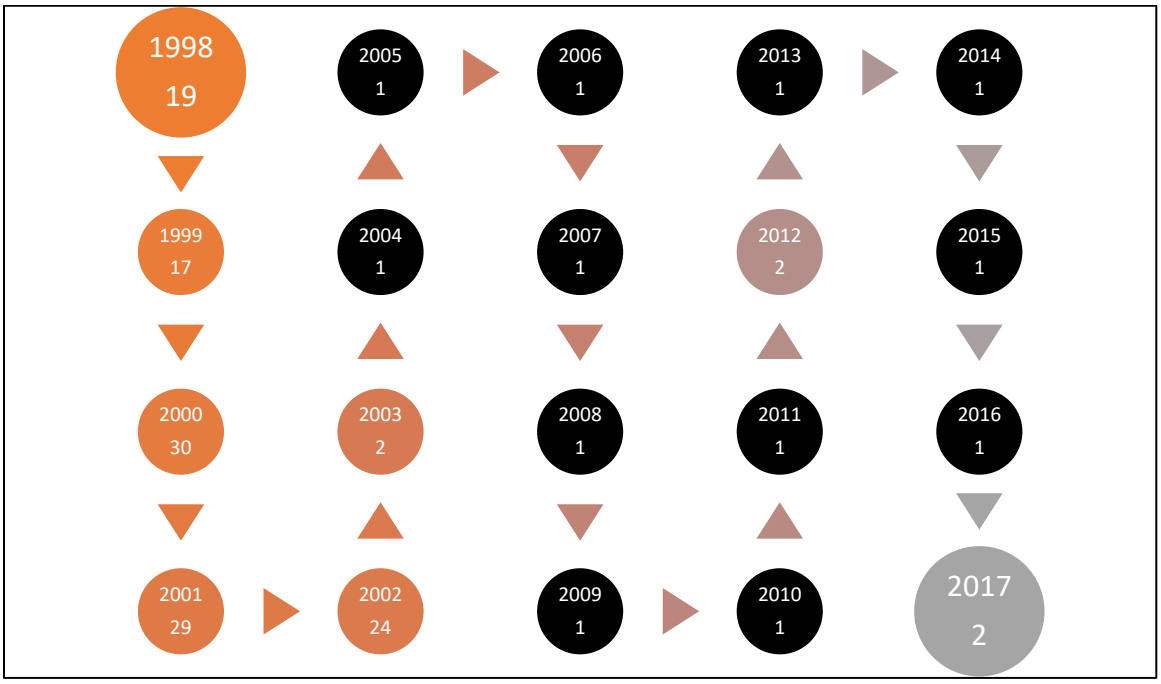
Figure 25: **Deaths from Terrorism, 2000-2015**




Source: IEP, (2016:p. 16)

Figure 26 below illustrates the rank of Iraq in the number of deaths from Terrorism from 1998 until 2017 (IEP, 2018)

Figure 26**: Rank of Number of deaths from Terrorism in Iraq 1998-2017**




Source: own design

***Political Security***

Severe human rights violations have been prevalent in Iraq. Violations include war crimes and crimes against humanity, terror attacks, and sexual abuse, leaving millions of civilians without a home and forced to flee.

Abuses during detention and imprisonment have been on the rise. Iraq is the world's third country in the number of prisoners. At least 169 prisoners were executed in 2013; this figure has been on the rise ever since (Amnesty, 2014). According to the Human Rights Watch Report (2010) there is serious delays in the judicial review, some detainees spend years in custody without trial or even charge. Detainees face torturing with no access to families or lawyers. In 2010, Iraq was one of the most dangerous countries to work in the media, with no freedom of expression and no freedom of assembly (HRW, 2010).

Human rights violation is faced through the government, militias and even the international forces.

> *"Thousands of classified files were published by Wikileaks. These showed, among other things, that US troops manning security roadblocks had shot dead many Iraqi civilians in previous years and that, contrary to their denials, the US military authorities had sought to keep a count of the number of Iraqi civilians killed in the conflict in Iraq. Revised estimates put the total number of civilian casualties in the conflict in Iraq between 2004 and 2009 at 66,081." (Amnesty International, 2011)*

Corruption has also increased since 2003. According to Transparency International the corruption index reached 1.8 ranked Iraq 175$^{th}$ country in 2011, whereas it ranked 113$^{th}$ in 2003 with 2.2 points.

***Personal Security***

Iraq was well known to be one of the richest countries, with high level of literacy and a high number of professionals and university graduate. However, this is not any more a matter of comparison. A huge number of those immigrated, while the remaining is working under strain and threats (Ihsanoglu, 2007).

Level of violence expanded to reach all the different regions and the different communities in Iraq. Minorities were the most affected; they faced discrimination, violence and ethnic cleansing. Different massacres took place against different communities especially against the

Yezidis. Those minorities were not part of the conflict, but they ended to be victims of the war. Gender-Based Violence (GBV) was also evident. In Basra, 133 women were killed by Islamist militias in 2007. Their bodies were dumped in rubbish tips with notes warning others against "violating Islamic teachings" (IRIN, 2010, p. 15).

Human trafficking became a prevalent issue since 2003. Kidnapping especially in Baghdad has increased noticeably. Houses were found that stored girls for selling in other countries. Trafficking of kidnapped females to other countries has been on the rise since then. Statistics in this period are not available as the term human trafficking was not yet used.

In 2004, a survey conducted by Women International revealed that 90% of women in Iraq felt that there was hope for a secured future. However, this percentage declined by 27% in 2008 (NCA, 2010). Mass numbers of women accused of prostitution were killed between 2006 and 2008 (Khadim & Khrassn 2016).

The children of Iraq is a clear evidence of the deterioration of human security. Hundreds of boys and girls remains detained due to their actual or alleged association with armed groups.

> *"The recruitment and use of 296 children was verified; attacks on schools were particularly harmful with 236 verified incidents, in addition to the military use of 79 schools. Though the verified numbers for rape and other forms of sexual violence remain low (10), actual numbers are likely higher as fear of stigma, reprisal and lack of resources prevent victims from reporting the violation. The situation of displaced populations was particularly dire with more than 2.2 million civilians, including at least one million children internally displaced"* (UN, 2020)

Table 3:**Impact on Iraqi Children**

| **Key indicator** | **value** |
|---|---|
| **Grave violations** | 2,114 grave violations against children |
| **Recruitment and use** | 296 children including 9 girls. *More than 50% recruited and used by ISIL* |
| **Detention** | at least 778 children in pre and post-trial detention on national security-related charges in June 2019 |
| **Killing and maiming** | 1,722 children killed or maimed |

| | |
|---|---|
| **Rape and other forms of sexual violence** | 10 children |
| **Abduction** | 86 children |
| **Attacks on schools and hospitals** | 236 attacks on schools; 24 attacks on hospitals |
| **Denial of humanitarian access** | 7 incidents |

Source: UN (2020a)

Thus, not only did the vicious cycle affect the national security, it affected the personal security and people's perspective of human security.

***Economic Security***

Ten years after the war, the unemployment rate was still critical; it is 18% for youth (15-24 years), with higher rates in the urban areas and for higher education (Rawaf et.al 2014). In 2020 it was 12.83%. Also, Iraq's poverty headcount index is high at 22.9% with a poverty gap of 4.5%. (Rawaf et al 2014).

Iraq has transformed from an urban society to a weak society. It faced enormous loss of economic and industrial infrastructure. The educational, health, cultural and artistic infrastructure were also severely impacted (Ihsanoglu, 2007). "Iraq has now become one of the least developed countries in the region. The lack of electricity and energy resources, the scarcity of water, the pollution and serious problems in municipal services" (Ihsanoglu, 2007: 923)

***Food Security***

Interviews conducted in 2014 with the WFP in Iraq reveals the extreme reliance on the imported agricultural products, which was not the case prior to 2003. Not only that farms desperately lack the infrastructure and modern technology, but also Iraqis are reluctant to invest in the farming process due to the escalating violence that affects long-term process; where insurgents can overtake or destroy crops.[27] WFP also revealed that around 22% of children are stunned due to chronic malnutrition (Rawaf et.al 2014).

***Health Security***

Around 96.4% of the families lack health insurance; on the other hand 40% deems the quality of health services as bad or very bad. Between 2003 and 2007 half of Iraqis doctors left the

[27] Interview with WFP country director in Iraq; 20 June 2014.

country. There are 7.8 doctors for every 10,000 people; a number that is four times lower than all the neighboring countries (WHO, 2011). Mental health disorders and distress are also prevalent amongst the different communities in Iraq. According to the WHO, "mental health disorders are the fourth leading cause of ill health in Iraqis over the age of 5" (MSF, 2013).

Table 4: **Iraqis Perceptions of Human Security**

| **Freedom** | **Fears identified by respondents** |
|---|---|
| Freedom from fear | No hope of future<br>Lack of government capacity<br>Tensions, genocide and terrorism<br>Freedom of religion<br>Increasing armaments<br>High potential to be a victim of violence anytime in the coming future |
| Freedom from want | Hunger and poverty<br>No basic income ensured<br>Lack of government safety net<br>No basic food provided (high reliance on import)<br>Natural resources deprivation |
| Freedom to live in dignity | Human rights degradation<br>Discrimination against women<br>Discrimination against religious groups and ethnicities<br>Hate and lack of acceptance of the other amongst the different new communities formed |

***Environment Security***

WASH programme has faced several challenges on the national level. One of the main challenges is the limited water resources that was prevalent even before the crisis. In Basra the water is not suitable for human consumption (Rawaf et.al 2014). This resulted into an effective disease control; the emergence of cholera has spread and expanded throughout the country (Rawaf et.al 2014).

Moreover, one of the main arising concerns is the water and sanitation amongst the IDP camps. Visits to those camps showed an ineffective water and sanitation system that affected the displaced and refugees.

When asked about their perceptions of human security in Iraq a convenient sample provided the following fears that were categorized according to the three essential freedoms: freedom from fear, freedom from want and freedom to live in dignity.

Most respondents declared that they do not see these securities getting any better, on the contrary threats increased more than those faced prior to 2003. They have deteriorated until 2011 and they continue to collapse until these days.

> *"Maybe things were not in its best shape during Saddam, but I remember I had Cristian and Shia friends, we used to visit each other and hang out together; now hatred is everywhere. It is not the same country, we are not the same people, it is not the same environment. We always feel threatened and insecure, it is not only threat to be a victim of violence; it is also the deteriorating educational system; though we used to have the best educational system in the region. It is the threat of not finding proper health services; though we used to have the best doctors in the region. It is the threat to have sufficient food since we are importing all agricultural products. We cannot trust local products anymore. This is not the life we are dreaming of, we have lost everything" (Hiba, 2019)*[28].

## Conclusion

The war in Iraq led to a complete chaos against all aspects of the society. The intervention has led to a vicious cycle and eventually it became under the impact of the centrifugal force. This has led to an increase in migration and displacement; it also led to fragmentation that created different centers of mass meaning various centers of gravity for the different segments of the society. The resultant is a massive deterioration in human security. The fragmentation and the diverse centers of mass also created a community that is not anymore similar to the original structure. It is in fact multiple new communities; communities that do not accept or appreciate the differences.

[28] Hiba Ahmed. (2019). Interview on February24, 2019

While conflict has declined in the last few years, the level of security has not returned to pre-invasion levels. Number of terrorist attacks, deaths, and violence against the different minorities is still on the rise. The protracted conflict and the failure to reconstitute the government created a fertile base for terrorists to form and start different battles; new groups of insurgents are still being formed until today.

# Chapter 6 - Case 2: AFGHANISTAN (2001-Present)

## Introduction

Afghanistan is a landlocked country situated at the crossroads between the Middle East, South Asia and Central Asia. It is the 37th populous country in the world with a population of 38.04 million in 2019[29]. The country has several ethnic groups, the largest of which is the Pashtun which has 600 different tribes (World Population Group, 2019).

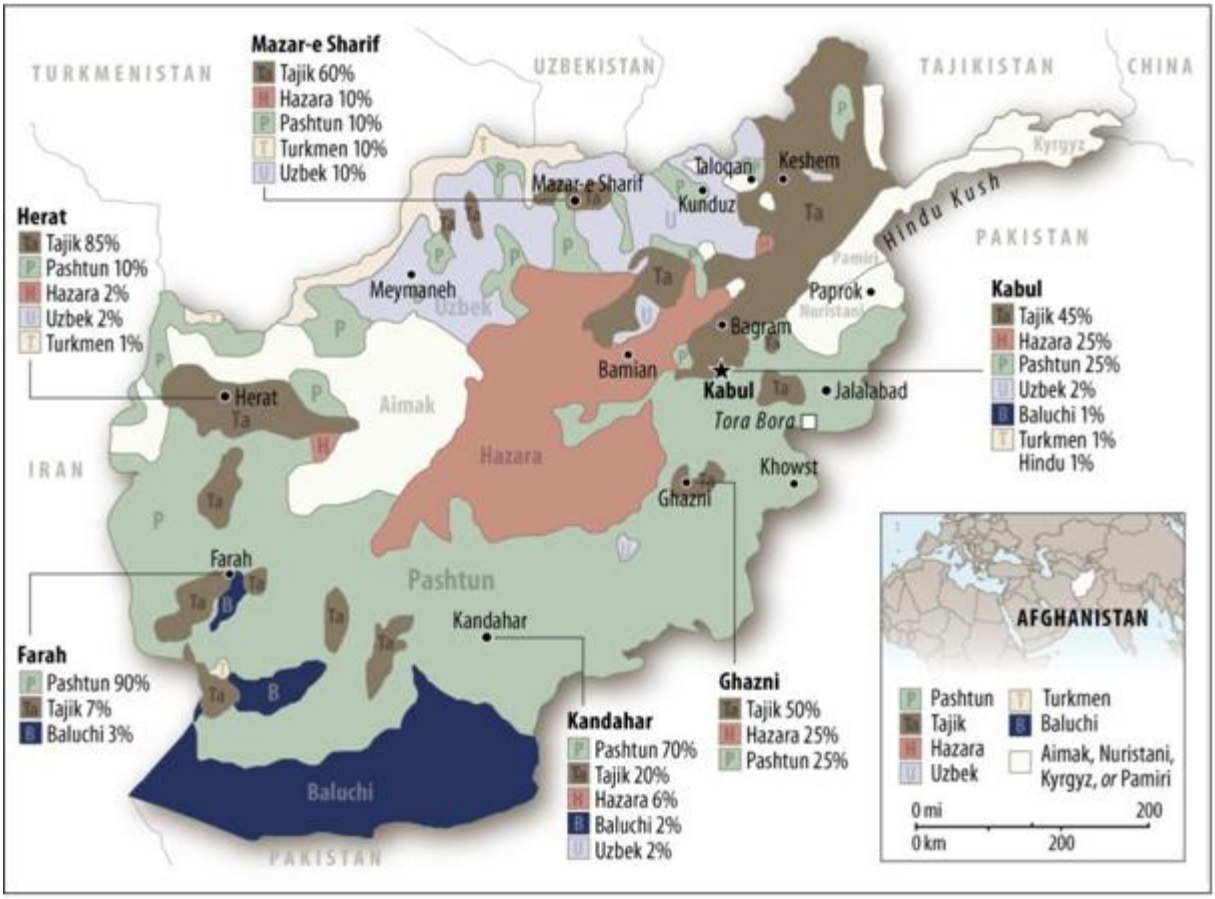
According to Barfield (2010), the history of the twentieth century in Afghanistan consists of three different eras. The first era is the 1901-1929, under the rule of Habibullah Khan who was a relatively reform-minded. He instituted various legal reforms, and was followed by his son, Amanullah. This era ended in a brief civil war. The second era is the 1929-1978, the longest interval of peace and political stability, under the rule of the Pashtun tribes. In fact, the 1960s witnessed a period of accelerated economic and social development, known as the "golden age". The third era is the era of war and anarchy (1978-present) (Barfield, 2010, p. 167-173).

The third era is important since this is what formed what Afghanistan is today. It is a period of control by the Soviet Union, and control by the US, separated by insurgency and empowerment of insurgency. According to Barfield (2010) this era could also be divided into three periods. The first refers to the declaration of the socialist regime in 1978 after the coup by members of the Marxist People's Democratic Party of Afghanistan (PDPA). The Afghan communist party overthrew and murdered President Sardar Mohammed Daoud and the communist Nur Mohammed Taraki took over. In 1978 the Soviet Union signed a friendship and cooperation agreement with Afghanistan. In September 1979 another coup toppled Taraki in favor of Hafizullah Amin, a Muslim leader who was not welcomed by the Soviet Union. This drove the Soviet Union to move troops into Afghanistan in December 1979. In the fighting Hafizullah Amin was murdered. The soviet troops were facing resistance from different Muslim parties and guerillas. This period was marked by destabilization and ten years of Soviet occupation. During this period the *mujahedeen* (holy warriors) were based in Pakistan and were supported by the US and Saudi Arabia. The Mujahedeen were "well armed with US supplied surface to air missiles" (Reuveny & Prakash, 1999: 697). The number of Soviet casualties mounted. This period ended in 1989 when the Russian troops in February 1989 withdrew from Afghanistan after the conflict started affecting Soviet domestic politics. Soviet support to Afghanistan did

[29] The last census in Afghanistan was conducted in 1979, these numbers are based on UN data

not stop at this point; they provided aid including military aircraft. The PDPA, being a communist party, was affected by the collapse of the Soviet Union and was dissolved as a result (Reuveny & Prakash, 1999).

Figure 27: **Composition of Nationalities in Afghanistan**




Source: Katzman & Thomas (2017)

The cessation of the Soviet aid (in 1992) allowed the mujahedeen to storm Kabul and form a coalition government (Barfield, 2010: 248). However, having a common enemy was the only glue that held the guerilla groups together. Following the collapse of the Soviet Union, the uniting factor was gone, and the second period – the civil war – started. Every faction had the power to control its region but lacked sufficient power to extend beyond that. Najibullah, who was the President of Afghanistan since 1987, had tried to accommodate the demands of the mujahedeen after the Soviet withdrawal and had been open to dialogue while making Islam the official religion of the country. On March, 1992, he announced his willingness to resign and make way for an interim government. However, in no time, Najibullah was toppled by a military coalition on April 1992, when Mujahedeen regime started under the command of Burhanuddin

Rabbani (Katzman, 2015). In 1993, the country was divided into different provinces with different levels of security (Barfield, 2010: 252-253). The Taliban's policies provoked other factions to form the "Northern Alliance" including Pashtun Islamists (Katzman, 2015).

During this period Taliban movement was formed. In fact, many of the Taliban members and leaders are Afghani refugees who moved to Pakistan during the Soviet invasion, and were trained there. In September 1994, Mullah Mohammad Omar, with 50 students supporting his campaign to enforce Islamic law, founded the group that later became known as Taliban. The group received financial support from Pakistan and grew to 15,000 within months(CISAC, 2018). On November 1994, the Taliban took control of Kandahar City, and in 1996 they took control of Kabul, where they established the Islamic Emirate of Afghanistan, which marked the third phase of the Afghanistan life span (Barfield, 2010: 173). This period exhibited a notable popular support for the Taliban, as the force bringing stability against those who were weak, corrupt and anti-Pashtun (Katzman, 2015). By 1998, Taliban had control of 90 percent of the country (CISAC, 2018). Three countries recognized the Taliban government: Pakistan, Saudi Arabia and United Arab Emirates (Holtom, 2007).

**Timeline of Events**

(prior 2001)

- April 1978: Afghan communist party overthrew and murdered President Sardor Mohammed Daoud
- April 1978: Nur Mohammed Taraki (communist party) took over the control
- December 1978: "friendship and cooperation" treaty between the Soviet Union and Afghanistan signed
- September 1979: Another coup toppling Taraki in favor of Hafizullah Amin (an Islamist leader)
- December 1979: Soviet troops moved into Afghanistan, and Hafizullah Amin murdered

***Resistance against Soviet invasion***

- February 1989 last Soviet Soldier left Afghanistan
- March 1992, Najibullah announced his willingness to resign and make way to an interim government
- April 1992, Najibullah was toppled by Islamist coalition

***Civil War in Afghanistan***

- September 1994: Mullah Omar with 50 students founded Taliban
- November 1994: Taliban took control over Kandahar City
- 1996: Taliban took control over Kabul
- 1998: Taliban controlled 90% of the country.

Mullah Omar welcomed international militias. These included al-Qaeda Arabs, Chechens, Uzbeks, Indonesians among others (Barfield, 2010: 266). On May 1996, al-Qaeda leader Osama bin Laden located from Sudan to Afghanistan. The Taliban lost international support when Mullah Omar refused to extract Osama bin Laden. However, the US still recognized Taliban as the legitimate government. (Katzman, 2015). After the September 11 2001 terrorist attack against the World Trade Center in New York the United States demanded the extradition

of Osama bin Laden, as the mastermind of the operation. The Taliban government refused, which cost it loss of international support. The US held the Taliban, as the de facto government of Afghanistan, responsible, and decided to invade the country and extradite bin Laden by force. September 11, was a turning point for the entire world, but most specifically for Afghanistan. Combat operations in Afghanistan started in October 2001 with "Operation Enduring Freedom" aiming to support the Northern Alliance and Pashtun anti-Taliban (Katzman & Thomas, 2017: 7). The first major offensive, and in fact the first victory for the US-led coalition, was the capture of Mazar-e-Sharif, which gave a "strategic foothold and an airport in northern Afghanistan" (Brown, 2003:14). Following this event, the UN Security Council passed resolution 1378 on November 2001 calling for a centralized role for the United Nations in establishing a transitional administration and encouraging member states to send peacekeeping forces to promote stability and aid delivery (UN, 2001a).

By late November 2001, the coalition focused on the area of Tora Bora, where Osama bin Laden was suspected to be hiding. A fierce two-week battle took place between Afghan militias and coalition forces and al-Qaeda militias. As a result, bin Laden and other leaders escaped to Pakistan (Perry & Kassing, 2015).

Military victory was contingent on the demise of the Taliban regime. It started with the Taliban fleeing Kabul in November 2001. Then it was assured in December by their surrendering the southern city of Kandahar. By this time, many key al-Qaeda and Taliban leaders fled into Pakistan, including Taliban leader Mullah Omar. This created vacuum, leaving space for tribal law mainly under Pashtun leaders.

In December 2001, four Afghan opposition groupings, signed the Bonn Agreement creating an Afghan Interim Authority to serve as the "repository of Afghan sovereignty", which was endorsed by UN Security Council Resolution 1383. In the same month, another UN Resolution (1386) was endorsed, which authorizes the *"establishment for 6 months of an International Security Assistance Force [ISAF] to assist the Afghan Interim Authority in the maintenance of security in Kabul and its surrounding areas, so that the Afghan Interim Authority as well as the personnel of the United Nations can operate in a secure environment"* (UN, 2001b, RES/1386).

The first large scale battle was "Operation Anaconda that ensued during 2-16 March. The battle was built around 1,411 US soldiers and Special Operation forces from the US and six other nations. The goal of the operation was to clear the Shahi-Kot valley. The battle was "an abject lesson in the complexities of planning and executing rapid air support for ground operations in a hostile, rugged environment" (US Air Force, 2005, p. 9).

On March 2002, the Security Council resolution 1401 authorized the creation of the United Nations Assistance Mission in Afghanistan (UNAMA). UNAMA's mandate is to fulfill tasks entrusted under the 2001 Bonn Agreement and to assist the Afghan government in achieving those objectives (Tanin, 2011). Adjustments in the mandate were made in the annual renewal of UNAMA's mandate through UN Security Council Resolutions.

Another initiative of military engagement started in November 2002 through the Provincial Reconstruction Teams PRTs by the international community in Afghanistan. These teams comprised international civilian and military personnel that aim at conducting village assessments through liaising with regional commanders focusing on reconstruction, central government support and stability (Save the Children, 2004).

On April 2003 the UN requested that the NATO take command of the ISAF mission to which the NATO agreed unanimously. On August 2003 NATO assumed full command of the ISAF coalition of the willing such that it included UN plans for expansion across the whole of Afghanistan (Bowman & Dale, 2009). The number of ISAF troops increased from 5,000 to 128,961 as of April 2012 (Livingston & O'Hanlon, 2012).

On January 2004, a constitution for Afghanistan was agreed upon by around five-hundred Afghan delegates. This facilitated the first presidential elections. Hamid Karzai won the elections with

**Time line of Events**
(post 2001)

- October 2001: US supported by Britain begin attacks on Afghanistan
- November 2001: First Major offensive in the city of Mazar-e-Sharif.
- November 2001: UN Security Council passes resolution 1378
- December 2001: The battle of Tora Bora against Taliban and al-Qaeda.
- December 2001: Ben Laden Escapes.
- December 2001: The International Security Assistance Force (ISAF), NATO led security mission, established though Resolution 1386.
- December 2001: The interim Afghan government is sworn in, with Hamid Karzai as interim administration head.
- March 2002: The first large scale battle "Operation Anaconda"
- March 2002, the Security Council resolution 1401 authorized the creation of (UNAMA)
- November 2002: US established "Provincial Reconstruction Teams"
- August 2003: NATO takes command of peacekeeping in Afghanistan.
- October 2004: The country's first direct elections.
- July 2006: Bloody resurgence spiked

***Fierce Combats***
***Casualties on both sides***
***Hundreds of civilians dead***

- February 2009: Barack Obama announces plans to send 17,000 more troops
- May 2011, Osama Ben Laden was killed
- October 2011, Obama announced plans to withdraw all combat troops by 2014
- June 2013, NATO hands over control to the afghan forces
- May 2014: Obama announces a schedule for US forces withdrawal by the end of 2016
- August 2017, Trump signaled an open-ended military commitment

55% of vote in October 2004 (Their, 2006). Hamid Karzai then signed a joint declaration of the United States-Afghanistan Strategic partnership that aims at strengthening the ties between the two countries to help ensure long term security (Office of the Press Secretary, 2005).

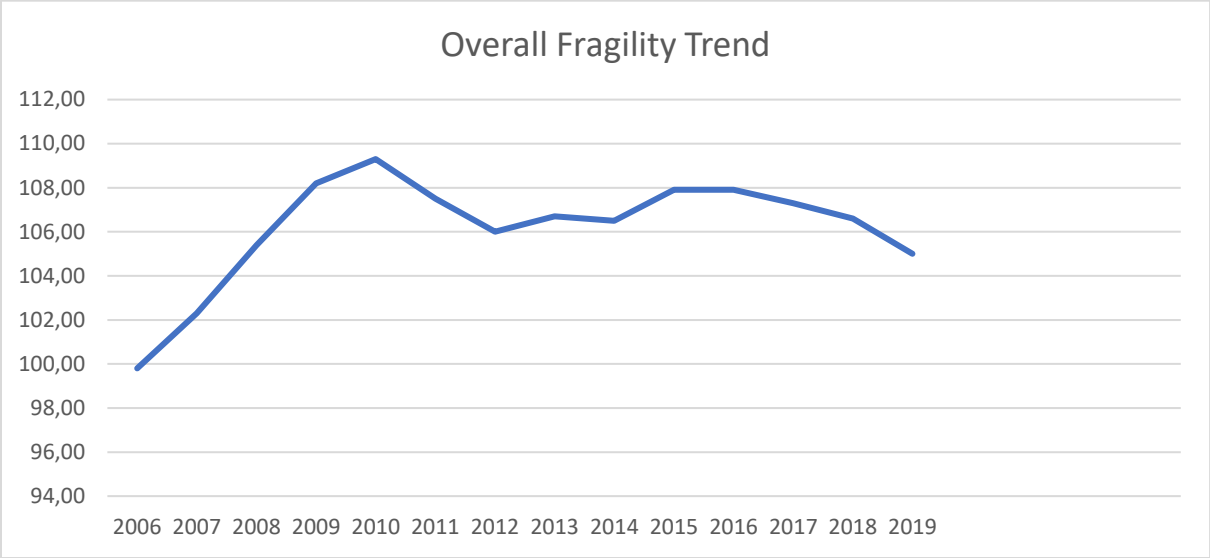
Despite the democratic process, bloody resurgence spiked in 2006. The number of suicide bombings increased from 27 in 2005 to 139 in 2006; also, remote bombings increased to 1,677 2012 (Livingston & O'Hanlon, 2012). Furthermore, in 2007, 19 South Korean missionaries were held hostages, with claims that a ransom was paid for their release (Achakzai, 2007). Insecurity was the center of the scene. Fierce combat went on with casualties on both sides, and leaving hundreds of civilians dead. On May 2007, the Taliban military commander, Mullah Dadullah, was killed in a joint operation. Dadullah was a leader of guerrilla forces organizing suicide bombing attacks (Wilner, 2010).

On March 2009, President Obama presented his "comprehensive new strategy for Afghanistan and Pakistan" with a "clear and focused goal: to disrupt, dismantle and defeat al Qaeda in Pakistan and Afghanistan, and to prevent their return to either country in the future." The main shift he explained is the emphasis on training and increasing the size of Afghan security forces, so that they can eventually take the lead in securing their country (Lee, 2009).

In 2010 plans of withdrawal were revealed. NATO member countries signed a declaration to hand over full responsibility for security to Afghan forces by the end of 2014, at a summit in Lisbon in November 2010. On June 2011, President Obama presented a plan to withdraw thirty-three thousand troops by the summer of 2012. On October 2011, Obama announced plans to withdraw all combat troops by 2014. On June 2013, NATO handed over control to the Afghan forces to take the lead in security responsibility nationwide. On May 2014: Obama announced a schedule for US forces withdrawal by the end of 2016. However, on August 2017, Trump signaled an open-ended military commitment to prevent the emergence of a "vacuum for terrorists" (CFR, 2019).

On October 2004 Afghanistan witnessed the country's first direct elections, since then the state fragility index showed high alert. The best result was in 2006 and the worst in 2010. Although there was some advancement in the following years, it still remained in the high alert category and never reached the value of 2006 (see figure 28 below)

Figure 28: **Overall Fragility Trend in Afghanistan (2006-present)**




Source: Raw data retrieved from Fragile State Index [30]

## Different Categories… Different Interests… Segregation

There are different ethnic groups in Afghanistan each have their linguistic, religion and ethnic identity. Originally these groups were isolated due to the topography of the country; however, communication between the groups increased by time and through the development of the country's communication and transportation system. All figures about these groups are estimates, as there has not been a census in Afghanistan for decades. Some consider the elite in Afghanistan are mainly from the Pashtuns. "The Pashtuns principally emerged as political elites who run the major institutions of the country including both military and bureaucracy" (Ghulam, 2015). However, others believe that the elite come from across factional and tribal lines. Hence, the elite disunity led to distrust and lack of communication, which created political crisis. (Sharan, 2012, p. 188.).

***Pashtuns***

Pashtuns are the dominant group in Afghanistan; it comprises around 40% of the population. Some even consider that Afghan "implies Pashtun identity inside the country" (Barfield, 2010: 24). They speak the Pashto language (Indo-European group of languages). The social structure

[30] https://fragilestatesindex.org/country-data/

of the Pashtuns is based on Pashtunwali, an amalgamation of tribal honor code and local interpretation of Sharia (MRG, 2019).

There are several Pashtuns tribes and subtribes; however, they are mainly composed of four main groups that trace their lineage back to the sons of the common ancestor, Qais Abur Rashid (575-661) (MRG, 2019). The "four maximal-descent groups" are: Durrani, Ghilzais, Gurghusht, and Karlanri.

***Tajiks***

Tajiks are considered non-tribal, Persian speaking (Dari language), Sunni Muslims (5% of them are Shia), they constitute the second largest ethnic group with an estimate of 30%. They form the majority of the urban residents in Kabul, Herat and Mazar, while the bulk live scattered in the mountains. The group has little internal cohesion and usually identify themselves in accordance with the region (village and family) they come from, rather than by their ethnicity (Barfield, 2010, p. 26).

Tajiks make up the majority of Afghanistan's elite, with considerable wealth, education and political power. While the leaders in Afghanistan had Pashtun origins, the Tajiks dominated the bureaucracy. Since the Tajiks were associated with the regime overthrown by the soviets, they received attacks during the war, which led to the formation of resistance groups (MRG, 2019). Tajiks mobilized themselves politically, where many are associated with the Jamiat-e Islami party. However, they have not been engaged in armed rebellion (MRG, 2019).

***Hazaras***

The Hazaras are believed to descend from Mongol armies, they are Persian speaking, and Shia Muslims, they constitute 15% of Afghanistan population. The majority of this community lives in Hazarajat in the central mountains of Afghanistan (Barfield, 2010, p. 26).

One of the key moments for the Hazara was the destruction of the Bamyan Buddha statues that were central to the Hazara community identity. Their destruction signified the Taliban's targeting of Hazara culture, heritage and rituals (MRG, 2019).

Hazaras faced systematic discrimination and violence, being a Shia group exposed them to long-term persecution. In 2007 clashes flared between Kuchis and Hazaras resulting in 4,000 Hazaras displaced, 65 Hazara villages empty, and dozens killed. Despite these mounting battles, no police reinforcement was provided. In 2008, 60,000 Hazara were displaced, while May 2010 alone witnessed 1,800 families displaced with 68 homes burnt and 28 schools closed. Although this is a Kuchis-Hazaras conflict, claims refer that this is instigated by the Taliban (Phillips,

2017). Socio-economic status and high poverty have created another level of discrimination through the class and ethnic divisions.

### *Uzbeks and Turkmen*

Uzbeks and Turkmen are Sunni Turkish speaking groups that descend from nomadic tribal confederations; they constitute 10% of the country's population. The Turkmen play an important economic role in Afghanistan due to their production of major export earners (Barfield, 2010).

Uzbeks were part of the Northern Alliance that fought against the Taliban. Hence, they gained some military and political influence following the Taliban regime. However, the Taliban was able to recruit members from the Uzbeks and the Turkmen. The Taliban succeeded in this recruitment due to minority's discontent with the protection and services provided by the central government. This discontent has also led Turkmen to form new militias (MRG, 2019).

### *Aimaqs*

Aimaq is originally a Turkish idiom meaning tribe, while Aimaqs are known to have Turkish descents mostly of Sunni Muslim origins (Barfield, 2010). The group was actively engaged in the battles against the Soviets. In contrast with the other communities, Aimaq women are accorded high status with high level of engagement and participation (MRG, 2019).

### *Kuchis*

Kuchi means nomad in the Persian language. Kuchis are social group as they are Pashtuns. 200,000 of these are displaced in Afghanistan while an equal number are refugees in Pakistan. Since the fall of the Taliban, Kuchis have been discriminated against on the basis of their perceived association with the Taliban (MRG, 2019). Kuchis conflicts and battles with Hazaras took place, leading to casualties, internal displacement and deteriorated economic status in both communities. Political participation was limited to a certain class of a small political elite (Foschini, 2013).

### *Other Minorities*

There are other minorities in Afghanistan that represent less than three percent of the population. These include: Nuristani and Pashai, Qizilbash, Baluch, Arabs, Pamiris, Jugis and Jats, Kirghitz, and non-Muslims.

## Insurgency

There are three main insurgencies operating in Afghanistan: Taliban, al-Qaeda, and Hizb-i-Islami who were able to recruit locals and internationals. These insurgencies were able to acquire local, regional and transnational support.

### *Taliban*

The Taliban was a cross-border movement led by Afghan Ghilzais Pashtuns. The group was motivated by radical interpretation of Sunni Islam, trained in Deobandi madrassas in Pakistan, with a goal of creating an Islamic state along Salafists lines. Deobandis believe that they are obliged to wage jihad to protect the Muslims in the country (Jones, 2008b, p. 27). Their strategy to accomplish this is to overthrow the Afghan government.

By 2005, Taliban was growing in rural areas due to the vacuum resulting from lack of government capacity. Many mujahedeen commanders, especially those from Hizb-i-Islami and Harakat-i-Inqilab-i-Islami–Islamic Unity Movement, were later absorbed by the Taliban (Johnson & Mason, 2007).

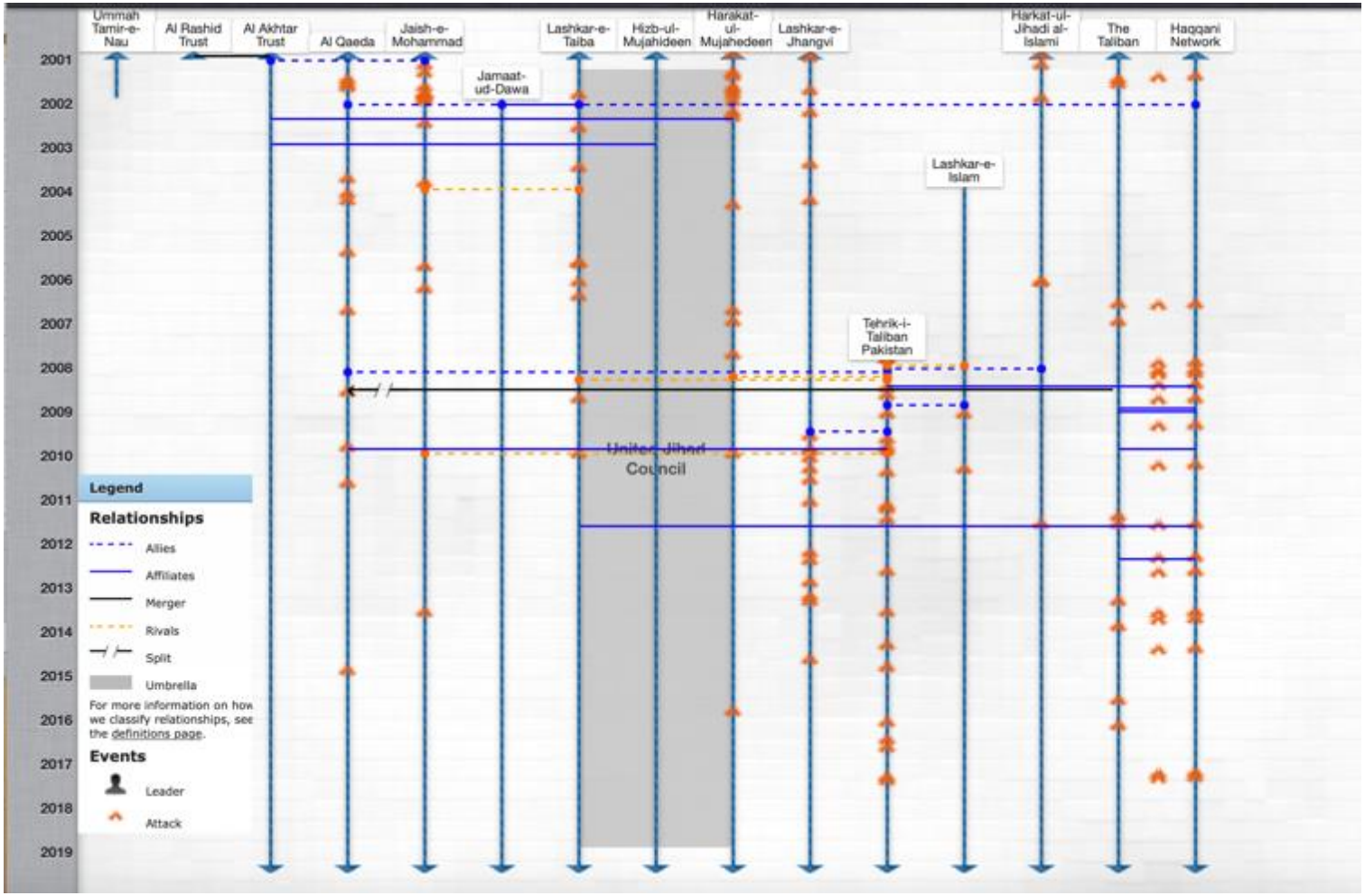
Taliban improved their combat skills, they received training in different aspects including "disassembling rockets and rocket-propelled grenade rounds, removing the explosives ans propellants, and repacking them with high-velocity shaped charges" (Jones, 2008b: p22). They adopted suicide bombing tactics. The number of suicide attacks increased from 1 in 2002, 2 in 2003, 6 in 2004, 21 in 2005, 139 in 2006, and 140 in 2007 (Jones, 2008b).

According to the BBC (2018) Taliban's annual income amounted to $400m, though it has increased to $1.5bn. The main income is drug business, where the estimated annual export of opium reaches $1,5-$3 bn (Azami, 2018). Taliban also received foreign funding from different sources including Pakistan, Iran, and Russia along with the Gulf countries including the United Arab Emirates, Saud Arabia and Qatar (Azami, 2018; Pankowski).

### *Hezb-i-Islami*

Hezb-i-Islami traces its ideology and structure to the Muslim Youth Organization that was founded in 1969 to oppose the Marxists and Maoists, aiming to establish political Islam in an Islamic Caliphate (Rahim, 2018). The group was founded by Gulbuddin Hekmatyar and was one of the "two most prominent groups fighting the Soviet-backed regime," and received political and financial support from the US and the Gulf countries (Rahim, 2018). The group was strongly active until 2016 (Jones, 2008a).

Figure 29: **Network of Insurgents in Afghanistan and Pakistan (2001-2019)**




Source: Stanford University (2019)[31]

[31] Available at: http://web.stanford.edu/group/mappingmilitants/cgi-bin/maps/view/pakistan_un, accessed January 18, 2020.

The group has a hierarchal structure, and it is divided into four branches: logistics support, financial and political support, guerrillas, and commanders. Financial and political support was primarily from tribal populations in Afghanistan and Pakistan. This included intelligence campaigns and counterintelligence operations along with logistical and recruitment services (Jones, 2008a).

Hezb i-Islami had been active since the collapse of Najibullah communist regime and maintained its effectiveness and structure. However, in 2016 a conclusion of the resistance came through a peace agreement with the Ghani administration (Rahim, 2018).

***Haqqani Network***

The Haqqani network dates back to the mid-1970s, when Haqqani and his followers traveled to Pakistan to receive military training. He established the group in North Wazirtistan's Miram Shah. Haqqani was a member of the Hizb-i-Islami and also a supporter of al-Qaeda (Dressler, 2010).The network is well-funded by various resources. Haqqani and his sons travelled frequently to the Gulf countries to solicit funds, and they established a huge network with individuals and organizations (Dressler, 2010; Romaniuk & Webb, 2015). Haqqani also "maintained a relationship with the ISI [Pakistan's Directorate for Inter-Service Intelligence], American, and Saudi intelligence organizations (Dressler, 2010:8). The group was also able to recruit foreign fighters who played a significant role in the network. Foreign fighters included (but are not limited to): Arabs, Pakistanis, Uzbeks, Chechens, and Turks (Dressler, 2010). The network also sought illicit ways of generating revenue by expanding into drug trade (Weinbaum & Babbar, 2016).

According to Weinbaum and Babbar (2016) Haqqani Network (H.N.) is *"thought to be the strongest and most disciplined force in the Afghan insurgency. Post-9/11, H.N. has executed some of the most carefully planned attacks on Afghan soil, undertaken numerous high-profile kidnappings, and been involved in a wide array of criminal activities"* Haqqani also conducted several suicide bombing attacks in Kabul and throughout Afghanistan targeting both the US troops and the Afghan forces (Dressler, 2010).

***Al-Qaeda***

Al-Qaeda is a militant Sunni Islamist multi-national organization that was found in 1988 by Osama bin Laden. Its operational leadership is based on the principle of centralized decision making and decentralized operations. The relationship between al-Qaeda and Taliban started in 1996, when the Taliban accommodated al-Qaeda under its protection, where they became allies.

Al-Qaeda's strategy developed through time, and it was able to adapt to regional changes. In 2007, it expanded its operation to Afghanistan and Pakistan. Al-Qaeda was able to unite efforts of various militias in the region. Additionally, "al-Qa`ida has managed to maintain and restore a presence in Afghanistan while, at the same time, shifting many senior operatives to the Arab world" (Stenersen, 2016: 21).

Several incidents affected the effectiveness of al-Qaeda. Such incidents included the killing of bin Laden in 2011 along with the killing or arrest of senior al-Qaeda members in Pakistan. Another important factor is the disruption of al-Qaeda communication and propaganda as well as weakening its finances, which curtailed its recruitment and its attacks. However, this has not led to the defeat of al-Qaeda (McNally & Weinbaum, 2016).

***Islamic Movement of Uzbekistan (IMU)/ Jundullah***

This is an Uzbek insurgent network that adheres to a Salafist-Jihadist ideology. It was allied with the Taliban, but switched its allegiance to the Islamic State in 2015, after the death of Mullah Omar. This brought about a conflict with the Taliban. A northern group separated from IMU in 2009 forming Jundullah group (EASO, 2019).

***Islamic State Khorasan Province (ISKP)***

This is the Islamic State branch in Afghanistan that dates back to 2014. "The Nangarhar group envisages global expansion of the caliphate and designates the region of Afghanistan, Pakistan, Iran and the Central Asian republics as the Wilayat Khorasan" (EASO, 2019:37).

***Local tribes***

Tribes in Afghanistan and Pakistan associated themselves with insurgent groups and provided them with support. These tribes worked as public relations and fundraiser directorates for the for the insurgency groups.

> *Several individuals in the Ahmedzai Wazir tribe based in Wana, Pakistan, helped raise funds and recruited militants to fight in Afghanistan. There was also evidence that organizations such as Jamaat-e-Islami and Wahhabi groups such as Lashkar-e-Taiba cooperated with insurgent groups* (Jones, 2008a*: 46)*

## Counterinsurgency

Counterinsurgency went through different phases and changes since it started in 2001; changes in the strategy, in the players and in the coordination between the players. The operations started with a US-led coalition in 2001, Operation Enduring Freedom (OEF). Later in the same year the Security Council authorized ISAF to operate in and around Kabul. ISAF changed its strategy from counterterrorism (2001-2002) to peacebuilding with focus on reconstruction and stabilization (2003-2008) and finally to counterinsurgency (2009-2012). At the same time OEF also continued to be active in Afghanistan. Part of OEF (building up the Afghan army) was later brought under the responsibility of ISAF in 2009. In March 2002, the Security Council authorized the creation of UNAMA to lead international civilian activities and on the political process.

UNAMA is a political mission that was established by the UN security resolution at the request of the Government of the Islamic Republic of Afghanistan. Its mandate is revised annually. UNAMA has been involved in peacemaking through facilitating the Bonn process with efforts in conflict resolution and outreach. The reconciliation role was challenged by the lack of will shown by NATO, US and the Afghani Government. "On the one hand, UNAMA is mandated to strengthen its field presence and conduct political outreach, but it is restricted to engaging in reconciliation issues on its own" (Larsen, 2010). UNAMA also played a peacebuilding role. It supported the humanitarian reconstruction provided by the more than 20 UN organizations, support in drafting the constitution, establishing various commissions, and holding elections on the different levels (Larsen, 2010).

OEF intervention in Afghanistan is contested. Some scholars claim that it is legal and that it was called in reference to the right of self-defense according to Article 51 of the UN Charter (Dinstein, 2005:237). Other scholars believe that this act justifies unilateral attacks and violation of national sovereignty of other states, it is considered an occupation or military offensive (Williams, 2011). Legality of OEF is one issue; however, another critique is the violation of human rights and international law throughout the operations.

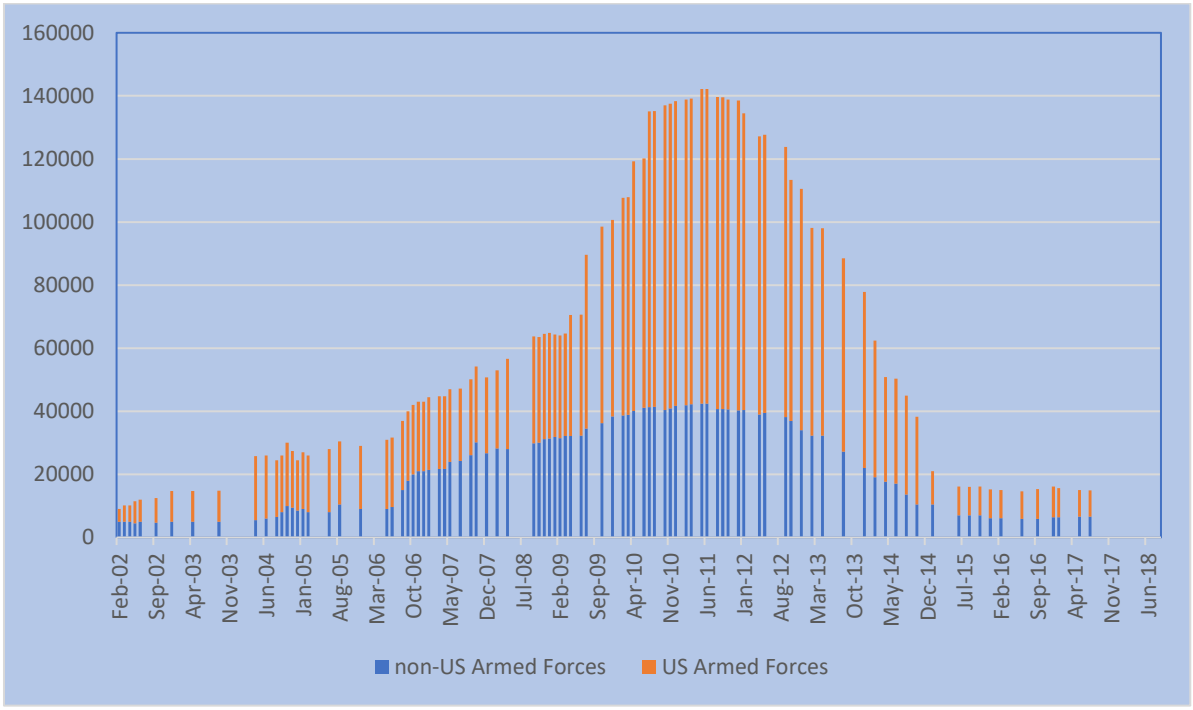
> *"U.S. forces have used excessive or indiscriminate force when conducting arrests in residential areas in Afghanistan… U.S. military forces have repeatedly used deadly force from helicopter gunships and small and heavy arms fire, including undirected suppressing fire, during what are essentially law-enforcement operations to arrest persons in uncontested locales. The use*

> *of these tactics has resulted in avoidable civilian deaths and injuries, and in individual cases may amount to violations of international humanitarian law… Afghan soldiers deployed alongside U.S. forces have beaten and otherwise mistreated people during arrest operations and looted homes or seized the land of those being detained." (HRW, 2004:2)*

ISAF's establishment is based on Security Council resolution from Chapter VII of the UN Charter to support the Afghan government to restore and maintain security. The structure of ISAF changed between 2002 and 2005. ISAF is commanded in rotation by the major participating powers. It started under UK command, and six months Turkey, after which Germany and then the Netherlands were scheduled to take over. However, before assuming the command a formal request was sent to NATO for support of command and control while maintaining the ISAF operations (Shroeder, 2014). Since then the NATO expanded its operations through the Provincial Reconstruction Teams PRTs that is based on reconstruction and development. This evolved to a network of 13 teams by 2004, which became regional hubs for reconstruction activities (Serena et.al. 2014).

NATO expanded in the relatively stable provinces including the north in 2003-2004 and the west in 2005. The south and the east remained with the US-led campaign, that expanded its operations and adopted counterinsurgency measures. In 2006 ISAF expanded to the south and east and then to all provinces. ISAF has grown progressively through time. It started with 5,000 deployed in 2002 to reach the peak in 2001 (see figure 30 below). Despite the perspective that things were stabilizing; in reality, they were not. In 2006 the Taliban expanded their territory of operations by more than 400%, the number of direct fire attacks increased from 1,500 in 2005 to 4,500 in 2006, attacks on the coalition more than tripled, suicide bombings rose with more than sixty attacks in 2005, and casualties among coalition (see figure 31 below) and foreign civilians mounted (Shroeder, 2014). This led to the reinforcement of the OEF forces. This was accompanied by a marked expansion of the insurgency to reach its full momentum with popularity of other militia groups; namely: Haqqani network and Hezb-e-Islami.

Figure 30: **International Troops Strength in Afghanistan (2001-2017)**



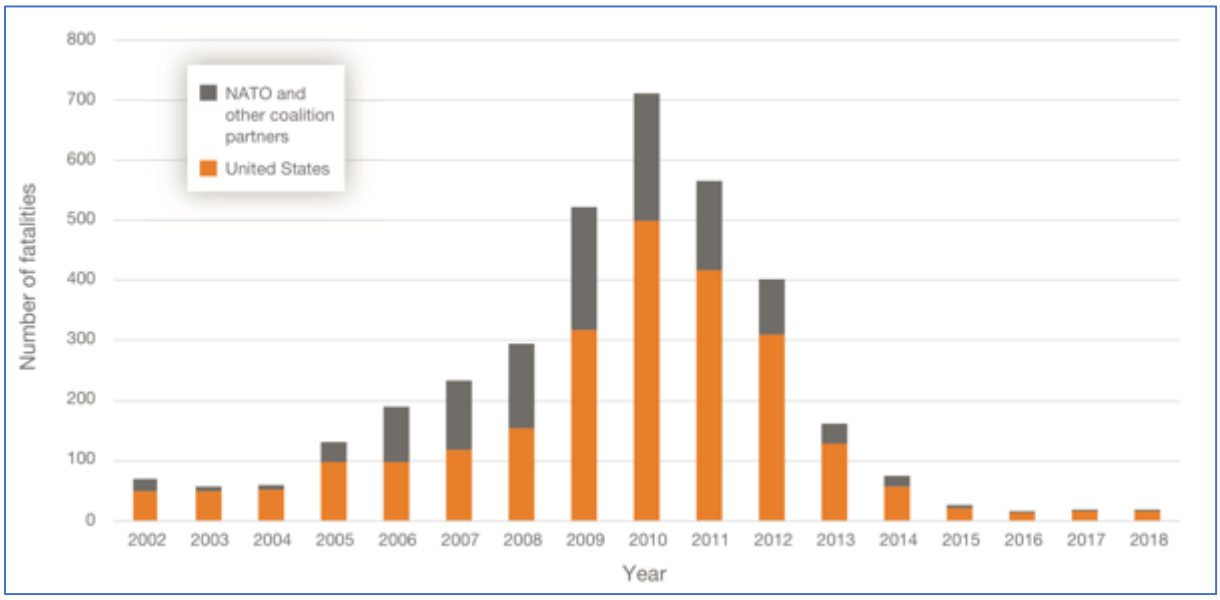

Source: Raw data retrieved from Brookings Index Reports[32]

Counterinsurgency was updated and codified in 2006 in *Field Manual 3-24*, jointly published by the U.S. Army and the US Marine Corps. The strategy was based on an alteration from an enemy-centric focus to a population-centric focus.

In October 2008, ISAF issued a classified Joint Campaign Plan (JCP). The JCP specified key objectives and approaches. It stated that the primary goal is the transfer of lead responsibility to the Afghans including planning and conducting operations.

[32] Raw data of years 2001-2005 comes from Brookings index report of 2005 (O'Hanlon & Albuquerque, 2005); and for years 2006-2017 from Brookings report of September 2017 (Livingston & O'Hanlon, 2017).

Figure 31: **US and Partner Troops Fatalities in Afghanistan 2002-2018**




Source: Dobbins, et.al. (2019)

In 2014, full responsibility for Afghanistan was handed over to the Afghan government and the ISAF mission was terminated. However, forces from the different nations are still operating in Afghanistan.

Throughout the years of intervention, the relationship between the OEF, ISAF and UNAMA changed resulting from alteration of legal foundation and for coordination efforts especially through the development of the PRTs that required civilian military cooperation (Nielsen, Syed, & Vestenskov, 2015).

PRTs evolved to be ISAF's main force element. However, PRTs received a lot of criticism due to the process of delivery. There were no systems in place, and no systems for information exchange between UN offices and PRTs. There was lack of communication that placed lives of minority communities and international personnel at risk (Harsch, 2015).

> *"There is a lack of clarity regarding the role of PRTs. This stems from: an absence of a clearly defined set of operating principles for the PRTs; non-adherence on the part of PRTs to the existing, ambiguous operating guidelines; actual roles that differ from stated roles; and the differing ways in which the PRTs have been implemented… there does not appear to be agreement within*

*and between the military forces implementing the PRTs on how these roles are to be operationalised, the degree to which PRTs should engage in other activities such as intelligence gathering, or the degree to which PRTs should actively engage in relief activities" (Save the Children, 2004, p. 19).*

Coordination between the different players is not sufficient, and, if available, it is not effective. In 2008, UN and NATO signed a joint declaration on headquarters cooperation, whereby the UN formally recognized NATO as a partner in crisis management. This cooperation did not last long. The UN was reluctant to engage in cooperation, as visibility of such cooperation affects its legitimacy. Additionally, in 2003 ISAF did not provide support for UN personnel when five UN staff were killed (Harsch, 2015).

Coordination amongst the different nations within the same body was also weak despite the shared vision and strategy.

*"It was problematic that the Danish politicians did not understand that the mission was not a Danish mission but a multinational mission. They tried to steer the Danish efforts without really coordinating with our counterparts. The Helmand Plan was full of dates and tasks ...but without coordination with the British Task Force or the Afghan Security Forces, we, the battle group, ran out of options." (Nielsen, Syed, & Vestenskov, 2015, p. 68).*

Problematic cooperation also existed between UNAMA and NGOs. This forced ISAF to rely on national civilian ministries. Thus national foreign ministries managed the stabilization and state-building efforts including the German Technical Cooperation GIZ and the United States Agency for International Development USAID (Shroeder, 2014).
Financial aid was a problematic issue throughout the intervention. Though the financial aid provided was limited, large portions of the disbursed amount never served the desired objective of state building. It was siphoned off by corrupt government officials, which empowered other players and in some cases was channeled to insurgent groups (Shroeder, 2014).

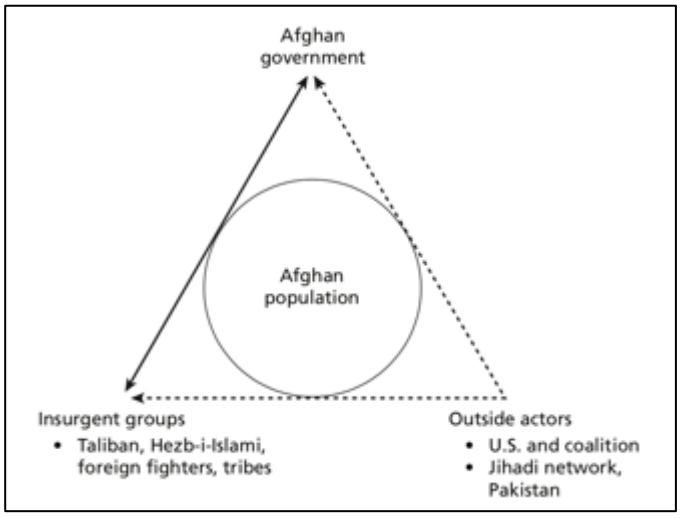
*"This is the chaos that is foreign aid in Afghanistan, a place where every mistake ever made in every underdeveloped economy is now being repeated. This is a country in which all the best people are being hired away from the national*

*government by the alphabet soup of aid agencies on the ground; in which the same alphabet soup of aid agencies is driving up real-estate and food prices; in which millions of dollars are squandered on dubious contractors, both local and foreign; in which the minister for rural development says he doesn't know what all the NATO reconstruction teams in rural districts do; in which the top U.N. official, given a mandate to coordinate the donors, says the donors don't respond to his attempts to coordinate them" (AppleBaum, 2008, p. 2)*

## Support Provided for the Two Poles

Violence in Afghanistan has been increasing through time. Since 2011 different parties have been engaged in the conflict and the complexity of the conflict is increasing. Counterinsurgency operations were activated and support to the different parties were provided either internally or externally and either physically or financially. Different lines of communications were initiated either as rivals or supporters. Figure (32) below illustrates the triangular framework of relationship between the different players on the ground.

Figure 32: **Framework of Counterinsurgency in Afghanistan**

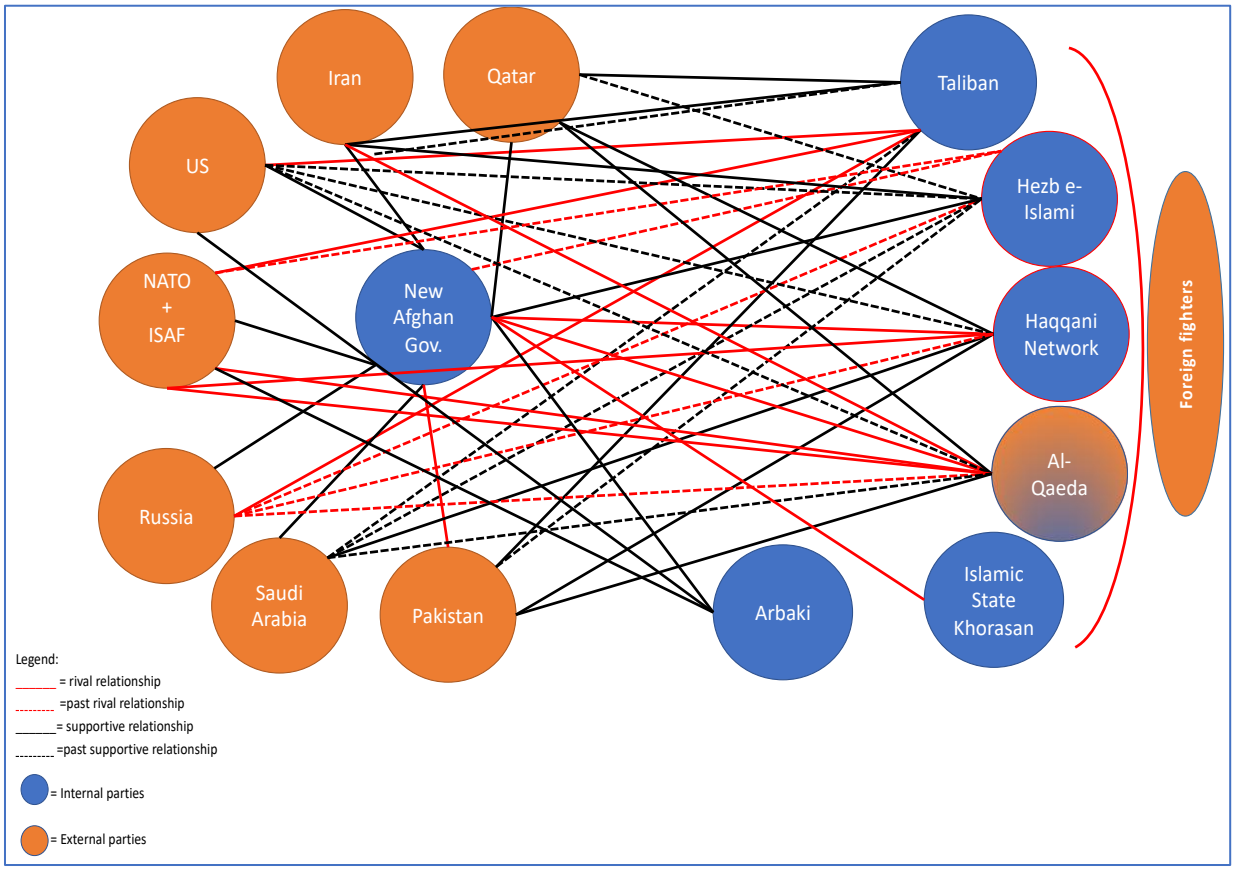



Source: Jones, 2008a

The players are seeking to achieve their formally announced or hidden agendas, which are in most cases contradictory to the other player's agendas causing more chaos and complexities. Figure (33) below illustrates the network, spotlighting the different players that are identified in the literature. There are the pro-government forces that include the Afghan National Security

Forces, the International Military Forces, and the pro-government militias. The pro-government militias are the "arbaki" or tribal armies that were utilized by the international military forces for conducting searches, night raids or executions; they were responsible for abuses and civilian casualties (EASO, 2019). The anti-government elements include Taliban, Haqqani network, Al-Qaeda, Islamic Movement of Uzbekistan (Jundullah), Islamic State Khorasan Province among others.

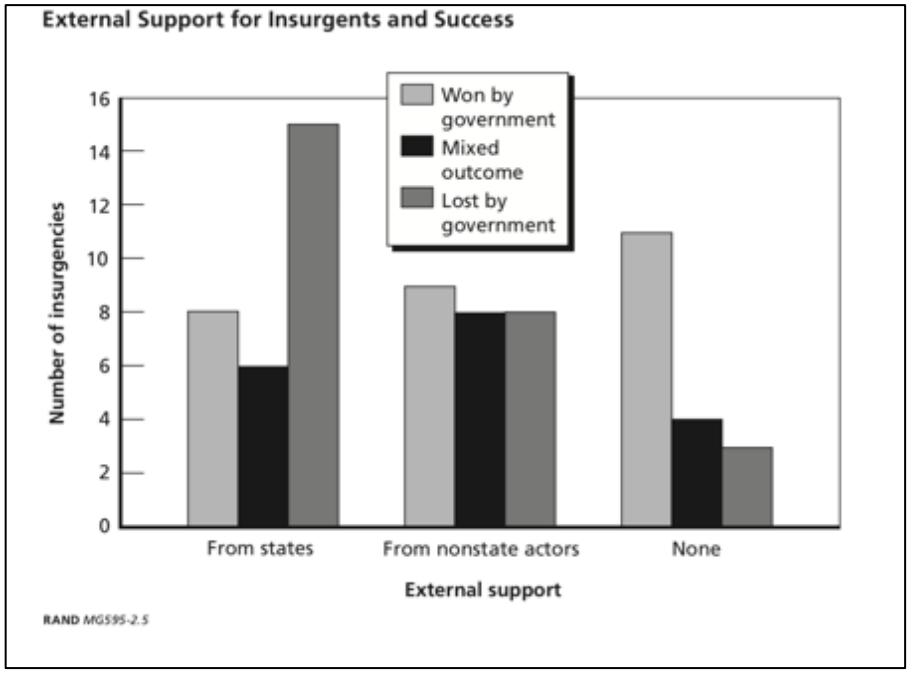
Figure 33: **Network of Relationships between Internal and External players in Afghanistan**




Source: own design

Support of insurgencies from external players affects the probability to succeed in their attacks. According to Jones (2008a) insurgencies that received support from external states won more than 50 percent of the time, those with support from non-state actors and diaspora groups won just over 30 percent of the time, and those with no external support won only 17 percent of the time (see figure 34 below).

Figure 34: **External Support for Insurgents and Success**




Source: Jones, 2008a

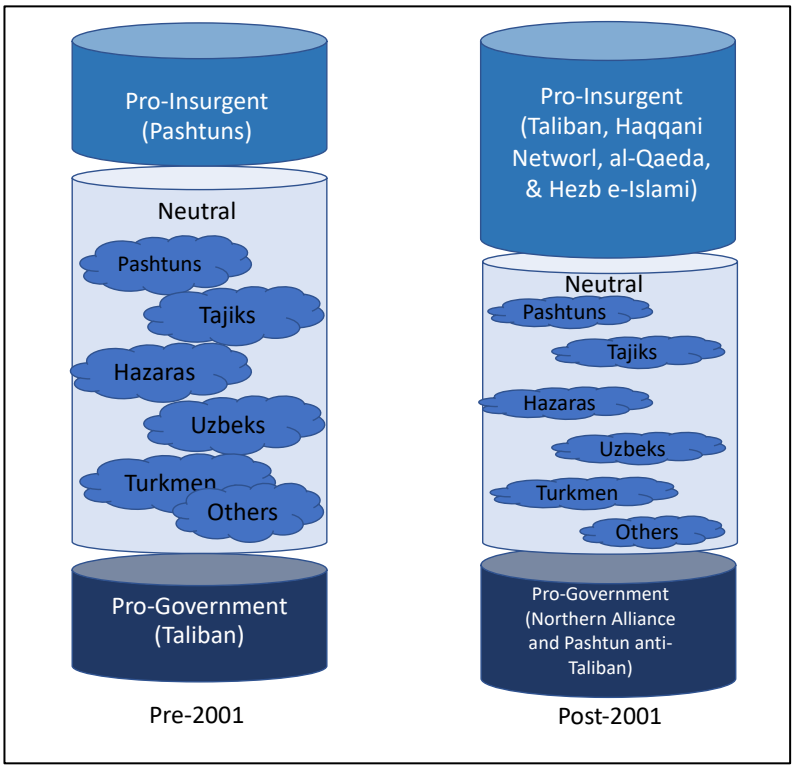
## Vicious Cycle

The preconditions for insurgency in Afghanistan was structural, a fruitful environment was created ensuring an escalating growth of insurgency. Following the overthrow of Taliban and establishment of the new government, this government was weak and could not provide the essential basic services or even establish law and order that has led to loss of confidence in the state's ability to enforce systems, law and order. Weakening the government as such leads to the population supporting the insurgency rather than the government, thus perceiving the insurgents as human security providers due to the lack of interest and/or will on the part of the government. The more vulnerable the community is, the more likely it is that the insurgency will grow and establish an alternative system and alterative government and become an alternative service provider and human security provider.

The diverse ethnic breakdown in Afghanistan created competing ethnicities for power; there was competition even within the Northern Alliance. There was rivalry between the Pashtuns and the Tajiks: the former felt they were being left out, due to the Tajiks controlling many of the ministries. It is a fragmented society. However, the Afghan government was able to relatively balance representation of the different ethnicities. Nevertheless, the external support and the historic fragmentation were leading to more societal destruction.

Community structure has changed after changing the regime in 2001, although tribalism has always been a key in the Afghani community. The government-insurgent structure has been reversed after the change; those who formed the government became insurgents and vice-versa. Figure (35) illustrates the difference in the structure before and after 2001.

Figure 35: **Community Structure and Formation of Insurgency pre and post 2001**




Source: own design

The centrifugal force affecting the individuals and groups in Afghanistan could be calculated according to the centrifugal force formula:

$$F_c = \frac{(S \times W)v^2}{r} \qquad (1)$$

where

$F_c$ = centrifugal force (it is the force that people feel disturbs all stability and their human security)

$v$ = violence level during the conflict; originally this is the velocity. Since 2001 the level of violence escalated to a high level.

$s$ = support provided to the poles (internal and external), not only did the support increase but also it was complex to the extent that it was contradictory; where formally announced support was different from the real agendas. The support came from governments and individuals (see figure 7)

$w$ = the willingness to control the government, the analysis of the insurgents showed individual and group interests to control the government.

$r$ = is the ratio of those engaged in the conflict to the total population; the number of those engaged in the conflict increased by time not only between the insurgents and the government but also amongst the insurgent groups who were fighting for tribal survival and insurgents' survival.

With an increasing violence level ($v$), support provided by the poles ($s$), willingness to control the government ($w$), and number of those engaged in the conflict to the total population; the centrifugal force ($F_c$) increased to an alarming level. Thus, affecting the center of mass of the system, forming multiple centers of mass for the different communities; and thus, decreasing the common interest and the unity of the communities.

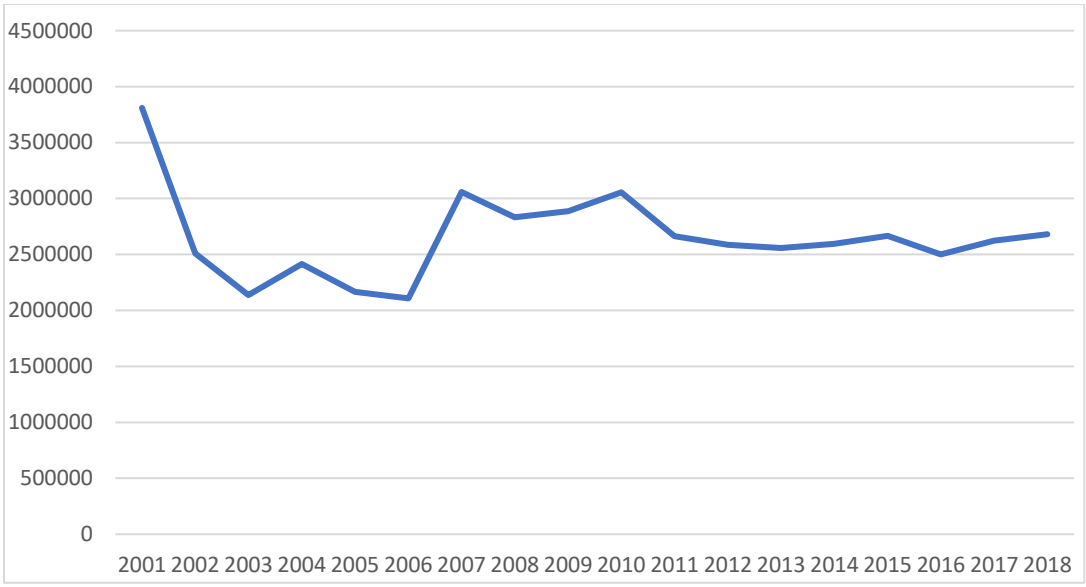
## Impact of the Vicious Cycle

According to the vicious cycle model described in chapter four, the support of insurgency and counterinsurgency increases the centrifugal force, which drives unrestrained particles to leave their orbit. This is evident in the high number of refugees and IDPs amongst the different parts of the Afghan community.

In 2001, the majority of those fleeing Afghanistan sought refuge in rural areas causing more poverty and aggravation of food security. This was due to the fact that all Afghanistan's neighboring countries pushed back new influxes of refugees. Pakistan relaxed its borders control allowing Afghans to enter into rural areas that are not secure especially for Hazaras (Marsden, 2002). This remained the same until 2019, since the beginning of the year 1,000 Afghan civilians are displaced by the conflict (crisis group, 2019).

According to the UNHCR, there are around 2.5 million registered refugees from Afghanistan. They comprise the largest protracted refugee population in Asia, and the second largest refugee population in the world (UNHCR, 2019). In the second quarter of 2019, numbers of Afghan asylum seekers were 2,555 applications in France, 2,240 in Germany and 2,740 in Greece (EC, 2019). The number of asylum seekers in Europe during the last 24 months amounted to 44,340 (EC, 2019). However, in recent years Norway, the Netherlands, Sweden, the UK, Germany, Austria, Finland, and Turkey have forcibly returned tens of thousands in clear breach to the non-refoulement principle (AI, 2019). Pakistan currently hosts around 1.5 million registered Afghan refugees and another one million unregistered Afghans, while there are 1.5 to two million "undocumented" Afghan refugees in Iran (AI, 2019). Figure (36) below illustrates the refugee population since 2001.

Figure 36: **Refugee population 2001-2018**




Source: Raw Data retrieved from World Bank statistics (2018)[33]

According to the vicious cycle model, the centrifugal force leads to more fragmentation of the society, which in turn create different centers of mass and thus different centers of gravity, which creates a massive deterioration of human security resulting from competing positions of each. The following is a quick summary of the three human insecurity dimensions (community,

33 https://data.worldbank.org/indicator/SM.POP.REFG.OR?contextual=default&end=2018&locations=AF&start=2001

political, and personal insecurity), with some insight into the other four dimensions (economic, food, health, and environment):

***Community Security***

Interethnic conflict has been prevalent for more than a century. The Post-Taliban period witnessed a revival of the Hazaras' social status, where they were an oppressed minority before then. "Ethnicity has become increasingly salient in Afghan politics and society during the years of war" (Simonsen, 2004). Although the constitution recognized the different ethnicities, religions and sects; their ties link Afghans with ethnic conflicts in neighboring countries. The ethnicization during the Bonn agreement "prioritized the resolution of the ethicized Afghan conflict" whereas Afghan people needed "good governance, basic services and transitional justice" (Siddique, 2012, p. 6). Although interethnic conflict is not the main factor underpinning the dispute, the political elite has used this to gain more power. Also, affiliation to certain ethnicities has driven the people towards specific insurgents.

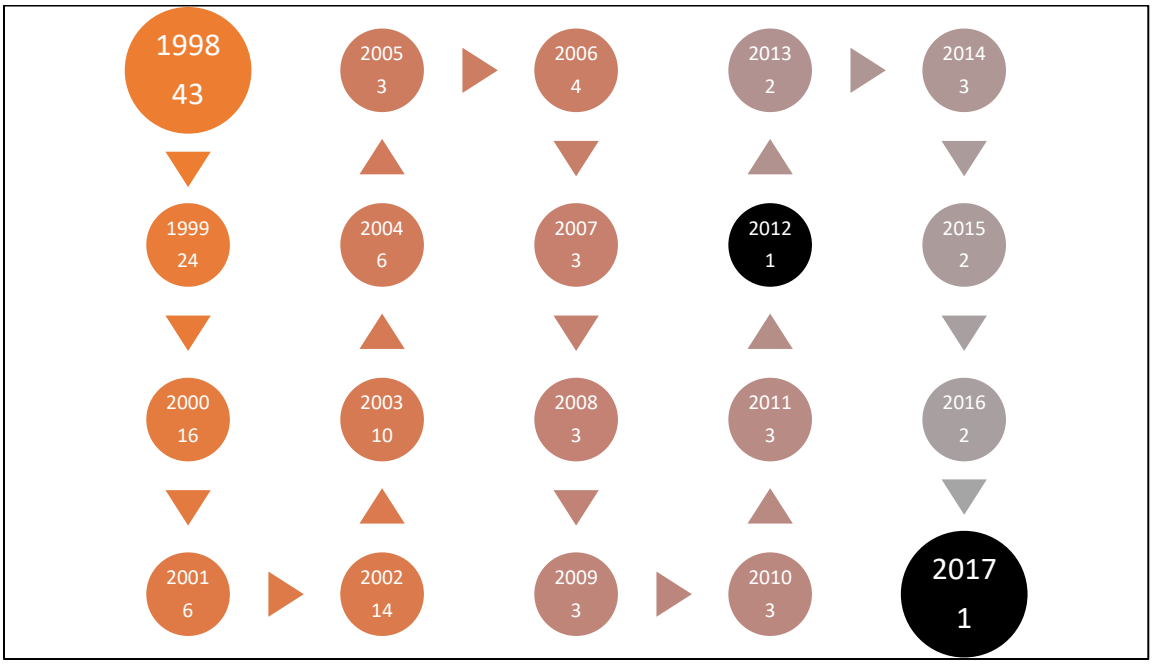
> *"Within the government, however, Civil War divisions arose and materialized into modern day political groups. Ahmad Shah Massoud's and Burhanuddin Rabbani's Northern Alliance became today's Jamiat-e- Islami, a primarily Tajik organization. Uzbeks organized under Rashid Dostum's Junbesh-e-Milli. Abdul Ali Mazari's followers were now under the Hazara Hezb-e-Wahdat. And Pashtuns followed Gulbuddin Hekmatyar's Hezb-e-Islami." (Frishta, 2015, p.10)*

According to the Institute for Economics and Peace Afghanistan is currently the least peaceful country in the world: the peace Index of 2019 is 3.574 ranking 163 amongst the surveyed 163 countries. The economic cost of violence in 2018 amounted to 47 per cent of GDP (IEP, 2019). In 2017, Afghanistan ranked the first in the number of deaths from terrorism (see figure 37 below).

> *"While the Taliban reduced their use of terrorist tactics in 2016, especially against civilians, the group stepped up their conventional armed conflict with the government. The Taliban was responsible for nearly 18,000 battle-related deaths in 2016, which are nearly 700 more than in 2015. This is the most*

*since the war commenced in 2001. Consequently, the group expanded its direct territorial control and as of April 2017 controlled at least 11 per cent of the country and contested at least 29 per cent of Afghanistan's 398 districts". (IEP, 2017, p.3)*

Figure 37: **Rank of Number of deaths from Terrorism in Afghanistan 1998-2017**

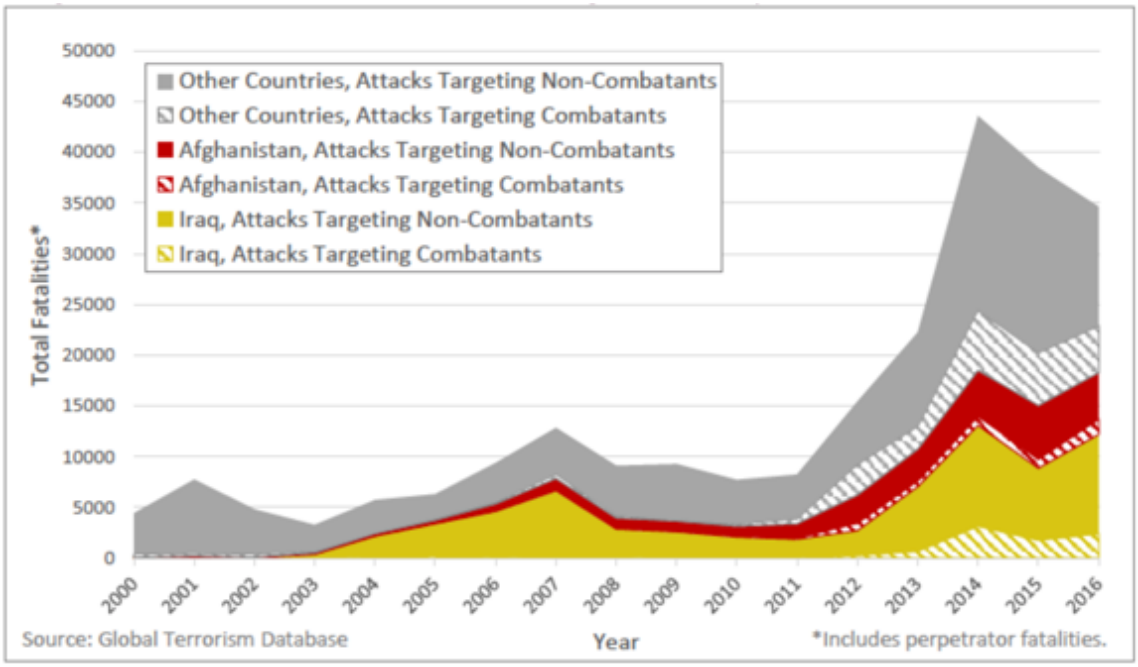



Source: Raw data retrieved from (IEP, 2018)

Afghanistan ranked number one in the number of fatalities, replacing Iraq that ranked number one for a couple of years. Figure (38) below illustrates the total number of fatalities targeting combatants and non-combatants in Afghanistan compared to Iraq and the rest of the world. In general, the safety and security domain index according to the Institute for Economics and Peace 4.198 ranking is the worst amongst the 163 countries surveyed in 2019.

These attacks are ongoing; the latest of which are. In April 2021 75 pro-government forces and seven civilians were killed in Afghanistan. The deadliest attack took place in Wardak Province, where the Taliban engaged with Afghan security forces during a military operation in Jalrez district, while the Afghans were trying to open a highway in the area.

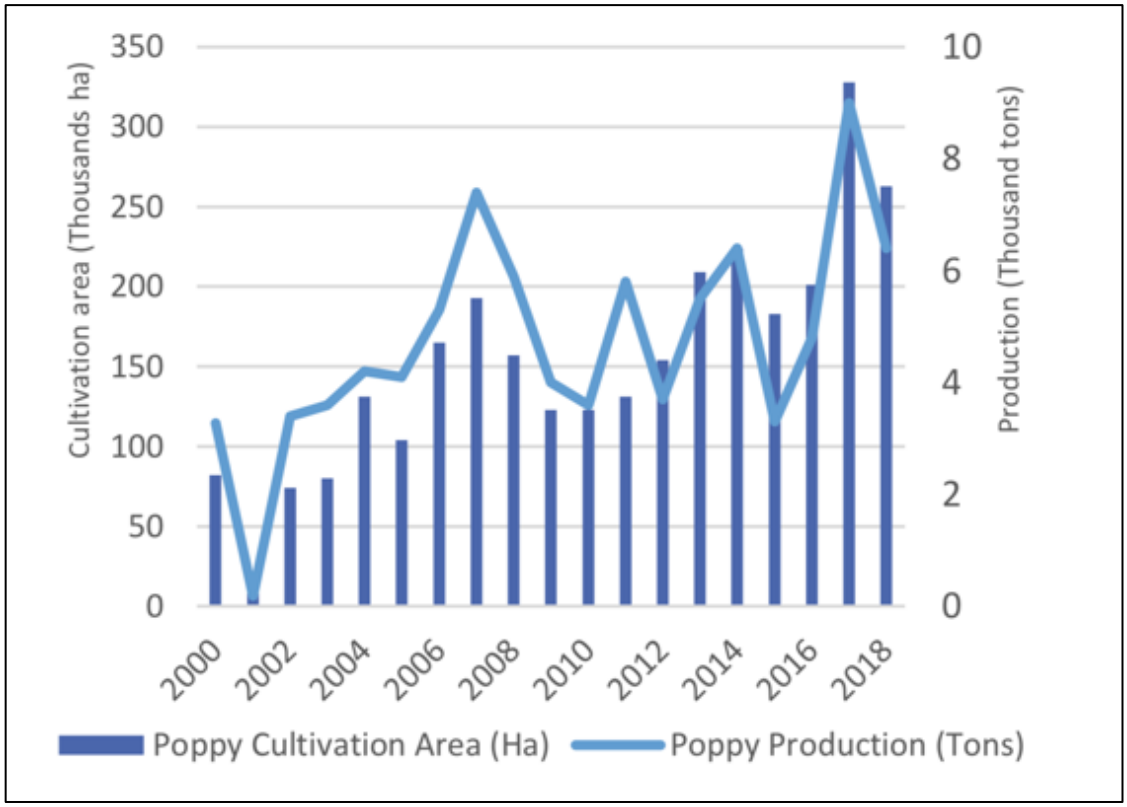
Figure 38: **Total Fatalities in Terrorists Attacks 2000-2016**




Source: Cordesman, 2017

Level of crime and its risks are alarming. It ranges from transnational organized crime committed by local, regional and international individuals and organizations and organized criminal syndicates, to lower-level street crimes including theft and assaults" (OSAC, 2019, p.1). One of the major acute crimes is the drug trade that has been financing insurgents especially the Taliban. Figure (39) below illustrates the poppy production in Afghanistan starting from 2000 until 2018.

Figure 39: **Poppy Production (cultivation Area and Production)**




Source: World Bank, 2019

***Political Security***

Human rights violations have been prevalent in Afghanistan, including war crimes, terror attacks, and sexual abuse driving a huge movement of IDPs and refugees in the region and all over the world.

According to Human Rights Watch, 2018 witnessed "the highest level of torture of conflict-related detainees in police custody since 2010" (HRW, 2018, p.3). Although the Afghan Government ratified the UN protocol to the convention against torture in 2018, it failed to hold police accountable for systematic torture.

Additionally, after all those years of political reform, Afghanistan failed to improve the rule of law index with all its components (especially fundamental rights, order and security, and regulatory enforcement. Table (4) below illustrates the rule of law index since 2014[34]. The order and security declined from 0.42 in 2014, when it ranked the 100$^{th}$ amongst the surveyed countries to 0.30 in 2019, when it ranked 126$^{th}$.

[34] No data available prior to 2014

Table 5: **Rule of Law Index (Rate and Rank) 2014-2019**

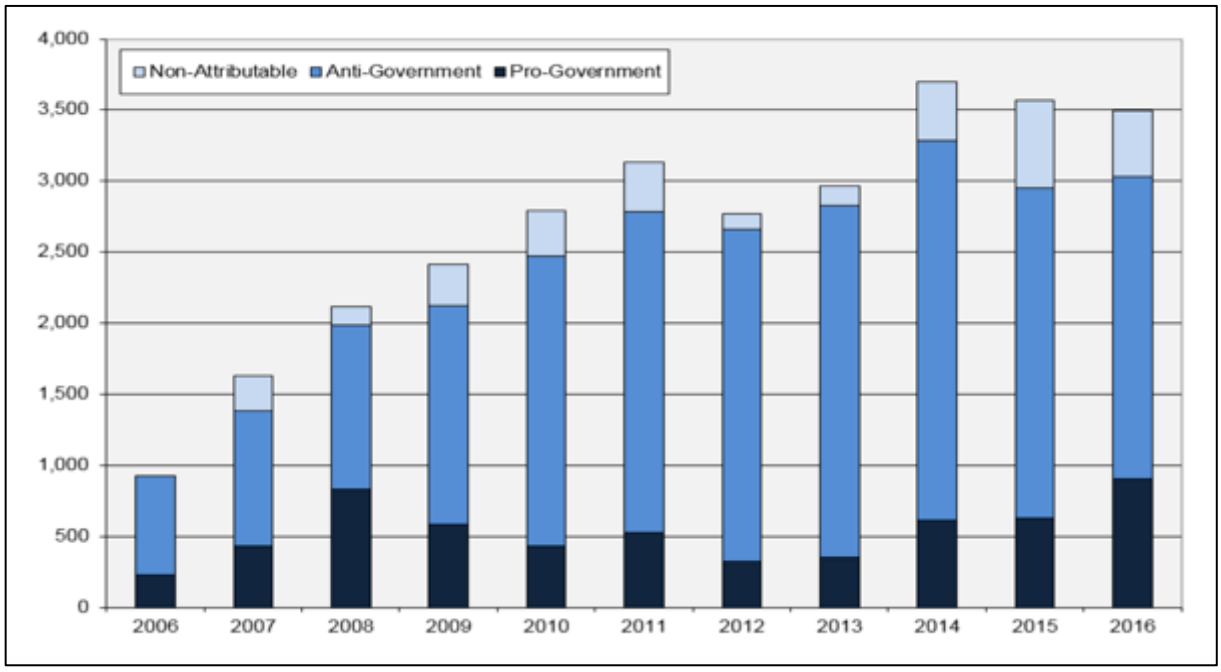
| | 2019 Rate(rank) | 2017/2018 Rate(rank) | 2016 Rate(rank) | 2015 Rate(rank) | 2014 Rate(rank) |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| **Constraints on Government powers** | 0.43(98) | 0.43(95) | 0.43(97) | 0.44(82) | 0.43(78) |
| **Absence of corruption** | 0.28(119) | 0.27(109) | 0.23(113) | 0.23(102) | 0.24(99) |
| **Open government** | 0.37(107) | 0.36(103) | 0.40(99) | 0.43(89) | 0.34(89) |
| **Fundamental Rights** | 0.40(108) | 0.39(102) | 0.40(100) | 0.38(95) | 0.39(91) |
| **Order & Security** | 0.30(126) | 0.32(112) | 0.34(112) | 0.42(100) | 0.42(100) |
| **Regulatory Enforcement** | 0.35(122) | 0.34(109) | 0.36(106) | 0.36(97) | 0.33(97) |
| **Civil Justice** | 0.38(119) | 0.38(104) | 0.34(110) | 0.32(101) | 0.27(99) |
| **Criminal Justice** | 0.28(119) | 0.28(108) | 0.28(109) | 0.24(100) | 0.28(96) |
| **Rule of Law Index** | 0.35(123) | 0.34(111) | 0.35(111) | 0.35(101) | 0.34(98) |

Source of raw data: World Justice Project Reports 2014-2019

***Personal security***

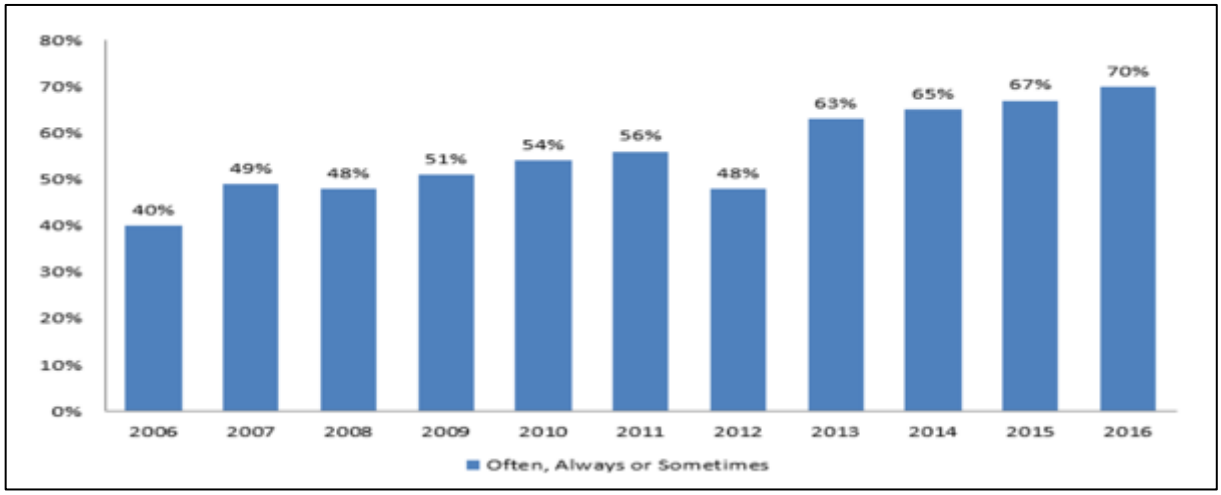
"Battle deaths thus far in 2019 nearly outnumber the combined toll in Syria and Yemen. The number of civilian casualties is poised to reach, or even surpass, the country's previous records since 2001" (Crisis Group, 2019, p.3). Figure 40 illustrates the increase in the citizen casualties by time. Citizens lack the feel of personal security; everyone is subject to security threat, and the situation remains volatile with a high level of insecurity incidents. Citizens indicated that they often fear their personal and family security; this fear has been increasing by time. Figure 41 illustrates the increase of this fear. Afghanistan has been torn by violence, it is estimated that half of the population has experienced depression, anxiety, or post-traumatic stress; which affects people mental health and wellbeing (HRW, 2019)

Figure 40: **Estimated Yearly Civilian Fatalities as Result of Fighting Between Pro-Government Forces and Armed Opposition Groups 2006-2016**




Source: Livingston & O'Hanlon (2017)

Figure 41: **Fear of Personal or Family Security (2006-2016)**




Source: Livingston & O'Hanlon (2017)

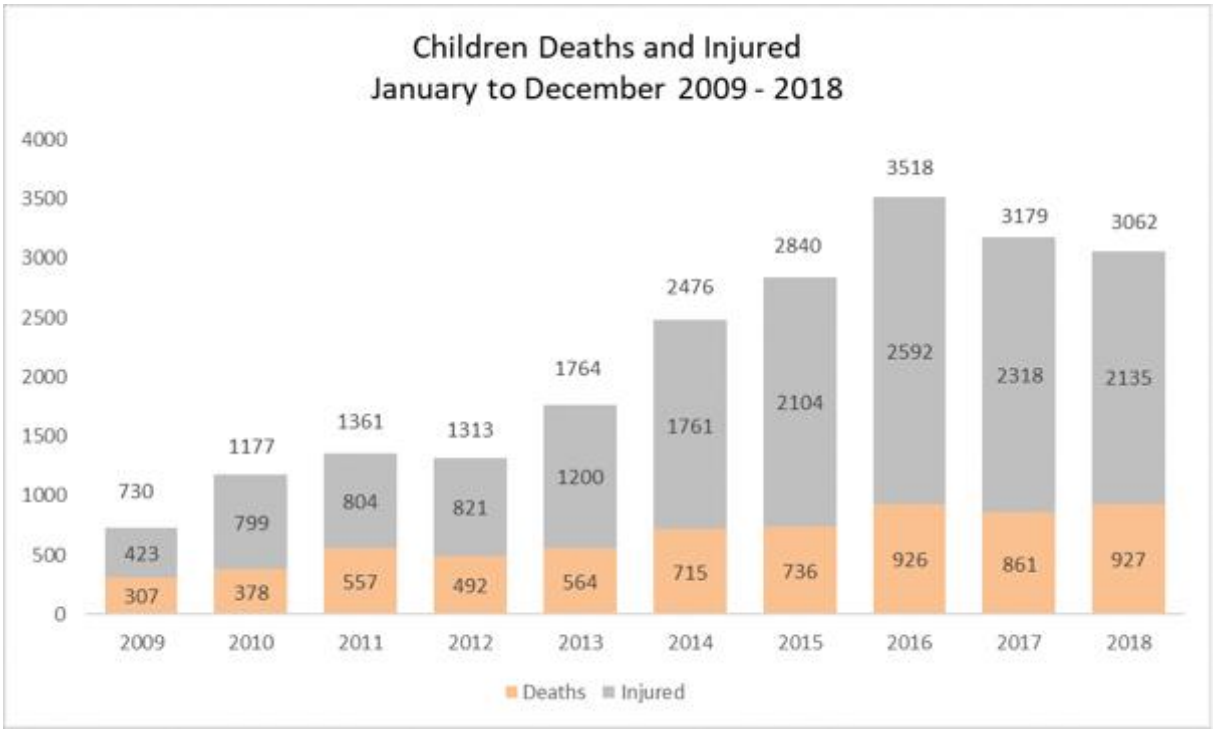
Although the Afghan constitution provides legal protection for women's rights, inequality is deeply rooted in the culture. "Women have historically not been part of the political, social, and economic decision-making process" (Sevastik, 2019). The conflict has severely impacted women in Afghanistan; UNAMA documented a 33 percent increase in women casualties attributed to ISKP. "Beyond the direct impact of armed conflict on women, they are

disproportionately affected by the broader effects of the armed conflict, which exacerbates their vulnerability to marginalization, poverty, discrimination and violence" (UNAMA, 2019, p.10)

> *Around 48% of the Afghani population are younger than 15 years of age; a large population torn by conflict. Save the Children listed Afghanistan as one of the ten worst countries (SC, 2019). Children are seriously impacted by the conflict in Afghanistan; child deaths reached record high levels in 2018 (see figure 42 below), where they accounted for 28 percent of all civilian casualties (UNAMA, 2019). Over and above, Afghani children were direct part of the conflict as both the anti and pro-government forces recruited children and used them for combat roles. Moreover, children have been victims to sexual violence by parties of the conflict (UNAMA, 2019). Children, among others in the Afghani population were also affected by heavily targeting health and educational facilities and personnel (UN, 2019). Children in Afghanistan engage in the worst forms of child labor; 7.5 percent of those aged 5 to 14 participate in the labor force. Only 41.8 per cent of them attend school, while 60% of the 3.7 million out-of-school children are girls (SC, 2019)*

Child soldiers is another alarming issue in Afghanistan with the perspective that "if you are old enough to carry a gun you are old enough to be a soldier." Reports indicates forcible and voluntary recruitment by the Taliban of children. "The direct impact of war on children remains evident throughout the country, with disabled and maimed children constituting a majority of street beggars and child labourers. It is estimated that more than four million children have acquired disabilities due to war. These children are often left hopeless and in dire states." (NATO, 2019) This result has a serious impact on the public perception on security.

Figure 42: **Children Deaths and Injured January to December 2009-2018**

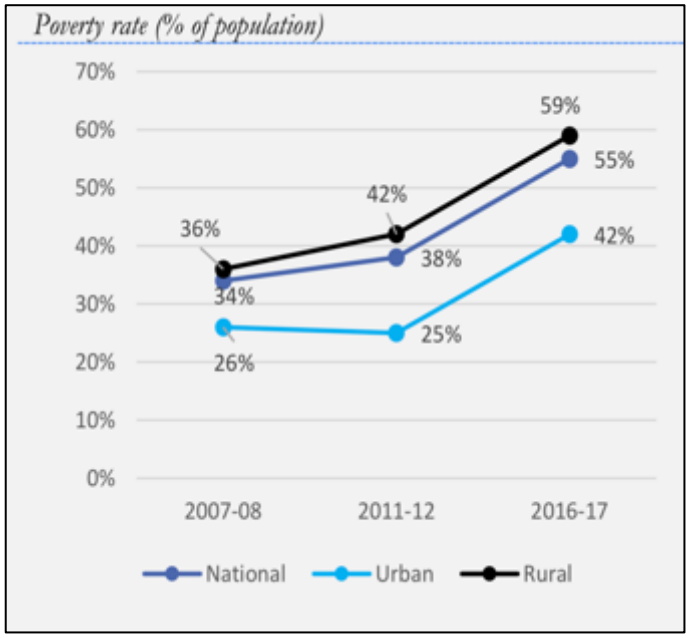



Source: UNAMA, 2019

***Economic Security***

The poverty rate for Afghanistan was estimated at 54.5 percent in 2017. Households relying on agriculture and livestock for their main income sources experience higher poverty rates, 65 and 66 percent respectively (World Bank, 2019). "Few Afghans have access to productive or remunerative employment. A quarter of the labor force is unemployed, and 80 percent of employment is vulnerable and insecure, comprising self - or own account employment, day labor, or unpaid work" (World Bank, 2019).

Figure 43: **Poverty rate (% of population)**



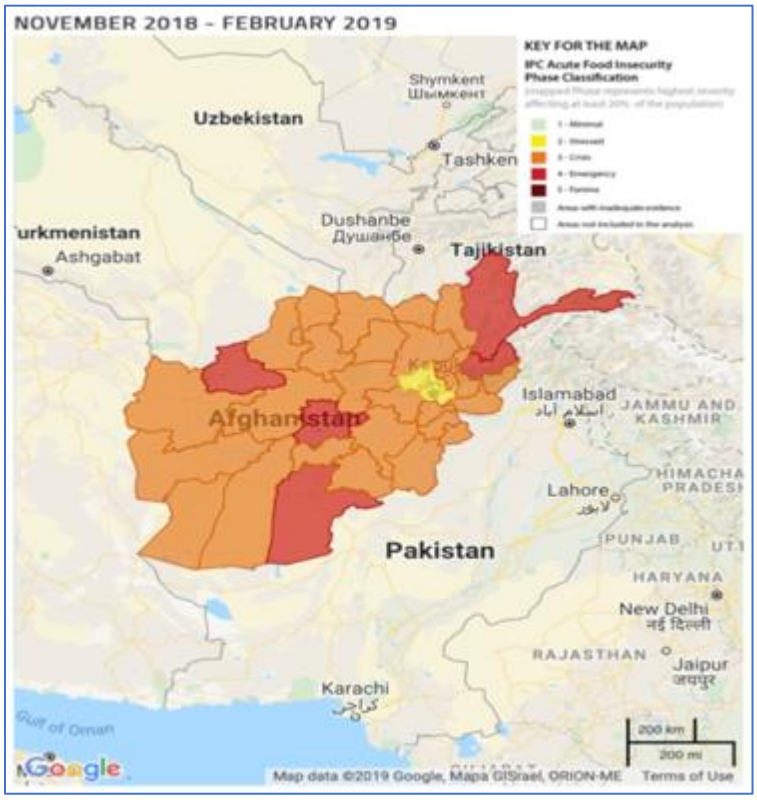

Source: World Bank (2019)

***Food security***

According to FAO, "13.5 million people in Afghanistan are severely food insecure, of whom 9.9 million are facing crisis and 3.6 million are facing emergency levels of food insecurity" (FAO, 2019, p.3).

"The results of the IPC [Integrated Food Security Phase Classification] analysis show that Afghanistan is experiencing a major livelihood crisis. This crisis has been primarily caused by the severe drought, which limits food production and depletes farmers and livestock keepers of assets and livelihoods" (IPC, 2019).

Figure 44: **Acute Food Insecurity Situation in Afghanistan**




***Health Security***

Although the World Bank Report has recorded progress in health indicators (World Bank, 2019), the trend in targeting health facilities and personnel by all parties of the conflict is alarming, leading to more people denied health services. In 2019, as of 22 October 98 incidents targeted health care in 23 provinces and 72 districts during which 234 health care facilities and 62 health care providers were affected (WHO, 2019). In July 2019, Taliban militias have ordered the closure of 42 clinics run by the Swedish aid group (Farmer, 2019).

Lack of cultural sensitivity also affected health security:

> *Despite the collapse of the Taliban regime more than two years ago, Afghan men continue to prevent women from receiving care at hospitals with male staff -- even when the lives of the women are in danger. Afghan militiamen serving with the U.S.-led antiterrorism coalition even prevent mothers from visiting children hospitalized at the most sophisticated emergency medical center in the country.*
>
> *(Synovitz, 2004: p1)*

Over and above, the protracted conflict in Afghanistan is driving a mental health crisis. Generations in Afghanistan are coming to life amid relentless violence and are witnessing nothing but violence, killing and maiming, sexual abuse leading to trauma and a sense of hopelessness.

***Environment Security***

According to UNICEF-WHO joint monitoring report 2015, 68 percent of Afghans don't have access to improved sanitation and nearly 15 million, 45 percent use unimproved water sources (UNOCHA, 2017).

According to UN personnel working in Afghanistan, the air is deadlier than the war in Afghanistan. Interviewed UN personnel mentioned that while serving in the camps they had to "work with the masks on, to help breath clean air; clean air is a luxury that not every person enjoys in Afghanistan"[35]

> *"According to the State of Global Air, a collaborative initiative between the Health Effects Institute and the Institute for Health Metrics and Evaluation, more than 26,000 Afghan deaths could be attributed to pollution in 2017. The United Nations Assistance Mission in Afghanistan documented nearly 3,500 civilian deaths from pollution for the same time period. The root cause is the burning of anything possible to get Afghans the energy and heat they need in harsh winters—including plastic, coal, and rubber. Mixed into that is the use of leaded fuels banned in the West decades ago, as well as waste energy plants and heavy industry" (Flores, 2019, para 2).*

When asked about their perceptions of human security in Afghanistan a convenient sample provided the following fears that were categorized according to the three essential freedoms: freedom from fear, freedom from want and freedom to live in dignity.

[35] Martin (2019). UNHCR official serving in Afghanistan, 27 September 2019.

Table 6: **Afghans' Perceptions of Human Security**

| **Freedom** | **Fears identified by respondents** |
|---|---|
| Freedom from fear | No hope of future |
| | Lack of government capacity/ bad government |
| | Tensions, genocide and terrorism |
| | Suicide attacks |
| | Proliferation of weapons |
| | High potential to be a victim of violence any time in the coming future |
| | Too many foreigners are getting involved in the Afghan case |
| | Youth feel terror, helplessness and fear |
| | Gender based violence and sexual abuse |
| | Children's traumatic stress causing physiological reactions |
| | No clean air to breathe |
| Freedom from want | Hunger and poverty |
| | No reliable basic income |
| | Lack of government safety net |
| | Unemployment |
| | Bad economy |
| | No basic services provided, health and educational services are deteriorating |
| Freedom to live in dignity | Human rights degradation |
| | Discrimination against women |

*'We do not have any hope for the future, and we don't see things going in the right direction; everything is deteriorating. We can't see any future for our children, no health, educational, or cultural security. We have lost the connection with the land and the people. I do not remember a day in my life without conflict, and I do not imagine my children will have the chance to enjoy security. It is not only the conflict and the battle; my children had to go to the hospital due to respiratory problems. The pollution is killing*

*us all; the skies turn black during the winter, the smug and the pollution is everywhere. My eternal dream is to leave this place and secure my children in a better place to ensure a better future" (Ahmed, 2019).*[36]

## Conclusion

The protracted conflict in Afghanistan is deteriorating by time, following the counterinsurgency. The insurgent groups have not been suppressed, on the contrary, they increased and grew. The counterinsurgency has been focusing on traditional security, thus temporarily eliminating some human security threats, but has not been able to achieve sustainable security in the long term. The strategy is said to be political; however, the strategy, planning and implementation was military-led. The solution is, obviously after all these years, not a military one. The counterinsurgency and decentralized system has led to lack of confidence and trust in the central government, which led to more conflict and in fact it supported the vicious cycle, which altered the entire situation and reached a point of no return. The counterinsurgency is trapped in a situation of no win and no loss. A continued presence of the intervention forces is not ensuring any security; however, withdrawing is even more problematic. In fact, it will not be a withdrawal of the military, it will be a withdrawal of the international presence leading to empowerment of militias. It will not be an end to the use of military forces, it will rather be an even more chaotic situation due to the continuation of the vicious cycle. It will be a loss of influence and legitimacy of the Afghan government, an increased and empowered insurgency, and a collapse of human security.

The decades of protracted conflict and increased number of players combined with the climate change, gender inequalities and underemployment has increased all threats and insecurities. Thus, limitation of insurgents support, accompanied with sustainable development initiatives should largely replace the traditional military use.

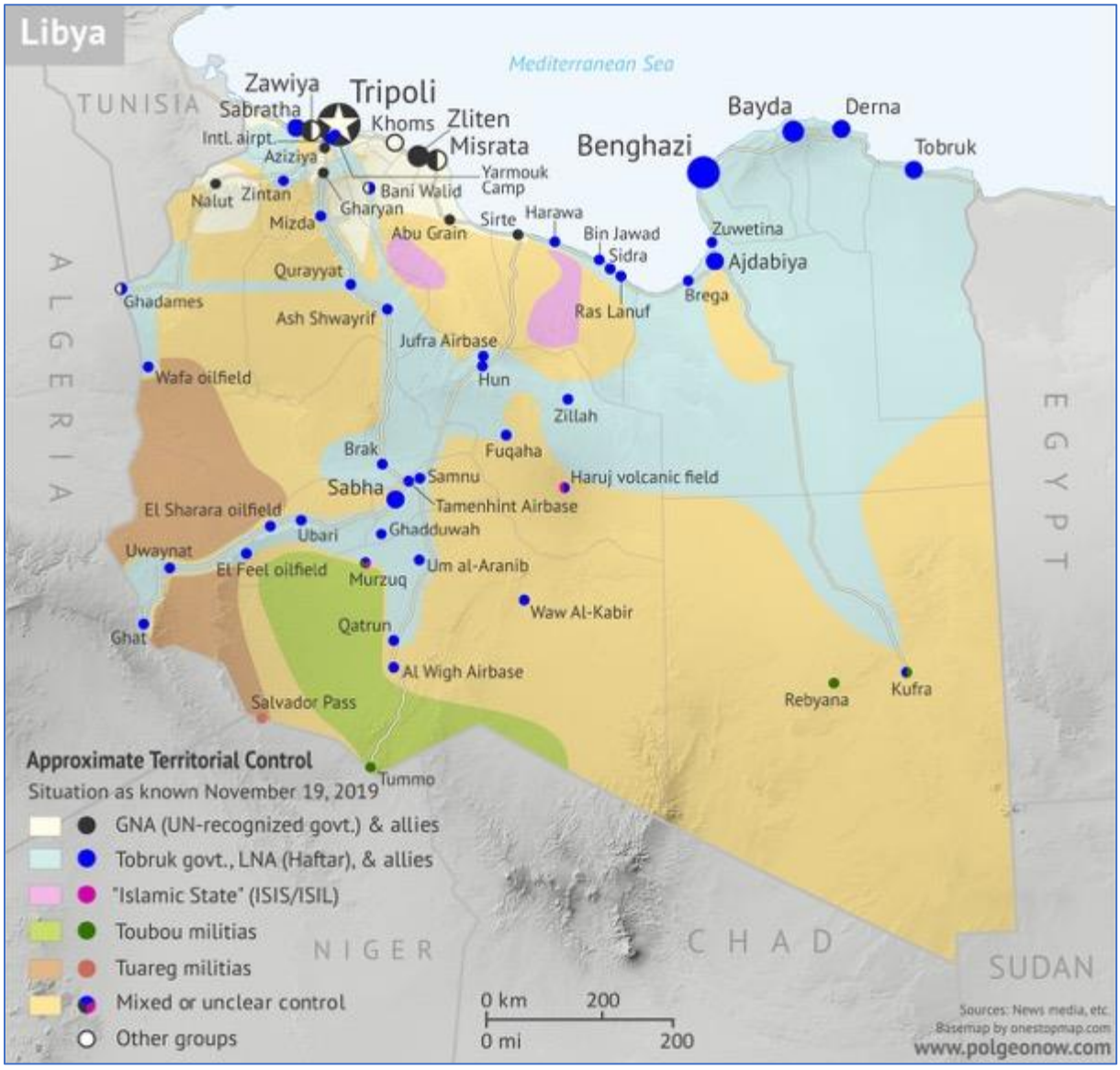
[36] Ahmed, Safi (2019). Interview on 24 July, 2019

# Chapter 7: Case 3 - LIBYA (2011-Present)

## Introduction

The conflict in Libya that started in 2011 has a strong sectarian and tribal basis. The foundation for the conflict existed during Ghaddafi regime; however, catalysts of change including both internal and external factors dragged the country and region into an irreversible complexed conflict.

Figure 45: **Libya Civil War Map (November 2019)**




Source: Pol Geo Now[37]

[37] source: www.polgeonow.com

Libya's geophysical location at the top of the African continent and close to Europe is advantageous in a sense. Nevertheless, it has been beset by succession of invaders, from the ancient Greeks and Persians, through Carthaginians, Romans and Arabs to the Ottoman Empire and Italy. The invaders usually controlled and occupied the coast and pushed the Berbers and the Arabs to the interior regions.

The Berbers are believed to have begun their migration from south-western Asia in the third millennium BC (Metz, 1987). The Berbers refer to themselves as *imazighan* meaning "free men." They never developed a sense of nationhood, rather they associated themselves with their tribes, families and clans (Metz, 1987).

The Ottoman Empire administered Libya as three provinces since 1580: Cyrenaica, Tripolitania, and Fezzan (Vandewalle, 2012). However, during this period the tribal system was the governing structure, which was possible through the loose hold of the Ottoman rule.

The Italian colonization started in 1910, when Italy attacked Tripoli in claims to liberate Libya from the Ottoman Wilayat. The opposition to Italian rule was most aggressive in Cyrenaica where the Sanusi religious and political leaders were active. This is where the "Grand Sanusi" (Muhammad ibn Ali al Sanusi) settled in 1830, and where Idris Sanusi (later King Idris) was leading the movement (Siebens & Case, 2012). He remained as a leader even while exile in Egypt from 1922 to 1947.

On 21 November 1949, the UN adopted a resolution stipulating Libyan independence no later than 1 January 1952. This came after the failure of the Bevin Sfora Agreement that advocated for a division of the former Italian colonies between Italy, Britain and France. On 24 December 1951 Libya gained its independence under the leadership of King Idris al-Sanusi with the proclamation of the federal monarchy of Libya. The three provinces "Cyrenaica, Tripolitania and Fazzan" that formed the new state had different interests and outlooks (Vandewalle, 2012). The new Libyan state had to face political social and economic challenges. The new state had to start institutionalizing systems although only 10 percent of the population was literate and lacked any existent industry (Kawczynski, 2011). The only unifying factor was an economic concern rather than a national one. "During the first decade of independence, geographical and cultural differences between the provinces led to regionalism and rivalry that threatened the unity of the fledging country" (Siebens & Case, 2012, p.5). Idris' rule was not well accepted especially among the rural notables of Cyrenaica and even less in Tripolitania. His main priority

was rebuilding the religious and social network of the Sanussiyah in Libya (Morone, 2017). However, the federal system reinforced the regional divisions preventing any possibility of the national unity (Morone, 2017).

**Timeline of Events**

- December 1951: Libya becomes independent under King Idris
- September 1969: King Idris deposed in a military coup led by Captain Muammar Gaddafi
- April 1973: Gaddafi bans political parties and institutes a system of "rule by the people"/Popular Revolution
- 1975: RCC member Major Omar Mihayshi failed an attempted coup
- March 1977, Gaddafi creates the "Socialist People's Libyan Arab Jamahiriya."
- December 1979: the US Embassy in Tripoli was attacked. In response the US listed Libya as a state sponsor of terrorism
- June 1996: Killings of Abu Salim Prison

On September 1, 1969, a group of young officers led by Captain Muammar Gaddafi launched a coup (or revolution as the Gaddafi names it) toppling King Idris, where Gaddafi became the chairman of the governing Revolutionary Command Council (RCC). This was successful given the weak kingdom and the regional environment (Ladjal, 2017). In his first few years of ruling, Gaddafi decreed the end of the tribal system, replacing the tribal elites and politicians by supporters of the revolution; he dissolved the monarchy while strengthening ties with the Arab nationalist governments (Ben Lamma, 2017). Gaddafi changed the basis for the legal system to sharia, nationalized industry, abolished parliamentary institutions, and prohibited political parties.

On April 1973, Gaddafi initiated a "Popular Revolution" that he called "people govern themselves by themselves" (Vandewalle, 2008:12). Practically, this was activated through the formation of 450 people's committees to take control over the national administration of universities, hospitals, schools, factories and farms (Otman & Karlberg, 2007). The people's committees embodied the concept of direct democracy stipulated in Gaddafi's publication "The Green Book" (Gaddafi's blueprint for a new Libya); a new system, which replaced the RCC with the General People's Congress (GPC). The second volume of the green book formulated the solution to the economic problem through economic goals.

One of the main challenges faced by Gaddafi was from the RCC. In 1975, RCC member Major Omar Mihayshi failed an attempted coup after disagreements over politico-economic policies. This failure forced the technocratic elite to flee from the country. Further attempts took place, and were suppressed through executions and other punishments.

In March 1977, Gaddafi dissolved the Republic and created the *Al-Jamahiriya al-Arabiyya al-Libiyya al-sha'abiyya al-ishtirakiyya* "Socialist People's Libyan Arab Jamahiriya." The Jamahiriya refers to the political community that is based on consultation rather than

representation (Vandewalle, 2008). For Gaddafi that was the real democracy as opposed to the Western democracies.

Libya was isolated on December 1979 when the US Embassy in Tripoli was attacked, and in response the US listed Libya as a state sponsor of terrorism (Hagger, 2009). This isolation and sanctions increased by time.

Despite the sanctions, Libyan society was in a state of transition from the underdeveloped into a modern socialist state:

> *"By the 1980s, most Libyans enjoyed educational opportunities, health care, and housing that were among the best in Africa and the Middle East. Responsibility for the care of the old and the needy had been largely shifted from the extended family to a comprehensive system of social security. Education and medical care were free, and when necessary the state subsidized housing and other necessities. Life expectancy, perhaps the ultimate measure of living standards, had lengthened by ten years since 1960, and social stability was much improved… The status of women continued to undergo modification at the behest of the Revolution's leaders" (Metz, 1987 p. 63-64)*

Despite all these developments, the country was suffering from a high level of inflation that needed proper management of the revenue flows. However, this was managed by abandoning planning, non-transparent budgeting procedures, no reporting systems or assessments of the country's economic performance. This provoked a massive brain drain and expulsion of immigrant laborers (Vandewalle, 2008).

The governing system was not an inclusive one, in any case. "Old ethnic and geographic divisions among Cyrenaica, Fezzan and Tripolitania were still very evident" (Metz, 1987: 64). Systematic exclusion to participate in governing the country amongst different segments of the populace was the norm. Moreover, a sense of belonging, identity, and national unity was missing.

Gadhafi had strained relationships with the West. He was a leading voice against the West and Israel. In the 1970s, he nationalized the West-owned oil companies. He was also accused of masterminding the bombing of Pan Am flight 103 in 1988 (the Lockerbie bombing).

On June 1996, stories about the mass killings in Tripoli's Abu Salim prison went viral, though with minimal details. Around 1,270 prisoners were slaughtered and buried at the spot (Winer,

2019 & HRW, 2006). This incident among many others and these socio-economic conditions built the momentum for Revolution.

On February 2011, civil protests started against the corruption, the entrenched systems of patronage, and the deteriorating economic conditions with 30% unemployment rate. The demonstrations and riots and the heavy-handed government response to them soon created civil war conditions. Later in the same month the Libyan National Transitional Council (NTC) was formed in Benghazi, and on March 5 the Council issued a statement declaring itself as the only legitimate body representing the Libyan people and state; a legitimacy that was acknowledged by the International community. By 30 November 2011, more than one hundred UN states recognized the NTC as the legitimate representative body in Libya (Nesi, 2011).

On 26 February 2011, the Security Council adopted Resolution 1970 "recalling the Libyan authorities to protect its population" and demanding all member states to "immediately take the necessary measures to prevent the direct or indirect supply, sale, or transfer to the Libyan Arab Jamahiriya" of arms and related material of all types.[38] Thus, the resolution was based on the principle of responsibility to prevent. The Resolution was also a UN power-grab: Libya was not a signatory to the Rome Statue, yet the resolution extends the ICC's jurisdiction over the country. On 17 March 2011, following the non-compliance of the Libyan authorities to Resolution 1970, the Security Council adopted Resolution 1973. The resolution called for the imposition of a no-fly zone on Libyan military aviation, and authorized member states to act nationally or through regional organizations to guarantee protection[39]. This authorization is considered a new era in employing R2P. In response, two days later a coalition of 12 countries established the Joint Task Force Odyssey Dawn and took immediate action to enforce the resolution, and within 72 hours the no-fly zone was enforced. Within a week the Task Force succeeded in stopping the advance of the regime forces, allowing a breathing space for the rebels. Following this, and in a speedy manner that had so far been unprecedented, NATO states agreed on an operational plan for the Operation Unified Protector (OUP). On October 21 2011, one day after Gaddafi's death, NATO considered that the operation had served its purpose and decided to end it by the end of the month. The NTC declared Libya a free country on October 23 (Mueller, 2015).

On September 2011, the General Assembly adopted Resolution 2009 to establish the United Nations Support in Libya (UNSMIL) authorized for an initial period of three months, which

[38] https://www.un.org/securitycouncil/s/res/1970-%282011%29
[39] https://www.nato.int/nato_static/assets/pdf/pdf_2011_03/20110927_110311-UNSCR-1973.pdf

was requested by the new transitional government in Libya. The mission was mandated to establish rule of law and security in the aftermath of the civil war for a period of three months, which was later extended for another three months; a period that was not sufficient to incorporate long-term cohesive plans. Subsequently, UNSMIL was extended year after another and is operating until today where the country is in turmoil (WPF, 2016).

Libya's Key political parties include: the Justice and Construction Party JCP (the political wing of the Muslim Brotherhood), the National Forces Alliance NFA, and the Loyalty to the Martyr's Blood bloc (Kutlat al-Wifa li-Damm al-Shuhada). Although these parties do not have their own armed forces, they are affiliated to certain armed groups.

The first public elections of the General National Congress – which was to replace the TC – took place in July 2012. The results were unexpected given that it was preceded by sporadic attacks against official buildings and foreign diplomatic missions. They were also unexpected in the sense that the majority of the seats were won by the NFA. NFA won nearly half of the party list seats, while the Muslim Brotherhood's Justice and Construction Party (JCP) secured less than a quarter. "The GNC's fragmentation made for an equally fragmented government, and protracted decision-making" (Lacher, 2020: p29). This central authority proved its weaknesses through the deadly clashes between military councils in the different regions that formed de facto local governments. The security situation worsened in the midst of the bombings and attacks on the US embassy and other representatives of the international community. Furthermore, violent crimes and political violence became the norm (Ghanmi & Hakala, 2013).

When JCP became part of the newly elected government, they favored working with the radical elements and opposed the disliked liberal forces, which pursued a zero-sum game (Trauthig, 2019a). The government strived to undermine all other parties; this was possible through the isolation law (Amirah-Fernandez, 2013).

The isolation law meant discrediting and removing political opponents including seculars who were part of the new government (Amirah-Fernandez, 2013). However, the isolation in Libya's case was difficult as it meant purging individuals rather than parties given that the Gaddafi system excluded political parties and movements. Affiliation to Gaddafi became a contamination that was not easy to disprove, and was a sufficient reason for dismissal from the GNC. The exclusionary policies of the JCP led to an Islamic-dominated GNC (Trauthig, 2019a). As a result, on February 14, General Khalifa Haftar announced taking control of the main institutions and the dissolving of the GNC (Winer, 2019). On May 2014, the Libyan National Army under Haftar attacked the parliament (Trauthig, 2019a). This is when the GNC

set the date for the new elections on June 2014. Again, the JCP found itself in an unfortunate position: it was defeated and thus rejected the results. Through these elections the GNC was replaced by the House of Representatives HOR (Neale, 2018).

June 2014 elections were the spark of a new phase of civil war. The JCP who rejected the June elections reconvened in the form of a new GNC to replace the HOR and to be based in Tripoli; while the HOR relocated to Tobruk and aligned themselves to Haftar (Toaldo, 2017). The country was then divided into two: Tripoli and Misrata were controlled by the GNC, while Tobruk was controlled by the HOR. This turbulent and militarized atmosphere became more toxic with the presence of ISIS that became apparent by 2015.

To curtail the civil war and reach an agreement between the rival governments, the UN envoy in Libya (whose impartiality was doubted by some scholars due to his stance with the United Arab Emirates (Eljarh, 2018)) recommended creating a new transitional government with the two rivals sharing power. The Libyan Political Agreement (LPA) known as the Skhirat Agreement was signed on December 2015 between individual MPs because leaders of both parties did not agree on this compromise, which gave the LPA a fragile basis. The LPA assigned a Presidency Council (PC) that was formed from a "loose coalition of militias" (Toaldo, 2017: 119). Within this PC, the HOR would remain as the legitimate parliament; whereas the GNC would be integrated in the consultative High Council of State (Arraf, 2017). On December

**Timeline of Events**

- February 2011: Protests starts in Benghazi that leads to a full-blown revolution
- February 2011: Libyan National Transitional Council was announced
- February 2011: UN Resolution 1970
- March 2011: General Assembly suspends Libya from Human Rights Council
- September 2011: UN Resolution 2009, to start the UN Mission UNSMIL
- October 2011: Gaddafi dies
- October 2011: NATO ends its mission
- October 2011: Gaddafi is captured and killed
- July 2012: First public elections of a Libyan National Congress
- February 2014: Haftar announced taking control of the main institutions and dissolving the GNC
- June 2014: Elections, JCP fails, GNC replaced by HOR
- June 2014: Libyan government splits in two, Tripoli and Toburk, GNC vs HOR

**CIVIL WAR**

**ISIS PRESENCE**

- December 2015: Libyan Political Agreement signed
- December 2015: Libyan Political Agreement signed (Skhirat Agreement), PC GNA formed
- January 2016: most states recognized the PC
- August 2016: HOR gave the GNA a vote of no confidence

**Three Governments in One Country**

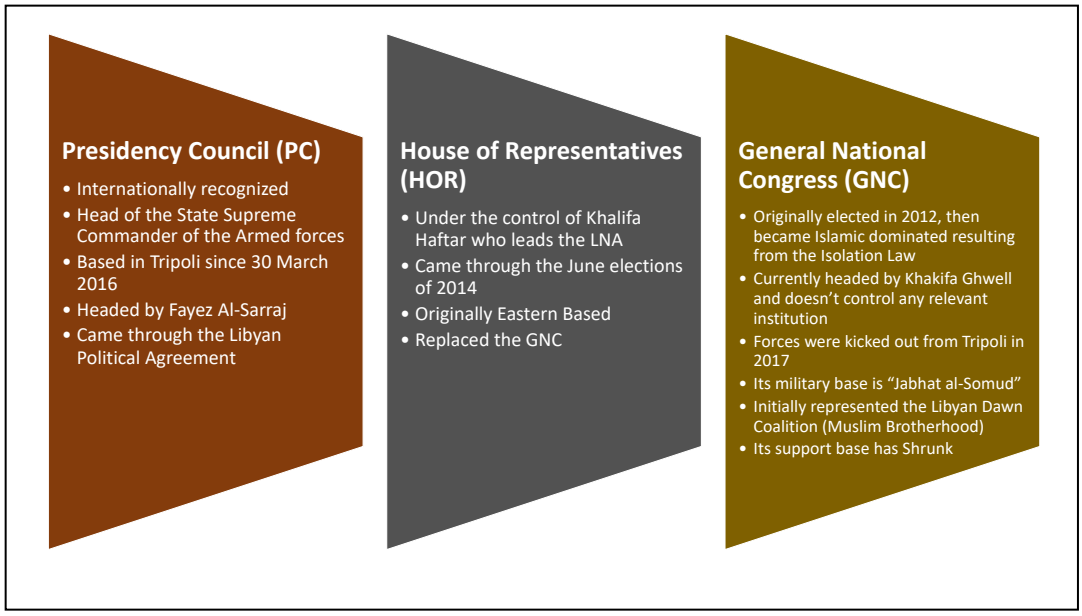
**ONGOING CONFLICT**

**March 15, 2021**
**ONE and UNITED?**
**Libya Interim Government Sworn in?**

2015, through the unanimous adoption of resolution 2259, it was agreed that states would "cease support to and official contact with parallel institutions claiming to be the legitimate authority, but which were outside of the Political Agreement" (SC, 2015). By January 2016 most states recognized the PC; however, by August 2016, the HOR "gave the GNA a vote of no confidence" (Arraf, 2017).

The security situation was deteriorating more than ever, with the different players on the ground, each time a government is formed it is an additional rather than a substitute government, which created a country with three governments (see figure 46 above). Suicide attacks caused major setbacks and protests against financial shortages and power cuts in Triploi increased. The UN-supported government was not able to provide the basic services for the people. Due to the rivalry among the various factions a new civil war erupted in 2014.

Figure 46: **A State with Three Governments**

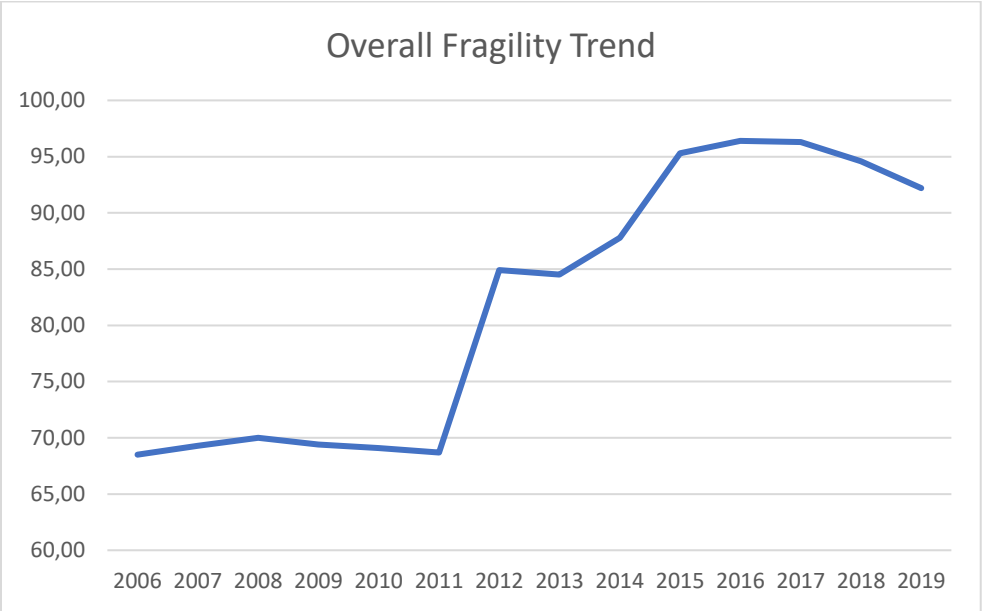



Source: own design

Meanwhile the Libyan National Army LNA was organizing its military forces (Fitzgerald & Toaldo, 2018). Throughout 2017 and 2018, LNA became stronger and captured Benghazi and Derna. On January 2019, it captured Sabha.

The transitional process from one government to another was complex and embraced turbulent and violent actions. The governments themselves were fragile and were not able to provide the basic services. Figure (47) below illustrates the state fragility from 2006 to 2019.

Figure 47: **Overall Fragility Trend in Libya (2006-present)**




Source: Raw data retrieved from Fragile States Index[40]

In 2010 Libya ranked 111 out of 177[41]. Two years later, Libya set the record as "the most severe year-on worsening of a country in the history of the index" to reach the 50th place in 2012. Currently, it ranks 28th with a continuous trend of deterioration (FOP, 2019).

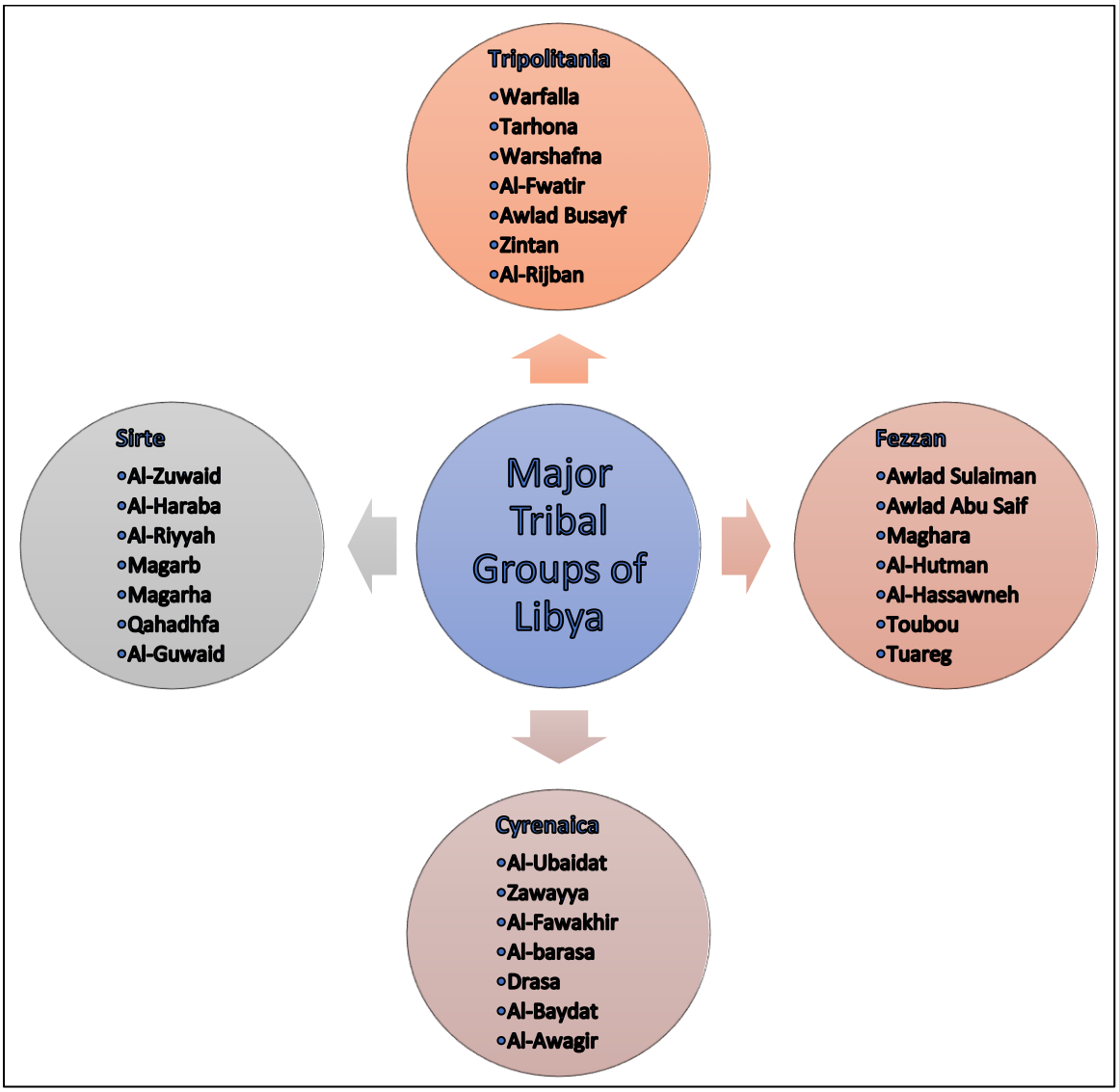
## Different Categories… Different Interests… Segregation

Libya is historically built around a tribal system that has been strengthened by the Ottomans and the colonizing powers; a system that prevailed during the Sanusi Monarchy and during the Gadhafi. It still exists and affects the current civil war. The country is composed of different tribes that are either scattered throughout the country, or concentrated in many small tribal enclaves. This system formed the loyalties and sense of belonging amongst the people in Libya, but it also affected the economic and social status along with the services each tribe is provided. The number of tribes in Libya is estimated at 140, though only 30 are of particular significance (Reuters, 2011) these are believed to have a critical political and social role (Wood, 2012). In general, the tribes are divided according to ethnic identity: Arabs, Amazigh or Berber. The Arabs are descended from Bani Hilal and Bani Salim including some Arabized Berbers. The Amazigh were marginalized during the Gadhafi regime; they suffered from the "absence of

[40] Source: https://fragilestatesindex.org/country-data/
[41] 1 refers to the most failed state

legal recognition as a distinct and indigenous ethnic group. Legislation ('Law 24') banned Amazigh or Berbers from giving their children non-Arab names, and a reluctance to provide official documentation attesting to their citizenship" (Wood, 2012, p.11). Figure 48 below illustrates a range of those tribes.

Figure 48: **Tribes in Libya according to their localities**




Source: own design

***Toubou***

Toubou are subdivided in two groups: the Teda and Daza. These are semi-namadic Muslims (Taha, 2017). Although the group converted to Islam during the Sanussi, they still maintain their unique religious culture and their own language (MRGI, 2018).

In the 1970s Libya invaded the Aouzou (Chad), after the invasion they registered the local population as Libyan citizens. The Toubou population from the other parts of the country were forced to move there. In 1994 the International Court of Justice ruled that the Aouzou strip return to Chad. In 1996, Gadhafi passed Decree No. 13(1485) which declared that all those holding documentation issued in Aouzou are considered foreigners even the indigenous people of Libya. As such, this population was never integrated within the society (DFAT, 2018b).
This group was politically and culturally marginalized during and post Gadhafi regime (Wood, 2012, p.11).
The outbreak of post-revolutionary violence led to the breakdown of the "century-old peace agreement" between the Tuareg and the Toubou in 2014" (DFAT, 2018b:22). Though these clashes decreased by late 2017 after aligning with and the domination of the LNA in the south.

***Tawerghans***

Tawerghans are the descendants of the slaves brought to Libya in the 18$^{th}$ and 19$^{th}$ centuries; they live in a town with the same name. This is where the Gadhafi loyalists based while besieging the city of Misrata. As a result, the entire population was driven out of Tawergha (around 40,000) in 2011 by anti-Gadhafi forces as collective punishment. Since then, they were dispersed around the country, suffered arbitrary arrests and their women were raped. In 2018, the Misrata forces prevented the Tawerghans from returning to their town despite calls from humanitarian organizations (IAGCI, 2019 & DFAT, 2018b).

***Tuareg***

The Tuareg moved to Libya under the Gadhafi to work as soldiers, their knowledge of the desert opened work opportunities to work with merchants. Their alliance to the government during the Gadhafi-era was in return of the promised identification documents (Taha, 2017). Although not all Tuareg are supporters of Gadhafi, they were treated as such. They faced societal discrimination and violence, they were held in detention and were forced to leave their homes (IAGCI, 2019). Tuareg in general are subject to political and societal discrimination; however, undocumented Tuareg are subject to devastating official and unofficial discrimination as well.
In 2014, clashes erupted between the Tuareg and the Toubou over oil, water resources, and control of the lucrative smuggling and trade of arms and drugs. These clashes resulted in massive displacement of the Tuareg population, with an initial number of 18,500 people (DFAT, 2018).

### *Mashashiya*

The Mashashiya are originally nomadic tribes who were resettled by the Gadhafi regime. During the regime, this population suffered from limited resources, which fueled conflict with the other tribes.

The outbreak of post-revolutionary violence resulted in a massive displacement of the Mashashiya population, displacing 10,000 and burning their homes for their alleged support of the Gadhafi. Whether IDPs or returnees, the Mashashiya are still lacking safety, security, access to basic services and political and social discrimination (DFAT, 2018b).

### *Amazigh/Berbers*

The Western Amazigh/Berber are indigenous to Libya with a unique culture, language and alphabet. The Amazigh were politically and socially marginalized during the Gadhafi regime, which inflicted their persistent engagement in the revolution. Following the revolution, violence erupted between the Amazigh and the Arabs due the lack of trust from each and the discrimination experienced from both sides (Wood, 2012).

### **Magarha**

Magarha is the second largest Arab tribe that originates from the Fezzan. The Magarha and the Warfalla are both known for their important alliance with the Gadhafi regime (Cole & Mangan, 2016).

### *Warfalla*

An influential tribe due to its numerical weight across Libya; it is the dominant tribe in Tripolitania (Cole & Mangan, 2016). Their alliance with Gadhafi granted them access, power, and position in state and security institutions. This power and position prompted them to change and take part in the revolution, although many remained amongst the last bastions of the regime. The tribe repositioned itself in 2012 by forming the "Social Council of Warfallah Tribes SCWT" (Ben Lamma, 2017).

### *Qadhadhfa*

A small Arab tribe based in Sirte, these were placed in the key security and government posts during the Gadhafi regime, as he himself comes from this tribe. Although this was a marginalized tribr prior to the regime, it took a central political position and real power during the regime (Cole & Mangan, 2016).

***Al-Abaidat***

Al-Abaidat is one of the most powerful tribes in the Cyrenaica region. They have a strong military position and have occupied the head of all security institutions in the region since the Ottoman era (Ben Lamma, 2017).

***Al-Awaqir***

Al-Awaqir was one of the aristocratic tribes during the Idris monarchy; however, they lost this power during the Gadhafi regime. The tribe had an effective role in fighting against "Ansar Al-Sharia and the Islamic State (Ben Lamma, 2017).

## Insurgency

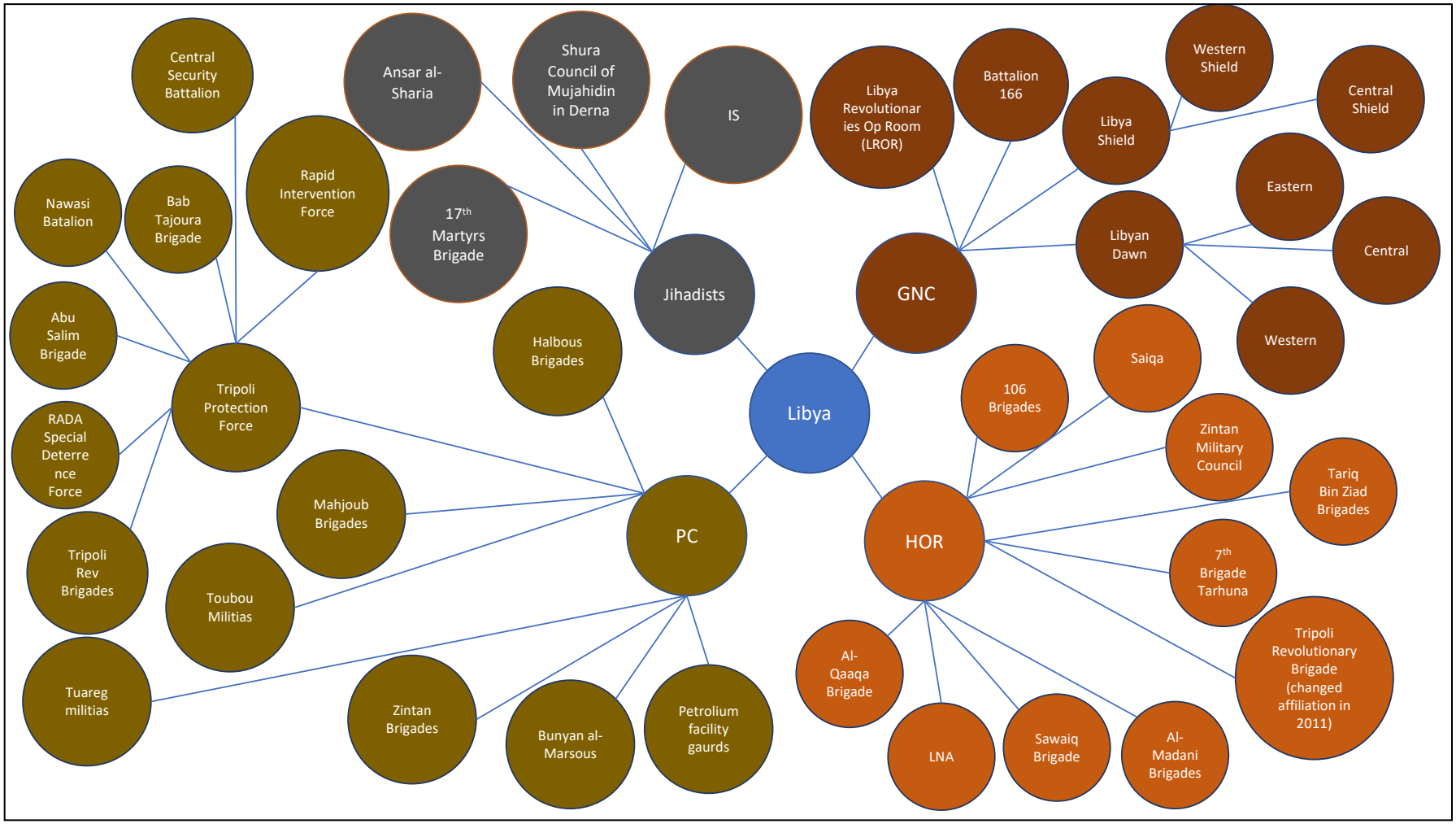
There are four distinct directions of association of the insurgents in Libya; LNA, HOR, PC and Jihadists groups. In 2014, Libya had approximately 1,600 armed groups (El Kamouni-Janssen & de Bruijne, 2017). Figure 49 below illustrates a map of some of the significant insurgent, militias and forces active in Libya. Some of these existed during Gadhafi; many were established in 2011 during the regime change, while many others were established on 2014 during what is called the second civil war in Libya.

***Libyan National Army LNA (2014-present)[42]***

Although it is called a National Army, it is in fact composed of various militias and tribal armed groups. It includes Chadian and Sudanese forces and tribal militias (Pack, 2019). It emerged in mid-2014, when Khalifa Haftar (Field Marshal, erstwhile commander of the armed forces of the House of Representatives) launched Operation Dignity.

[42] Sarcastic comments on this Libyan National Army by some Libyans: "it is not Libyan, it is not National, and it is not an Army"; it is not Libyan as it includes other nationalities, it is not national as the leaders are regional representatives, and it is not an Army as it is composed of different militias.

Figure 49: **Mapping of Insurgents in Libya**




Source: own design

Over time, the LNA grew in number through the support of various actors gradually imposed militarized governance. And the group presented itself as the "security sector reform project" aiming at dismantling the other militias especially the Muslim brotherhood affiliates and jihadists (Pack, 2019). "Egypt, the UAE and Russia. All these players have steadily supported the House of Representatives in Tobruk and likely provided General Haftar with weapons and air power in his efforts to drive other groups out of Benghazi and Eastern Libya" (Mezran & Varvelli, 2017).

***Libya Dawn (Fajr Libya) (2014-2016)***

These are the forces that supported the GNC elected in 2012, they seized Tripoli in 2014; they were formed in response to Haftar's Operation Dignity (Toaldo, 2017). By March 2016, the coalition started to fracture along political and geographic lines (Glen, 2017). Among the groups that it encompassed are the Libyan Shield Forces who are composed of three brigades: the eastern, the central and the western. Misrata militias and the Libyan Revolutionaries Operations Room are also two factions in the coalition.

*Shield Forces (2014-present)*

The Libya Shield is composed of several militias under the same name operating in various parts of the country. The Central Libya Shield is viewed as part of the "Ministry of Defense Forces" (BBC, 2016).

*Libyan Revolutionaries Operations Room (2014-present)*

The Libyan Revolutionaries Operations Room is an umbrella for Islamist militias that was created in 2013 to support the GNC. The group joined Libya Dawn coalition in 2014; while in 2017 it joined the Libyan National Guard, a new umbrella group for opposition militias (Glen, 2017).

*Abu Salim Central Security Force (2014-present)*

The force is also known as Kikli Militia and was part of the Dawn Coalition (Pack, 2019)

***Bunyan Al-Marsous (2016-present)***

Bunyan al-Marsous is a coalition of Islamist militias originating from Misrata. This militia was formed in 2016 to defend Misrata from the Islamic State fighters. The group pledged allegiance to the PC and campaigned to be recognized as the national army of Libya. The group defeated the Islamic State in Sirte. Clashes between the group and the LNA took place after defeating the IS in Sirte. The foreign policy of this group placed them at odds, especially in their relationship with Russia, and their official visits to Qatar (McGregor, 2017).

***Zintan Military Council (2011-present)***

The Zintan Military Council was established in 2011 from a coalition of 23 Zintan and Nafusa Mountains militias that is considered one of the most organized and powerful militias in Tripoli (TRAC, 2019).

***Tripoli Revolutionary Brigade (2011-present)***

The Tripoli Revolutionary Brigade was established in 2011 and is still operating as the most powerful Tripoli-based militias. The Brigade has been supportive in the establishment of the GNA (Pack, 2019).

***Islamic State in Libya (2014-present)***

Many fighters returned from Syria in 2014, where they organized themselves as the Islamic Youth Shura Council, and later in the same year they pledged allegiance to the Islamic State (Wehrey & Alrababa'h, 2015). Currently, IS in Libya is in the process of regrouping and regaining strength with an increasing level of asymmetric threats, their incidents and terrorists' attacks are spread between the eastern, western and southern regions, between March 2018 and March 2019 they have committed 71 incidents showing brutal attacks all over Libya (Trauthig, 2019b).

***Ansar Al-Sharia (2012-2017)***

Ansar Al-Sharia was formed in 2012 in Benghazi and expanded to reach Derna, Sirte and Ajdabya. Ansar al-Sharia aimed at the imposition of the sharia law. In 2014, the UN listed Ansar al-Sharia on the sanctioned list alongside of Al-Qaeda that had a presence in Libya. The group had its training camps for foreigner fighters. In order to face Khalifa Haftar they formed the Benghazi Revolutionary Shura Council; a coalition with other militias Glen, 2017). In May 2017, the group

announced its dissolution following the heavy losses that have "wiped out its leadership and decimated its fighters" (Reuters, 2017).

## International Intervention from R2P to Counterinsurgency

***Responsibility to Protect***

The intervention in Libya started through the United Nations Security Council resolution to impose a no-fly zone and the protection of the civilians. In the process of voting a number of permanent and non-permanent members abstained from the vote (China, Russia, India, Brazil and Germany); which proved reservations and tensions within the international community even before the implementation. However, the resolution was adopted on the basis that all members condemned the Libyan government's repressive measures.

The Arms Embargo commenced on 23 March 2011, the no-fly zone commenced on 25 March 2011, the protection of civilians commenced on 31 March 2011, and the mission ended on 31 October 2011. Approximately 8,000 troops participated in the Operation Unified Protector OUP, over 260 air assets, 21 naval assets and 26,500 sorties were used. It covered over 5,900 military targets including over 400 artillery or rocket launchers and over 600 tanks or armored vehicles (NATO, 2011). The main contributors to the NATO mission were the US, UK, and France.

Many scholars discussed the illegality regarding the international intervention in Libya. Assessing the legality means assessing the principles of the International Commission on Intervention and State Sovereignty: just cause, right intention, last resort, proportional means, reasonable prospects and proper authority (ICISS, 2001). The last resort criteria has not been met given the favor of military over the different political and diplomatic options available to engage with Gadhafi (Saba & Akbarzadeh, 2017; Rijke, 2014; Pommier, 2011). Also, the "just cause" criteria was absent given that there is no clear evidence to suggest that the Libyan regime was on the verge of committing mass atrocities against civilians" (Saba & Akbarzadeh, 2017, p.242). The proportionality is another failed criterion, this is apparent through the extensive military support of the opposition. Having destroyed airports, telecommunication installations, government troops, Gadhafi's compound and his home town though no fighting was taking place in that region is a flagrant breach of proportionality (Corten & Koutroulis, 2013). The act was also criticized as it stipulated for the protection of the Libyan people but it did not specify the timeframe, the exact result of the mission, or the exit strategy (Forte, 2013).

The Security Council resolution 1973 mirrors the protection by demanding member states "to take all necessary measures… to protect civilians" (UNSC, 2011). In fact, the term "all necessary measures" was referred to both: enforcing No-fly zone and protection of civilians. However, the term "all necessary measures" allowed the coalition to use all means of military equipment, excluding boots on the ground that was clearly expressed through the "foreign occupation force."

> *"Nothing has been respected. No real negotiations towards a ceasefire have taken place. The exclusive control of the air was used to support the insurgents. Protection of civilians was the pretext to justify any operation.... It was no longer a question of protection, but of regime change.... The principle of 'responsibility to protect' died in Libya, just as 'humanitarian intervention' died in Somalia in 1992."(Pommier, 2011, p.1079).*

Not only the legality of the intervention was questioned, but also its execution and the amount of force used against civilians and non-combatants were subject to criticism. This is evident through the negative effects mirrored by the high number of casualties. The intervention went beyond the mandate to "protect civilians", it was an entry point for foreign interventions (Forte, 2013: 242). According to Paris (2014) NATO's operation was scaled for regime change rather than protecting the civilian population. Also, NATO "sided with the anti-Gadhafi rebel forces by proving them air cover and supplying them with arms and ammunition, primarily by France" (Nurruzzman, 2015). In an interview, Noam Chomsky criticized the Libyan intervention saying:

> *"There was no effort to institute a No-fly zone. The triumvirate at once interpreted the resolution as authorizing direct participation on the side of the rebels. A ceasefire was imposed by force on Qaddafi's forces, but not on the rebels. On the contrary, they were given military support as they advanced to the West, soon securing the major sources of Libya's oil production, and poised to move on" (Vasiliki 2011: p200).*

Other critics of the NATO mission were related to destroying facilities indispensable to the survival of the civilian population. This is clear in the NATO bombing of the Great Man-Made River; severely affecting the civilian access to water (HRI, 2011).

The discussion above reflects that the intervention in Libya was focused on the regime change rather than the humanitarian conditions in Libya. Measuring the success of the intervention means measuring the impact of the act on human security. The intervention not only deteriorated human security but also led to a civil war, to insurgency, and to the growth of the Islamic State. "Implementation of R2P must be reformed to address these unintended negative consequences and the dynamics underlying them. Only then will R2P be able to achieve its noble objectives" (Kuoerman, 2013).

In 2014, with no boots on the ground, Internationals were evacuated to Tunisia. The EU Border Management Assistance Mission in Libya (EUBAM Libya) was relocated to Tunisia and the UNSMIL was also relocated.

***Demobilization, Disarmament and Reintegration DDR***

Demobilization, disarmament and reintegration were considered since the beginning of the conflict. The 2011 arms embargo prohibited Libyans from exporting all arms and related materials, and obliged UN Member States to prevent the direct or indirect supply of all weaponry to Libya; however, little was achieved in this regard.

The first initiative that considered the DDR was the Warriors Affairs Commission WAC, which was established in October 2011 as part of the transitional government. The WAC was mandated to "register, rehabilitate and reintegrate those who fought in the front lines, defended cities and political prisoners into formal state institutions, private-sector enterprise or education" (LPRD, 2015: 4). Currently this program is known as the Libyan Programme for Reintegration and Development LPRD. However, according to Allen et.al. (2019), the current security conditions in Libya do not make a comprehensive DDR realistic.

***Counterterrorism***

Following the R2P and the DDR initiatives another phase of intervention started that was a clear breach of the arms embargo. This was justified by counterinsurgency and war on the Islamic State.

However, this phase is characterized by different foreign forces engaged, some on the side of the UN recognized government and others on the other part of the conflict.

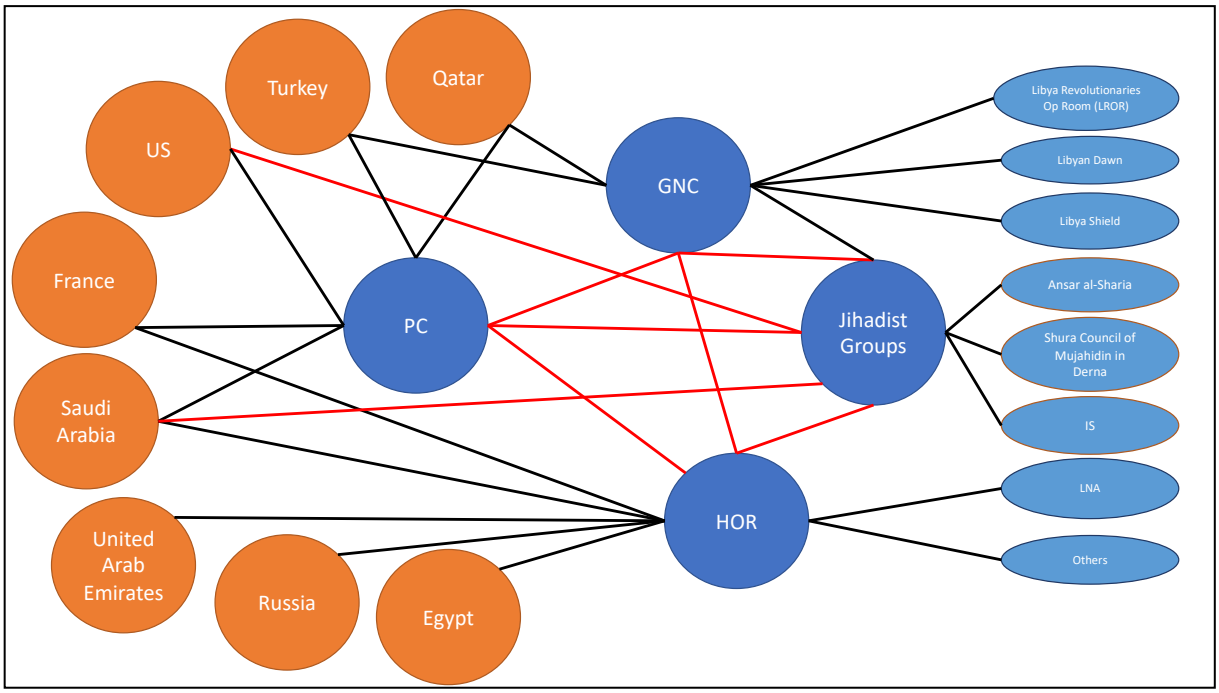
After the toppling of Gadhafi, and following the end of the Unified Protector mission, low level counterterrorism efforts started through training or intelligence sharing (Anaizi, Dotolo & Lakehal-Ayat, 2015). These initiatives included the European Border Mission Libya (EUBAM) that was established on May 2013 under the Common Security and Defense Policy (CSDP) to "support the capacity of Libyan authorities to enhance the security of their land, sea and air borders in the short term and to develop a broader Integrated Border Management (IBM) strategy in the long term" (EU, 2019). Americans provided intelligence support and trained Libyan Special Forces (Anaizi, Dotolo & Lakehal-Ayat, 2015).

***Counterinsurgency***

Following the formation of the GNA, on May 2015, Sirte fell to the Islamic State. On August 2016 the Pentagon announced Operation Odyssey Lightning that will join the GNA in its war against the IS. Supporting operations against the Islamic State include Kuwait, Qatar, Turkey, Jordan, and Bahrain. This operation was reinstated on January 2018 at the request of the Libyan government to strike Islamic State camps outside Sirte.

Violence escalated since the conflict started. Counterinsurgency has not decreased this conflict; on the contrary, the level of violence has increased. During the conflict support was provided for the different parties either internally or externally and either physically or financially. Different lines of communications were initiated either as rivals or supporters. Figure (50) illustrates the network of relationship between the different players on the ground. The various players on the ground strive to accomplish their objectives; the officially announced and the hidden agendas; these contradict in many cases the objectives of the other parties. Therefore, the numerous players created chaos and a loss of human security.

Figure 50: **Network of Insurgents and Counterinsurgents**




Source: own design

At the outset of the new conflict the decision to intervene in Libya came with many odds. Initially, the two countries that pushed towards intervention were France and the United Kingdom. The US was first split on the issue, but then the decision was made to support the intervention, which then had the leading role. The role of the US started with a firm decision and decisive intervention against Haftar. There was a great deal of irony in the US siding with an Islamist coalition against Haftar, who is as anti-Islamist and also a US citizen. However, the complexity of the situation was evident when Trump praised Haftar for combating terrorism and safeguarding Libya's oil, which gave a "de facto US support for Haftar's Advance on Triploi" (Megerisi, 2019). "He [Haftar] can count on a wide array of international patrons, which includes Egypt and the UAE and, more recently, Russia, though Putin's support for the Libyan Field Marshall." (Toaldo, 2017).

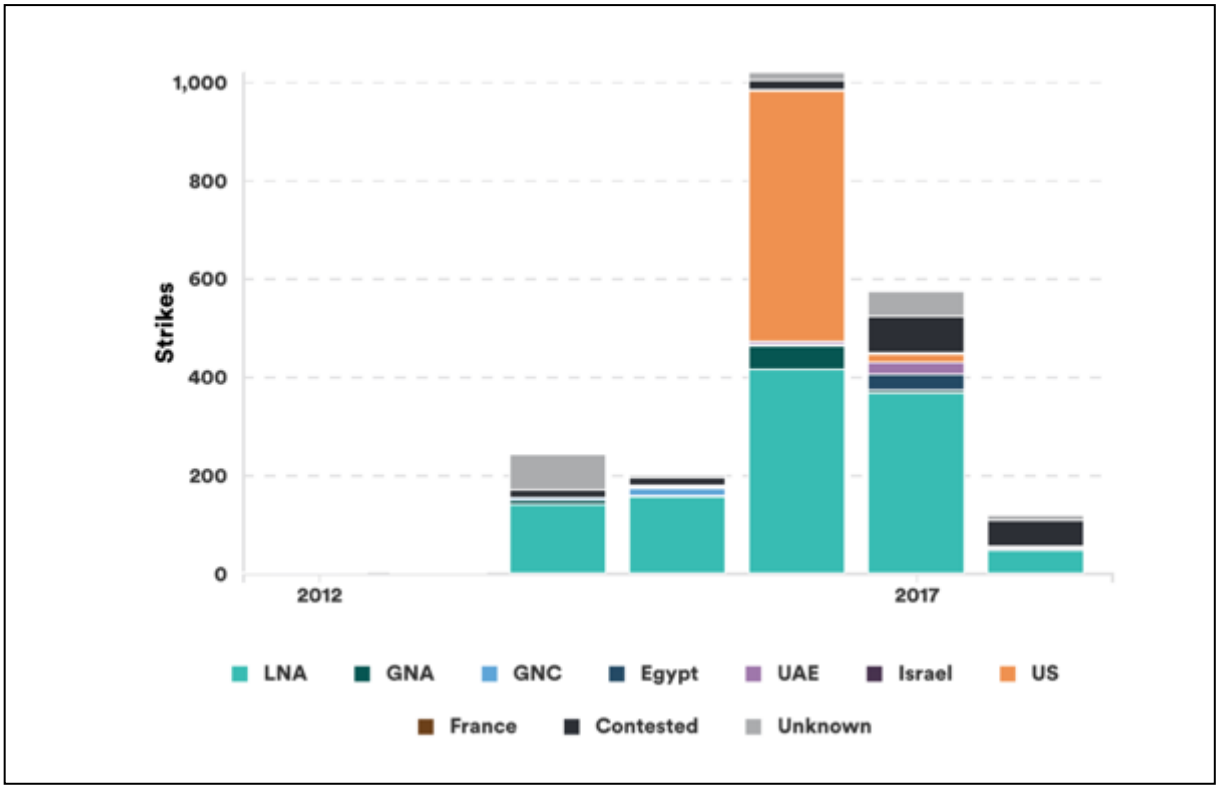
The support of the Arab nations "undercut political criticism of the intervention as neo-colonialism" (Boeke & van Zuijdewijn, 2016: 26). The support of the Arab nations was through agreement among the Arab League who supported the attack on Libya in 2011.

Turkey and Qatar played a significant role in supporting the rebels since the rise of the conflict. Turkey allowed establishing Turkish-based Libyan networks and took actions to oppose Haftar's advance. Qatar on the other hand shifted to the financial support (Megerisi, 2019).

In 2011 the UK deployed its first *International Stabilization Response Team* ISRT. The ISRT focused on five thematic areas: political settlement, security and justice, basic and social services, economy and infrastructure. A sixth thematic area was the communication and engagement, which was identified in the interim findings and was a critical enabler of the other five (ISRT, 2011).

In general, the two opponents formed alliances and militias. On one side there is the Arab nationalists and federalists led by General Khalifa Hafter and supported by Egypt, the United Arab Emirates and Saudi Arabia. On the other side there is a loose coalition of Islamists supported by the Amazigh tribes with support from Qatar Turkey and Sudan. Figure (51) below illustrates strikes in Libya by year and belligerent showing the different players in action.

Figure 51: **Strikes in Libya by year and Belligerent**



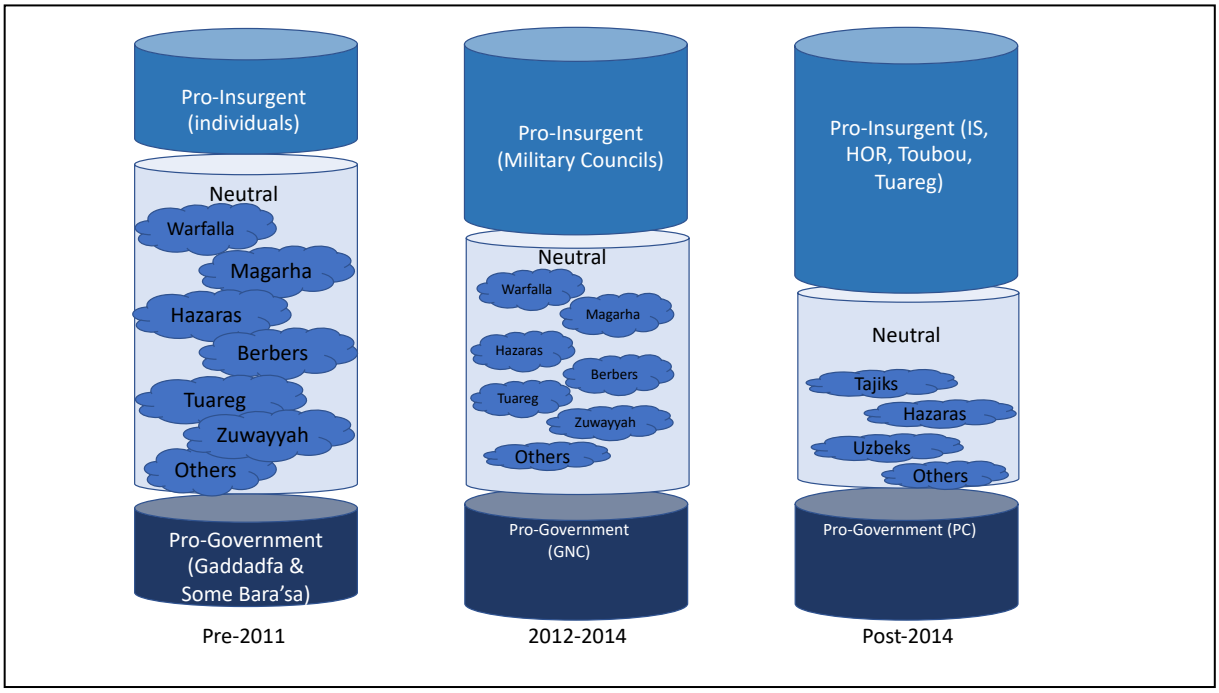

Source: New America (2019) [43]

[43] https://www.newamerica.org/international-security/reports/airstrikes-and-civilian-casualties-libya/the-conflicts-in-libya-2011-2018/ Accessed January 15, 2020.

## Vicious Cycle

Tribalism has been the basis on which the Libyan societal structure was formed. This has been maintained throughout the history of Libya and currently this is the basis on which the conflict is structured. However, the percentage of those engaged in the conflict is growing with time. Figure 52 below illustrates the difference in the structure pre-Gadhafi, between 2012 and 2014, and post 2014.

Figure 52: **Community Structure in Libya between insurgency and counterinsurgency**




Source: own design

The support of the different parties has also led to the centrifugal force.

> *"The competition between forces backed by Qatar and Turkey on the one hand, and by Egypt, the UAE, Jordan, and Saudi Arabia (and later, Russia) on the other hand, played a substantial role in the ultimate splitting of the country into two governments in June 2014, neither of which controlled much territory outside their respective capitals of Tripoli in the west and Tobruk in the east. The decision by ISIS to enter Libya soon thereafter and to supplement the largely domestic al-Qaeda*

*entities and their affiliates with foreign fighters from Syria and Iraq focused the attention of these regional actors." (Winer, 2019, p. 10)*

The centrifugal force affecting the individuals and groups in Libya could be calculated according to the centrifugal force formula:

$$F_c = \frac{(S \times W)v^2}{r} \qquad (1)$$

where

$F_c$ = centrifugal force (it is the force that people feel disturbs all stability and their human security)

$v$ = violence level during the conflict; originally this is the velocity. Since the spark of the conflict level of violence used increased.

$s$ = support provided to the poles (internal and external), not only did the support increase but also it was complex to the extent that it was contradictory; where formally announced support was different from the real agendas. The support came from governments and individuals.

$w$ = the willingness to control the government, the analysis of the insurgents showed individual and group interests to control the government.

$r$ = is the ratio of those engaged in the conflict to the total population; the number of those engaged in the conflict increased by time not only between the insurgents and the government but also amongst the insurgent groups who were fighting for tribal survival and insurgents survival.

With an increasing violence level ($v$), support provided by the poles ($s$), willingness to control the government ($w$), and number of those engaged in the conflict to the total population; the centrifugal force ($F_c$) increased to an alarming level.

## Impact of the Vicious Cycle

According to the vicious cycle model, an unrestrained particle would leave its orbit under the impact of the centrifugal force; the situation also leads to deteriorated human security. This section illustrates how this impact is evident and clear in the Libyan case.

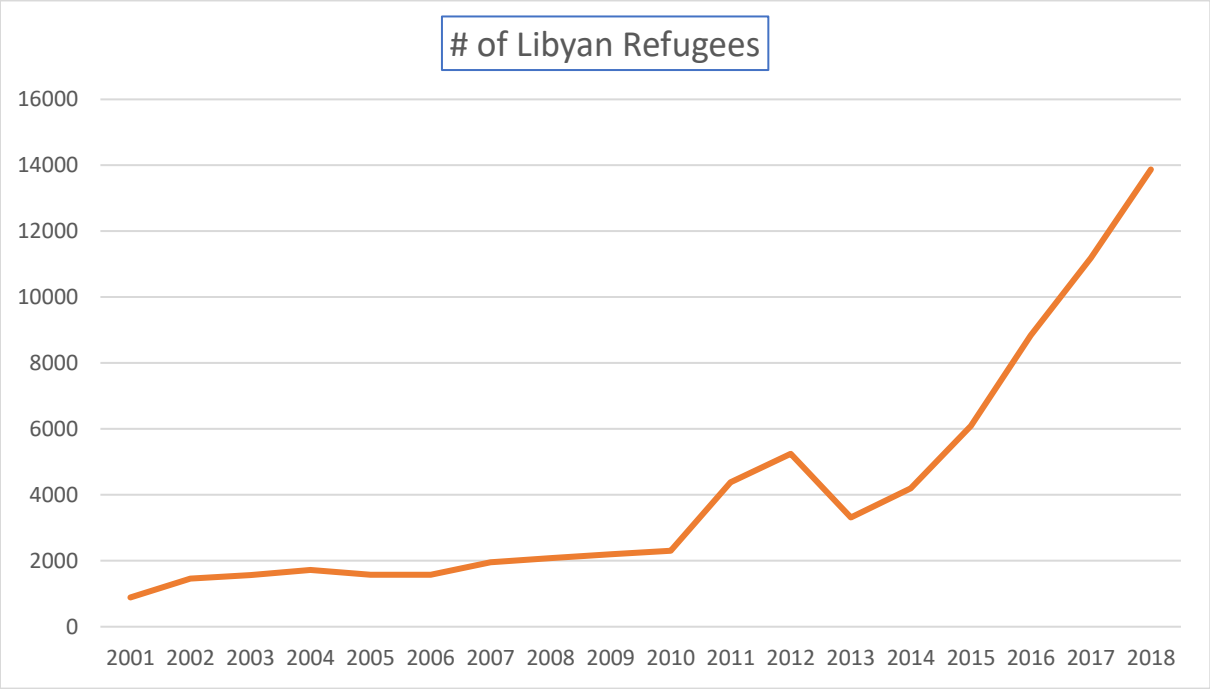
The exodus of refugees started since the toppling of Gadhafi, and went through two phases. The first phase was the regime change itself, and the second one was after the second elections in 2014. This exodus is increasing drastically, as the level of conflict is increasing. Although the number of refugees in 2018 amounted to 13,874 (see figure 53 below), this does not reflect the real numbers as the Libyan refugees in the neighboring countries are not registered as refugees. According to the Libyan Ministry of Displaced People's Affairs of the Presidential Council the number of Libyan refugees in Egypt is around 500,000 while there are around 300,000 in Tunisia[44]. According to the UNHCR, the number of Libyans internally displaced as of 29 November 2019 amount to 301,407 while the returned IDPs amount 447,025. On the other hand, Libya hosts 46,126 registered and asylum seekers.

According to the UNHCR, in 2016, 887 Libyans crossed the Mediterranean and arrived in Italy. In 2017, despite the 34 per cent decrease in those crossing the Mediterranean 1,234 arrived in Italy (UNOCHA, 2019).

The vicious cycle model also illustrates that the centrifugal force leads to more fragmentation of the society. This has been apparent in the number of groups that were created following the end of the regime. This in turn creates different centers of mass and thus different centers of gravity, which creates a massive deterioration of human security resulting from competing positions of each. The following is a quick summary of the three human insecurity dimensions (community, political, and personal insecurity), with some insight around the other four dimensions (economic, food, health, and environment):

[44] Interview with IOM Official

Figure 53: **Refugee population 2001-2018**




Source: Raw data retrieved from World Bank statistics https://data.worldbank.org

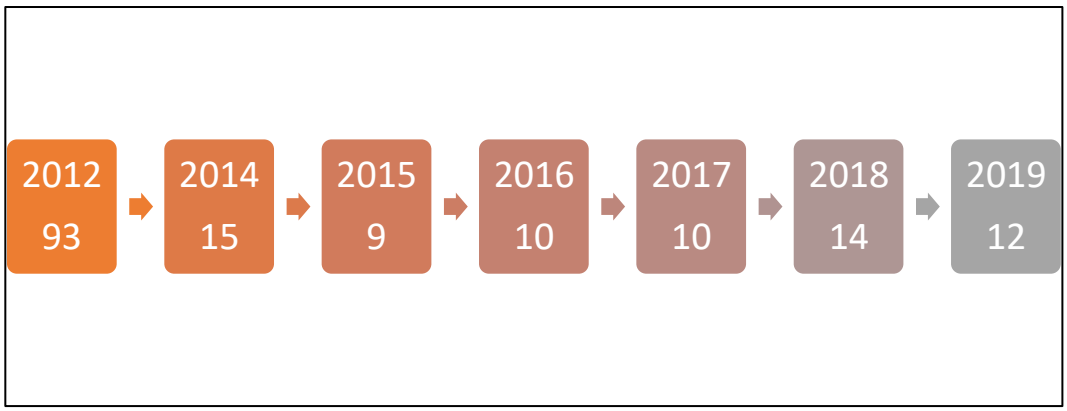
***Community Security***

Libya hosts a wide range of conflicts that results from different ethnic, historical, land disputes, grievances, attempts to gain political power, and crimes. In many cases the conflicts originate in more than one conflicting factor. The lack of trust amongst the people and between the different regions and the different militias has made the situation worst. This makes the conflict complex and not conducive to an intervention. "It is not possible to identify who is who in Libya, you find policemen working with different militias, it is not possible to identify their affiliation and direction, which makes counterinsurgency and counter-terrorism very complex. Communities in large are facing threats, women and children are targeted. You are a target because you are a woman or a child, you are a target because you come from a certain tribe, you are target because of an ideology or religious affiliation, the situation is complete chaos with lack of communal security" unidentified military attaché in Libya).[45]

[45] For confidentiality reasons, the military attaché refused his name to be revealed.

Ungoverned areas and the absence of state structures created an ideal opportunity for the expansion of terrorism. It paved the way for the expansion of the Islamic state. Terrorism risks were raised significantly in 2019, were Libya ranked number three amongst the world's riskiest states for terrorism (Marsh, 2019). According to the Global Terrorism Index Libya changed from a rank of 93 in 2012 to a rank of 12 in the impact of terrorism; in 2015 it was amongst the worst 10 countries (see Figure 54 below).

Figure 54: **Global Terrorism Index in Libya (2012-2019)**



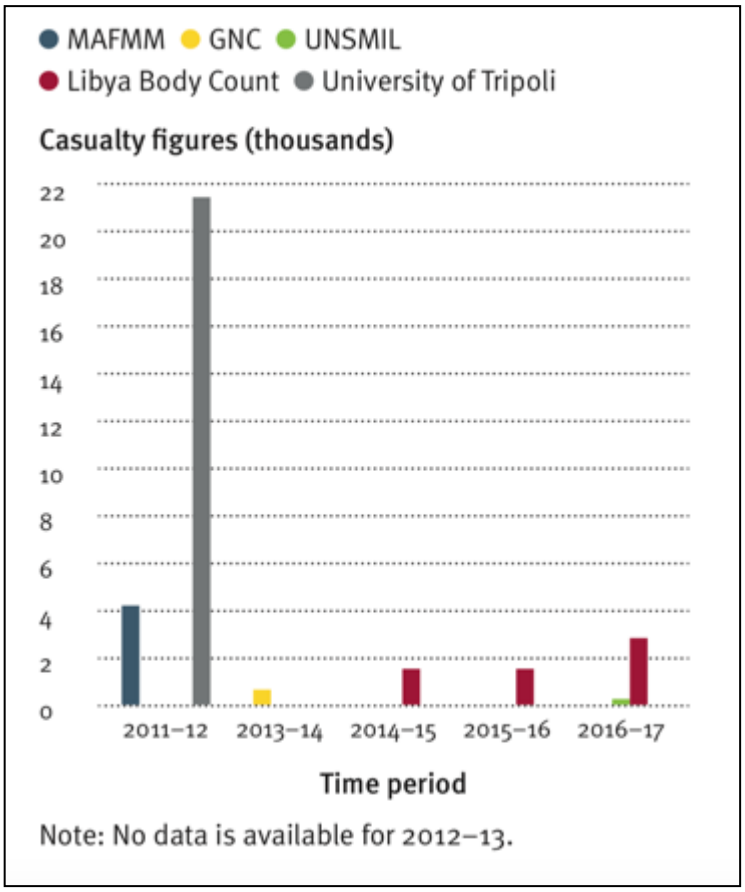

Source: Raw data retrieved from GTI Reports (2012 to 2019)

The diverging political orientations along with the hostile tribal relations have intensified the violence within the different communities. Communities faced threats of killings, looting, property destruction and forced displacement while the UN failed to protect civilians and to challenge the ongoing abuses. Crimes against humanity and mass atrocities are increasing with impunity.

"Statistics are missing in Libya, International Organizations are conducting their studies, but results are not revealed. There is no source of accurate data that NGOs can rely their work on."[46] This absence of data is apparent in the statistics of casualty figures that researchers rely on from different sources of data (see figure 55 below).

[46] Interview with Hala (Woman activist in Libya) 12, November 2019.

Figure 55: **Published Casualty Figures in Libya by actors 2011-2017**




Source: Salama, 2018

Although freedom of religion is not a recurrent factor in Libya it came to the fore since 2011. Witnesses have reported attacks on religious minorities including Sufi Ibadis and Christians, along with the destruction of religious sites. Since 2011, armed groups destroyed dozens of religious sites including mosques, shrines, tombs and libraries; they have also killed Sufi sheikhs table (6) below illustrates some of the documented incidents against Sufi sites.

These incidents might be random; however, there are some that form a norm. In 2017 religious edict (Fatwa) was issued by the Supreme Fatwa Committee under the General Authority for Endowments and Islamic Affairs, which stipulated that the 'Ibadis' a minority sect of Islam is "misguided and aberrant group."

Table 7: **Incidents against Sufi Sites in Libya**

| Date | Site | Location |
|---|---|---|
| August 2012 | Sidi Sha'ab Mosque | Tripoli |
| August 2012 | Uthman Basha Mosque along with 30 graves | Triploi |
| July 2017 | Four Sufi sites | Benghazi |
| October 2017 | Sidi Abu Gharara Sufi Mosque | Tripoli |
| November 2017 | Zawiyat Sheikha Radiya Sufi Mosque | Tripoli |

***Political Security***

Libya has three entities working as governments, a status that created competing institutions and is undermining the ability of the central government. This has resulted in the growth of the local governance. On the other hand, it fueled more conflict and insecurity.

Courts operate at reduced capacity and are closed down in some parts of the country. This has led to abusive arbitrary detentions. In cases where those courts are operating, they are burdened by process violations "including forced confessions, ill treatment and lack of access to lawyers" (Salah, 2019). Additionally, "the UN Human Rights Council shut down its commission of Inquiry on Libya in 2012 leaving inadequate public reporting on crimes committed by all sides in Libya" (Salah, 2019).

Prisons are operated under the authority of one or another of the rivals. They are also run by politically aligned armed groups that are outside the state's structure. Prisoners are guarded against attacks by armed groups. Prisons hold thousands of prisoners in long-term arbitrary detentions without charge. Inmates live in overcrowded facilities that are not originally designed as prisons. Death penalties are stipulated in 30 articles in the penal code "including for acts of speech and violation" (HRW, 2018).

> *"No one perceive the Tripoli - based government as credible. It is very dangerous to go out, to discuss anything. Religious discourse became*

*politicized. The problem is not about tribes, it is about our personal security versus them trying to control resources." (Khawla, 2020)* [47]

Libya is considered an entry point to Europe, and refugees from the African continent are stuck in Libya on their journey. Many holding camps are run by smugglers. These are overcrowded camps with lack of security and safety. People there are subject to sexual exploitation, sold as slaves and are suffering and dying from various diseases. Tens of thousands of refugees and migrants have been locked in Libyan detention centers after they were caught crossing the Libyan coast by the Libyan coast guards who receive massive support from the European Union. They are taken to underground rooms and tortured. Estimates range from 400,000 to one million detainees in overcrowded detention centers (DFAT, 2018b). "Inside Libya's detention centers, thousands of refugees and migrants are deprived of food, sunlight, and water, and many become victims of sexual exploitation and assault, forced labor, and even torture or slaying" (Hayden, 2019)

The dual and sometimes triple existences of parallel institutions have institutionalized the segmentation. It created multiple economic and social systems. The mechanism in which the LNA funds itself has affected the security community in Libya. It was able to develop parallel banking sector; a mechanism that waged economic war on the east's banking system. With this the LNA had access to state funds and is involved in smuggling activities (Global Initiative, 2019).

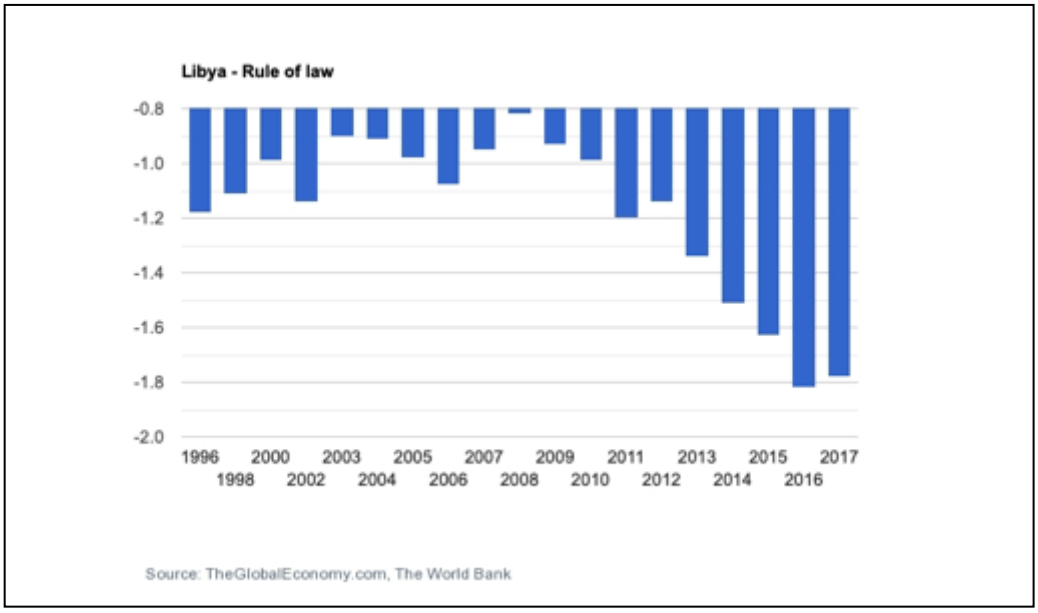
*"The impression of a now well-rooted political economy of predation is palpable, as if the country is fueling its own crisis with its own resources to the benefit of the few and the frustration of the many" (Salame, 2017).*

The World Bank measures what it calls the Worldwide Governance Indicators (WGI), where it reports on six broad dimensions of governance over the period 1996-2018: (I) Voice and Accountability; (II) Political Stability and Absence of Violence; (III) Government Effectiveness; (IV) Regulatory Quality; (V) Rule of Law; and (VI) Control of Corruption. These indicators help give an overview of the political security within the countries. In Libya it provides data of the rule

[47] Khawla Ahmed. (2020). Interview with a Libyan woman activist on January 27, 2020

of law index[48] from 1996 to 2017. The average index throughout the period was -1.18, with a minimum of -1.82 in 2016 and a maximum of -0.82 in 2008. Figure (56) above illustrates the Rule of Law index across the period 1996-2017.

Figure 56: **Rule of Law Index in Libya**

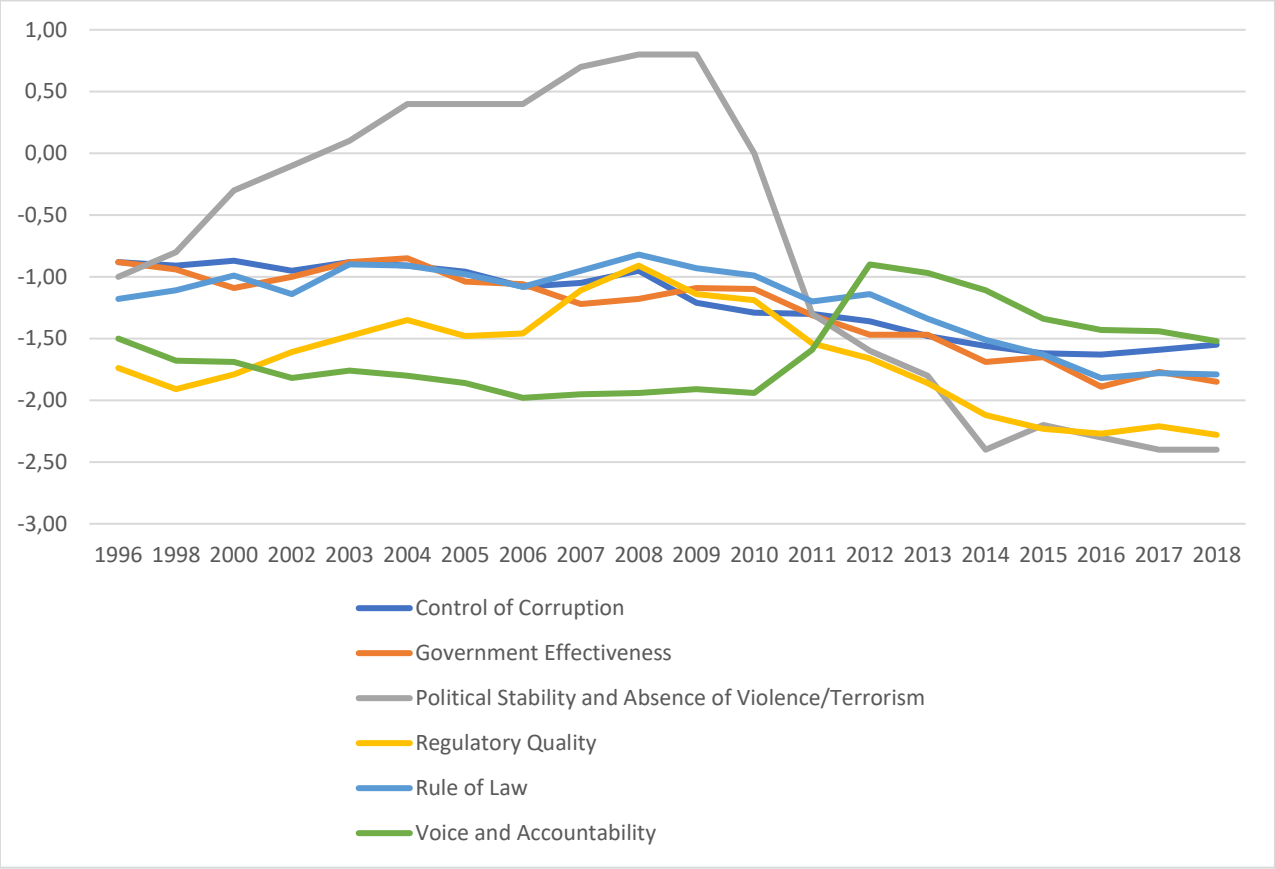



Source: The World Bank, 2018[49]

Figure (57) illustrates the different governance dimensions. It depicts that political stability and absence of violence was positive and reached its best conditions in the year 2008. Control of corruption, rule of law and regulatory quality; although negative, were in its best conditions in 2008. Voice and accountability did enhance in 2011; but declined since then.

[48] Rule of law index according to the World Bank ranges from -2.5 weakest to 2.5 strongest. The World Justice Project reports do not provide data for Libya.
[49] https://www.theglobaleconomy.com/Libya/wb_ruleoflaw/

Figure 57: **Governance Indicators in Libya 1996-2018**




Source: Raw data retrieved from World Bank WGI)[50]

***Personal Security***

The alarming factor in Libya is that criminal actors include both the militias and state-embedded actors. This has caused people to lose hope and trust in the government and all security forces imbedded within. "There is no one whom you can trust even police officers are not trustworthy"[51]

Organized crime has become the norm; it includes drug trafficking, human smuggling, human trafficking and illicit oil smuggling. This has caused Libya to have one of the highest criminality scores in Africa. It ranked 7th overall in Africa and the first in North Africa. Table (7) below illustrates the score and rank of the most common crimes.

[50] https://databank.worldbank.org/reports.aspx?Report_Name=WGI-Table&Id=ceea4d8b#
[51] Interview with Ahmed a youth activists 13 November 2019.

Table 8: **Crime Index in Libya**

| Crime | Score | Rank (worst) |
|---|---|---|
| Total criminality Score | 6.27 | 7th |
| Human trafficking | 9.5 | 1st |
| Human smuggling | 8.0 | 1st (same rank as Sudan & Eritrea) |
| Arms trafficking | 8.5 | 4th |
| Cannabis trade | 8.0 | 3rd (same rank as Tanzania and Nigeria) |
| Synthetic Drugs Trade | 7.5 | 2nd worst |

(Source: Raw data retrieved from (ENACT, 2019)

Although media seems to be open in Libya, people cannot express themselves openly and freely. There are more than 20 TV channels, along with radio stations, websites and extensive use of social media. However, it is very dangerous to freely express oneself. Several incidents of attacks on activists, journalists and media professionals have taken place. In many cases those people go missing with no possibility to be traced, others get killed or imprisoned (HRW, 2019).

Women in Libya are subject to sexual exploitation and discriminatory restriction. Women also face discriminatory policies as in the order issued in 2017 requiring adult women to have a male guardian with them when they travel (HRW, 2017). "Migrant women and girls are particularly vulnerable to rape and other forms of conflict-related sexual violence. Many are exposed to forced prostitution and sexual exploitation in conditions amounting to sexual slavery" (UN, 2019). Women face sexual violence while trafficked, under detention, and in front of their children. These cases are underreported for fear of stigmatization and rejection" (UN, 2019). Libya does not have a formal United Nations Security Council Monitoring and Reporting Mechanism (Security Council Resolution 1612) nor a Monitoring, Analysis and Reporting Arrangement (MARA) on conflict-related sexual violence (Security Council Resolution 1960) (UNICEF, 2019).

> *"Civil society organizations in Libya are very new, they were banned during Kadhafi, however, the security challenges limit the opportunities in which these organizations can serve.*

*Women's rights were a taboo, now it is possible to discuss these issues; however, the problem is the high level of violence.*
*We are all insecure, I don't feel secure because I am a woman, I don't feel secured because I am not from a certain tribe, I don't feel secure to speak about my rights. I don't feel secure because I cannot get proper health services, I do not feel secure because I cannot send my children to school." (Hala, 2019)*[52]

LGBTI rights are out of question in Libya. According to DFAT (2018b), at least three people were executed for alleged sodomy. LGBTI individuals receive high level of official discrimination and violence by police and militias.

Children's recruitment into armed groups, especially IS, in training camps are well documented. These are subject to sexual violence and have also committed suicide attacks (DFAT, 2018b). Table 9 below illustrates some of the violation statistics against children, though not all are documented and, in many cases, data is missing. These severe cases and the high level of children soldiers affect the entire population perception of security

Table 9: **Violations Against Children**

| **Violation against children** | **Value** |
|---|---|
| Recruitment and use of children | None verified |
| Killing and maiming if children | 77 (35 killed and 42 maimed) |
| Sexual violence against children | None verified |
| Attacks against schools and hospitals | 24 attacks (9 schools and 15 hospitals) |
| Abduction of children | None verified |
| Denial of humanitarian access | 12 incidents |

Source: UN (2020b)

[52] Interview with Hala a human rights activist 28 December 2019.

Healthcare workers have also been subject to arbitrary detentions. In many cases they are released only after paying a ransom. This is a risk that political activists, lawyers and human rights activists also face.

***Economic Security***

Despite the fact that Libya owns the tenth largest oil reserves in the world, one third of the population lives in poverty. This is due to the war and corruption. The gap between the official exchange rate and the black-market rate of the dinar to the US dollar led to "draining the country's reserves of hard currency and depreciating the value of the Libyan dinar, leading to an unprecedented liquidity crisis and a significant rise in commodity prices" (Global Initiative, 2019) and led to a rising inflation (Dirsus & Eaton, 2019). This increased poverty rate and unemployment which amounts to 17.3% in 2018 (trading economics, 2019).

LNA armed forces were able to control private and public facilities by force, demanding a share of economic assets. They have also used blackmail to get cash from public servants and bank employees. Furthermore, LNA was able to gain access to the country's cash reserves and control of illegal export businesses including oil export.

***Food Security***

Limited disposable cash and high prices affect food access. According to World Food Programme, "12 percent of the households in Libya are food insecure, leaving the majority of 70 percent vulnerable to food insecurity and 18 percent food secure" (WFP, 2018).

***Health Security***

Healthcare services remain a challenge, with many people lacking access to health services.

> *"2019 is characterized by the challenging conditions of the Libyan health system: lack of lifesaving medicines, insufficient experience and distribution of doctors in the remote areas, shortages of qualified nurses in rural areas, insufficient capacities to use the medical equipment where it does exist. The medical system is underperforming, especially at a primary health care level" (WHO, 2019).*

Over and above, the conflict in Libya is driving a mental health crisis. A critical issue that needs to support.

***Environment Security***

Limited water resources have been a stressing problem in Libya; it was resolved by the Great Man-Made River Project. However, bombing the water infrastructure has further limited access to drinking water affecting the national irrigation system that had been carefully built and maintained over decades (CEOBS, 2018).

Pollution problems have also been prevalent from oil and petrochemical industries, and oil storage facilities. However, this problem has further deteriorated during the conflict due to rivals targeting of those facilities (CEOBS, 2018).

> *"All aspects of our life are affected, even the air we breathe. Destroying oil pipelines not only affect prices but also leads to more pollution. The people are frustrated from the endless cuts in water and electricity" Abd Al-Lateef, 2019*[53]

When asked about their perceptions of human security in Libya a convenient sample provided the following fears that were categorized according to the three essential freedoms: freedom from fear, freedom from want and freedom to live in dignity.

Table 10: **Libyan Perceptions of Human Security**

| **Freedom** | **Fears identified by respondents** |
|---|---|
| Freedom from fear | Fear of being kidnapped, killed or raped when walking in the neighborhood<br>No hope of future<br>Destructions and demolitions<br>Lack of government capacity/ Bad governance<br>High potential to be a victim of violence anytime in the coming future<br>Youth feel terror, helplessness and fear<br>Gender based violence and sexual abuse |

[53] Interview with Abd Al-Lateef, December 20, 2019

| | |
|---|---|
| | Children traumatic stress |
| | No party provides security even the security forces |
| Freedom from want | Hunger and poverty |
| | No basic income ensured with high increase in prices |
| | Lack of government safety net |
| | Unemployment |
| | Bad economy |
| | No basic services provided, health and educational services are deteriorating |
| Freedom to live in dignity | Human rights degradation |
| | Discrimination against women |
| | Inhuman way of living |
| | No hope for a better future |

## Conclusion

The conflict in Libya is a form of multiple interconnected conflicts with many theaters. The governance system has become militarized and the policies created are exclusionary. Although tribal association has been critical in the Libyan conflict; it has been noted by scholars and practitioners that these are not static, and people seek the affiliation to the tribalism during conflict and when seeking security and better services.

In fact, the intervention along with the increase in the number of international players has caused an irreparable and irreversible situation that created the vicious cycle. This cycle increased the number of IDPs and refugees, and has also led to human insecurity.

The situation in Libya is a complete chaos. It has reached to the situation discussed by Hobbes "the state of nature" without a political state living in tribal communities.

# Chapter 8: Conclusions and Recommendations

This chapter presents the conclusions that were reached based on the literature review along with the analysis of the three cases based on the vicious cycle model presented. It also presents recommendations for counterinsurgency strategies along with recommendations for future research.

## Conclusions

The aim of this research was to gain a better understanding of the consequences of counterinsurgency following regime change by the international community. This has been addressed through the analysis of the three case studies that underwent similar phases in the conflict: civil war, regime change through international intervention, immense level of insurgency, third-party counterinsurgency, followed and accompanied by complete chaos with a state of nature (a condition without government according to Hobbes).

This thesis demonstrates that counterinsurgency following change of regime is heavily and negatively impacting the entrenchment of political stability, thus creating economic and social challenges along with extensive militarization of the polity, demographic implications, and deterioration of all dimensions of human security.

Throughout the analysis of the three cases it was evident that the insurgency was a status of social contract failure. However, the international intervention formed the base for a weak national unity and shared identity. The intervention has caused an irreparable and irreversible state of affairs thus jeopardizing national reconciliation.

Despite the differences between the three cases, they passed through the same three phases: ***regime change, insurgency and counterinsurgency***; and they ended up with similar results and societal conditions. The results included an **e*scalation of emigration*** level due to the lack of any support to the people on the ground and their lack of expectations for, and hope in the system. This was evident from the increasing rate of migration by time. The result was also an unprecedented ***creation of different parties, factions, opposition, and isolated communities***, the new floccules have minimal connections towards the state; however, their members' main connection and loyalty are directed towards the faction or the group rather than towards the state. This fragmentation led

to different centers of mass, thus creating different centers of gravity for the different segments of the society. The result is a ***massive deterioration in human security***; a life full of fear, with no needs fulfilled and a life of indignity. This fragmentation and diverse centers of mass also lead to the ***formation of a new community that is not similar to the original structure any more***. The one community is now fragmented into several new communities; communities that cannot live together, and communities that are now of different aspiration, different cultures and different level of wellbeing. Some of these new communities believe that the only way forward is claiming independence from the state, or maintaining the state of war. The result of the vicious cycle is ***complete chaos*** approaching the status that Hobbes called the "State of Nature." It is a failure of the social contract and a "war of all against all." The vicious cycle is accelerated by increasing the support provided to the poles, it ***increases in people the willingness to control the government, elevates the violence level used and increases the percentage of the population engaged in the conflict***. Hence, followed the formula suggested through the metaphor.

## Sequence of Events in the Three Cases

**How insurgency starts**

The incubation period of the insurgency's life span is not necessarily detected by the authorities, since it takes place below their attention threshold. However, it usually commences with establishing grievance and group identity, forming leadership, and starting to recruit and stockpile armaments. It starts out of grievance in areas with no governmental access or areas not served by the government; a complexed situation where lack of services is blended with an economic crisis. This strengthens the division of the local communities and creates more grievances; a fact that is utilized by the insurgents to recruit members, thus creating a basis for a reinforced insurgency seeking to mobilize the population, by forming a group identity centered on ethnicity, religion or political affiliation.

The heterogeneous societies in Afghanistan, Iraq and Libya created heterogeneous political structures and fragmented societies. This structuring and restructuring following regime change opened a Pandora's Box of internal conflict and fragmentation; this is evident in the resultant deep fragmentation. The sociocultural conditions led to the warlords gaining power and the rest denied all services leading to popular support to the insurgency. The connection to tribes, clans and communities were deeply strengthened following the spark of the conflict and during those

situations of insufficient and inappropriate services and lack of security. This drove the change from the national interest to the regional interest.

**Regime change**

The cases under study have all gone through regime change; a factor that was supported and implemented by external parties. In general, people in the three countries perceive that the governments are not credible and illegitimate, forced upon them by the external parties. According to the saying "if you break it you own it" if you bring down a government you will become the government – although not necessarily directly: it could be indirectly by influencing and guiding the new government. This has limited the possibility of a successful counterinsurgency. According to the US doctrine "Success in counterinsurgency (COIN) operations requires establishing a legitimate government" (US Army, 2014, p.199); however, this was not the case in the spark of the counterinsurgency. This illegitimacy empowered the insurgency, and helped increase popular support of the insurgents. It is evident that escalation of the insurgency followed the regime change in Afghanistan, Libya and Iraq.

The new regime itself generally is fragile. It lacks the capacity of power sharing and lack of accommodation of the different factions. The state was constructed on the basis of tribalism with a centralized system; thus, exclusion was evident more than under the previous regime.

The change of regime in the three cases has brought about change in personnel or in ruling party, but did not involve institution building. It did not involve formal and informal institutional change; it encouraged maintaining or reconfiguring the political elite, and institutionalized the society's fragmentation. The result is that the regime change createdd a paradoxical system in which a new government oscillates between striving to ensure its own survival by satisfying the citizens' aspirations and satisfying the intervener's agenda which undermines the credibility of the new regime.

In fact, interventions and regime changes were not analyzed as per the results or the costs. The result was a real vicious cycle. And the cost encompassed military fatalities along both the local and international armies and civilians.

**Escalating Levels of Insurgency**

The intensity level of the counterinsurgency increased following the regime change, with the population having close relationship to, and being protected by, the insurgents. This was possible when insurgents became the safe haven offering economic benefits, security from violence and basic services that were not delivered by the new regime.

In the three cases, the purpose of the international intervention was to support the new regime in response to the insurgency. However, in no time, this was the reason for the escalating intensity of the insurgency, as it was the international intervention itself that deprived the new regime of legitimacy and increased popular support (at least passive support) to the insurgents.

**How and why did Counterinsurgency Fail?**

Insurgency in the three countries is still ongoing; meaning counterinsurgency hasn't been effective. In fact, counterinsurgency failed. Common factors were analyzed in the three cases that explain counterinsurgency failure on a policy and procedural levels.

In the three cases counterinsurgency had no clear political aims; it was completely in contrast with Galula's principle to establish a free, independent and united country which is politically and economically stable and viable. The focus was mainly on defeating insurgents rather than defeating political subversion. The intervention was not based on winning the population; it supported the disempowerment of the local population. Furthermore, counterinsurgency in the three cases used a platform that was inappropriate for the realization of human security principles. On the contrary, it led to the deterioration of all human security dimensions. It aspired to a near-term stability that limited possibilities of sustainable stability but also did not resolve the issues over grievance, greed, power-sharing, and separatism.

Empowerment of both insurgents and the government was a main factor behind the failure of counterinsurgency. Allowing external interventions to support the two poles increased the intensity of conflict. Support was provided to both sides of the conflict (flow of funds, fighters and supplies) that not only strengthened the insurgency but even led to establishing shadow governments. In Iraq there was the demand for Kurdish independence, in Afghanistan it was the Taliban that was capable of providing services for the people, and in Libya two competing governments functioned alongside the UN-supported third government. All insurgents or shadow governments were able to provide services to their people while the government was unable or unwilling to provide the

services. Insurgents in the three cases started providing social and administrative services including health care, and even court system. This decreased the percentage of neutral population and increased the level of conflict and the number of those engaged in the conflict. As a result, the number of insurgent attacks, losses and fatalities increased drastically over time, with no trend of decrease.

**Human Security is the Response and the Answer**

The results of counterinsurgency after regime change have been analyzed from a human security perspective. In fact, human security was not the result –although it should have been. The result in the three countries was a status of human insecurity; people living in fear, want and indignity.

***Political Security***

Following the intervention, the three countries are barely more democratic or in better conditions than before the regime change. It created weak fragile systems with minimal services that benefit the new political elite. Indirectly, the intervention empowered insurgencies that claim to fight corruption and provide basic services. In general, systems created are characterized by political repression, human rights violations, absence of the rule of law, and political exclusion. A system that encourages corruption and is mistrusted by the people.

***Community Security***

The three countries reached a point of magnified division and marginalization. They witnessed a collapse and breakdown of the communities according to tribes, ethnicities and religions that reassured diverse identities and tribal or religious identities. This created interethnic tensions, magnified levels of crime, terrorism, escalated the level of conflict, multiplied corruption levels and increased level of fragmentation.

In general, threats were faced on the group level (ethnicity, religion or tribe) and on a personal level. Communities and their members were exposed to threats; threats to individual cultures and contexts, threats to group cultures and contexts, and threats to civil society cultures and contexts.

***Personal Security***

Physical violence became the norm in the three countries. People are exposed to violence by different parties including the insurgents, the governments and the shadow governments. Organized crime multiplied including drug trafficking, human smuggling, human trafficking and arms smuggling. Leaving people with no hope leads to leaving the country.

***Economic Security***

The three countries experienced flourishing of illicit economy at the expense of economic development. They all suffer economic stagnation or regression, increase in poverty level and high level of unemployment. The countries became largely dependent on financial, material and technical assistance.

In general, the result of the intervention is a complete chaos; even in cases of stability it is only temporary stability. In Iraq, although stabilization was perceived by the people, this was a temporary condition and conflict started again.

## Vicious Cycle Model Conclusion

The metaphor suggests that the people behave like particles within a fluid. Some people are fully dissolved within the system and conceive themselves as part of it, while others are not dissolved, but dispersed within it. Although the dispersed people are part of the system, they are separated when subject to external forces. Everyone in the system is subject to three forces: (1) Gravitational force to the state (perception of human security, support received, and the state's strength); (2) up thrust or uplift force (ambition and aspiration); and (3) the governments precaution measures to preserve the system (imposed whenever there is a difference between the individual's disposition and that of the government). There should be a balance between perception of human security and the ambitions and aspirations. Also, the government aspires to balance any movement within the system through its policies and precautions.

The vicious cycle starts upon the start of counterinsurgency following regime change. The force affecting is dependent on the following factors:

1. ***Support provided to the poles:*** by increasing the support provided to the poles whether internal or external, the centrifugal force increases. By time, the support provided to the

governments and the insurgents was increasing, whether by individuals, institutions, or countries. This support was increasing in all three cases.

2. ***The willingness to control the government:*** the new regime is striving to sustain its government. This is evident in the Iraqi system, in Afghanistan and especially in Libya; where governments remained effective even after failing the elections. Insurgents on the other hand were striving to overthrow government and gain control of the state.
3. ***Violence level during the conflict:*** violence levels have been increasing and the extensive use of armaments and attacks have been evident in the three cases. It was attacks on people and destroying objects that are indispensable for the survival of the people.
4. ***Number of those engaged in the conflict:*** with an increase in the level of those engaged in the conflict the centrifugal force increases. The percentage of neutral population declined by time, in many cases supporting the insurgents or the shadow governments; which has further weakened the government and increased the centrifugal force causing destabilization.

Since these are the four factors that drive the centrifugal force, this vicious cycle could be adjusted by conforming those factors. The support provided to the insurgents and the counterinsurgent should be controlled, inclusive political system should be utilized, the use of violence should be controlled, and the number of those engaged in the conflict should be analyzed and addressed.

This centrifugal force affected the system to behave as an ultracentrifuge; causing some elements to be separated from the system. Others remain within the system as they find alternative existential measures. Their alternatives might be participation in the conflict, or exploiting economic opportunities that might arise, or simply starting a new group of insurgents or a new political faction. The result of the centrifugal force includes increase in migration and internally displaced people; increase in connection towards the tribes, ethnicities or religions as opposed to the connection towards the state, different centers of mass are created leading to a massive deterioration in human security amongst the people, which has been evident in the analysis of the human security dimensions in the three countries; and the countries changed to multiple communities that are not in any way similar to the pre-intervention community. It is an irreversible situation leading to a collapse in the social contract.

## Verification of the Hypotheses

***Hypothesis 1: A divergent community structure combined with counterinsurgency following regime change in fragile states under asymmetric warfare degrades human security dimensions.***

An analysis of the current human security dimensions in the three countries as compared to the previous status prior to the regime change and the counterinsurgency, shows that there is a deterioration of community security with less social cohesion and more conflict. It degraded personal security as well, which was evident by the people's perception of lack of safety and security. It has also degraded political security through the lack of rule of law and increase in the level of corruption. Moreover, it degraded the other dimensions of human security including economic, food, health, and economic security.

***Hypothesis 1.1: A divergent community structure combined with counterinsurgency following regime change in fragile states under asymmetric warfare leads to increase in the level of conflict.***

The three countries started with a divergent community structure. Many marginalized communities were not real part of the structure, which led to insurgency followed by regime change and escalating levels of insurgency and counterinsurgency. This situation led to an increase in the level of conflict, number of attacks, and number of fatalities.

***Hypothesis 1.2: A divergent community structure combined with counterinsurgency following regime change in fragile states under asymmetric warfare leads to an increase in the number of people engaged in the conflict.***

The increase in insurgency and in the escalating number of emergent insurgencies increased the number engaged in the conflict. In the beginning they only consisted of the people who were supportive of the regime change. As the conflict progressed, the number of combatants increased dramatically, as a part of the neutral population begun to take sides.

***Hypothesis 1.3: A divergent community structure combined with counterinsurgency following regime change in fragile states under asymmetric warfare lead to a vicious cycle.***

A vicious cycle started in the three countries under analysis. As more financial and material support was provided to the insurgents and counterinsurgents whether by individuals or countries, both the vicious cycle and the centrifugal force accelerated. When support to the insurgents increased, support to the counterinsurgents also increased. The new regime was striving to sustain its government that was perceived as illegitimate by a significant segment of the population, while the insurgents were striving to overthrow the government and gain control. Violence levels also increased as a result and the number of those engaged in the conflict also increased.

***Hypothesis 2: The vicious cycle diminishes the level of cohesion within the community.***

Social cohesion amongst the communities deteriorated as a result of the vicious cycle. The ethnic, religious and tribal conflicts increased drastically. People felt threatened because of their affiliation to certain tribes, ethnicities, sects or religions. This has caused disruption in social networks and turned the loyalty of the people against the system and towards the tribe or sect.

Following the regime change there was an absence of real political leadership, leaving the mantle of leadership with the ethnic or tribal leaders who are using the troubled regions for their tribal or ethnic advantage. This has led to religious-radical or ethnic-radical movements; thus, disturbing social structure and social cohesion.

***Hypothesis 2.1: The vicious cycle increases the influx of refugees and IDPs***

The vicious cycle affects the people by increasing the influx of refugees and internally displaced people. It affects the population's connectedness with the system; thus, people behave like particles in an ultracentrifuge and many leave the system. This is evident in the three countries; where the number of refugees and internally displaced persons has increased since the counterinsurgency following the regime-change started.

***Hypothesis 2.2: The vicious cycle increases the possibility of separatism.***

In all three cases the vicious cycle escalated the fragmentation and disturbed the social network of the society to the point where the community reached an irreversible state of multiple disconnected communities. The centrifugal force that affected the system under this vicious cycle was a function of the violence used, the interference of the external parties, the population's willingness to control

the government, and the percentage of population engaged in the conflict. The result was more insurgents who perceived that they could not be part of the community as whole and sought independence.

***Hypothesis 3: The vicious cycle creates different centers of mass and degrades human security.***
The emergence of a non-homogeneous system led to the disturbance of mass distribution. In a fragile state under asymmetric warfare there are three types of mass: the pro-government, the neutral and the pro-insurgents. Each has a different mass and therefore a different center of mass. However, the center of mass for the system as a whole is far from the center of mass for the ideal situation. This affects the different dimensions of human security especially personal, community and political security.

***Hypothesis 3.1: The vicious cycle degrades personal security.***
The vicious cycle increased the level of human trafficking, and child labor and physical violence in all its forms, as compared to the situation before the regime change and increased during the lifetime of the new regime.

***Hypothesis 3.2: The vicious cycle degrades community security.***
The vicious cycle in the three countries increased inter-ethnic, religious and other identity-based tensions. It also increased crime and terrorism incidences as compared to the situation before the regime change and increased during the lifetime of the new regime.

***Hypothesis 3.3: The vicious cycle degrades political security.***
The vicious cycle increased the political repression and human rights violations as compared to the situation before the regime change and increased during the lifetime of the new regime. Moreover, the countries witnessed lack of rule of law and justice.

## Scientific Findings

This research has helped develop theoretical frameworks and identified models that could be used in future research in the area of human security

1. A divergent community structure, beset by counterinsurgency following regime change in fragile states under asymmetric warfare conditions degrades human security dimensions. The affected community's security diminishes social cohesion and increases the level of conflict. It deteriorates the personal security; thus, dwindling the feel of safety and security. Political security is also missed with the lack of rule of law and increase in the level of corruption. Moreover, it exhausts the other dimensions of human security including economic, food, health, and economic security.
2. The vicious cycle created as a result of external support both to the insurgents and to the government diminishes the level of social cohesion within the community and alters the community structure. The ethnic, religious and tribal conflict increased drastically. People feel threatened because of their affiliation to certain tribes, ethnicities, sects or religions. The vicious cycle disrupts social networks, loyalty to the tribe or sect increases against the loyalty towards the state and the nation. Following the regime change, there is an absence of real political leadership, leaving the mantle of leadership with the ethnic or tribal leaders who are using the troubled regions for their tribal or ethnic advantage. This generates religious-radical or ethnic-radical movements.
3. The emergence of a non-homogeneous system leads to the disturbance of mass distribution. The center of mass for the system as a whole is far from the center of mass for the ideal situation and leads eventually to an irreversible condition. The main results of the centrifugal force resulting from the vicious cycle include: increase in emigration and internally displaced people, increasing affinity to the tribes, ethnicities or religions, as opposed to affinity to the state, and different centers of mass are created leading to a massive deterioration in human security amongst the different people.
4. The physical metaphor of the vicious cycle is unique as the model used a simple analogy between human security under the influence of asymmetric warfare in fragile states and the intermolecular forces and Newtonian laws. It provides a proxy model that helps understand the relationship between different variables while mapping the structure of the two domains. The thesis utilized a process model that considers both the concepts and the processes. The centrifugal force in the three cases was dependent on the variables suggested in the metaphor; these include: the external support to the insurgents and the government, the willingness to control the government, the level of violence used, and the

percentage of the population engaged in the violence. The solution should be based on the factors defined in the vicious cycle model. Hence the following factors should be controlled: support provided to the poles, willingness to control the government, the violence level during the conflict, and the number of those engaged in the conflict.

5. The dissertation has suggested the insurgency life cycle that should be confronted in accordance to the phase in which insurgency operates. The model suggests that following the maturity phase insurgency will start the decline phase if its capacity is limited. However, if it is not defeated in this level it further develops and then will reach to the chronic level with more power, more capacity and more public support. This finding helps in defining the appropriate counterinsurgency strategy.

## Recommendations

Recommendations are presented here on four levels: future research, policy, education and training, recommendations to resolve the cases under analysis, and a new social contract:

### Recommendations for Future research

1. Conduct comparative research covering the countries that underwent similar conditions: insurgency, regime change, insurgency and counterinsurgency. This will help identify the trends by time.
2. Test the model for countries that did not experience regime change and understand the impact of counterinsurgency on human security in fragile states. This will help generalize the model of the vicious cycle.
3. Conduct deep analysis of the seven dimensions of human security rather than focusing on personal security, community security and political security.

### Policy Recommendations

1. ***Use the Inspect-Control-Protect mechanism of responsibility to protect.*** This ensures protecting the people by making sure that there is no empowerment of the competing poles. Examine interventions and support of the countries and individuals, control the support to the poles by imposing sanctions on those providing support to the poles, and then provide

protection to the people by empowering the government to enhance services provided to all. Interventions should be authorized and led by the UN .

2. ***Use an inclusive participatory governance approach:*** this is ensured by sharing information, dialogue with the community as a whole, and making decisions based on the consultation and dialogue with the public.
3. ***Control the level of violence:*** Violence creates more violence even when directed by international interventions aiming to counter the insurgency. Hence, interventions should be based on strengthening and empowering the systems rather than increasing the level of conflict.
4. Ensuring human security and equitable services: all interventions should be based on human security. Moreover, they should be focused on empowering the government to enhance service delivery.
5. COIN should start with state building, in which the role of the military should include tasks that are traditionally the responsibility of civilian organizations.
6. COIN doctrines should be analyzed to ensure sensitivity to human security in the strategies, objectives.
7. Integrate social cohesion into human security and community security programs.
8. Intervention should be based on empowering the government, and ensure a good governance system that promotes equity and protection of fundamental rights.
9. Interventions should focus on full integration of civil society to help improve service delivery, ensure social cohesion.

## Recommendations for Education and Training

1. Military and Security educational courses should embed “human security” as a cross cutting subject to be included and sensitized upon.
2. Military personnel should receive training in human security prior to their deployment

## Recommendations to Resolve the Conflict in the three cases

Any solution of the three cases should consider the nucleus of the system; including the center of mass and the social structure. As a result, the solution should include building a new social contract amongst the different parties according to the suggested metaphor:

1. Control the support provided to the poles: UN Responsibility to Protect should be based on controlling the support of the different poles. Inspect, Control, Protect: Inspect interventions and support, control the support to the poles by imposing sanctions on those providing support to the poles. Interventions should be authorized and led by the UN.
2. Control the insurgents' willingness to control the government. An inclusive participatory governance approach should be enabled through sharing information, dialogue with the community as a whole, and making decisions based on the consultation and dialogue with the public. Any intervention should be a community-based approach to security by involving civil society organizations in identifying risks and planning for implementation. This could help improve relation with the state while reassuring state legitimacy.
3. Control the violence level during the conflict. Violence creates more violence, even when directed by international interventions aiming to counter the insurgency. Hence, interventions should be based on strengthening and empowering the systems.
4. Control the number of those engaged in the conflict. Ensuring human security for all and providing services for all, which will minimize the number of those involved in the conflict.

## Recommendation for a New Social Contract

Following the failure of the social contract and the deterioration of human security especially the community security and the social cohesion, a *new system is needed and a new social contract is vital to reconstruct the new state.* In fact, the possible options include the following:

1. ***Accept partitions (autonomy or independence)*** based on ethnicities, religions and or tribes. However, this solution doesn't clean bitterness and hatred; rather it maintains unresolved boundaries and disputes.
2. ***Build a new social contract based on a strong authoritarian government***, which will help control the different sects and ethnicities and keep the peace. However, this solution is not

sustainable as the willingness and awareness of the people has increased to a level that will lead to new levels of conflict.

3. ***Build a new social contract based on a Consensus Democracy:*** Transforming the state from the "state of nature" to a new agreement and new social contract based on consociational. This is a form of government based on the preoperational representation or grand coalition. "[A]n institutionalized superstructure constituting the arena for formal and informal bargaining between segmented elites, based on a fundamental willingness of the actors to follow the rules of the game" (Butenschøn, 1985).

Hence, the suggested solution to get out of the vicious cycle is to build a new social contract based on a "consociational." This ensures broader participation and accurate representation, which protects minority interests and rights, and thus leads to minimizing exclusion.

# List of Figures

# List of Tables

# Abbreviations

| | |
|---|---|
| AI | Amnesty International |
| CFC | Civil-Military Fusion Centre |
| CIMIC | Civil Military Cooperation |
| CPA | Coalition Provisional Authority |
| CSDP | Common Security and Defense Policy |
| DDR | Demobilization, Disarmament and Reintegration |
| EC | European Commission |
| EU | European Union |
| EUBAM | European Border Mission Libya |
| GBV | Gender Based Violence |
| GDP | Gross Domestic Product |
| GIZ | German Technical Cooperation |
| GMCIR | General Military Council of Iraqi Revolutionaries |
| GNC | General National Congress |
| GPC | General People's Congress |
| H.N | Haqqani Network |
| HOR | House of Representatives |
| HRW | Human Rights Watch |
| IA | Islamic Army group in Iraq |
| IBM | Integrated Border Management |
| IDPs | Internally Displaced Persons |
| IMF | The International Monetary Fund |
| IR | International Relations |
| IS | Islamic State |
| ISAF | International Security Assistance Force [] |
| ISIL | Islamic State in Iraq and the Levant |
| ISIS | Islamic State of Iraq and Sham |
| ISKP | Islamic State Khorasan Province |
| JRTN | Jaysh Rajaal al-Tariqa al-Naqshabandia |
| LNA | Libyan National Army |
| LPA | Libyan Political Agreement |
| LPRD | Libyan Programme for Reintegration and Development |
| NATO | North Atlantic Treaty Organization |
| NGOs | Non-Governmental Organizations |
| NTC | Libyan National Transitional Council |
| OECD | Organization for Economic Cooperation and Development |
| OECD-DAC | Organization for Economic Cooperation and Development-Development Assistance Committee |
| OEF | Operation Enduring Freedom |
| OUP | Operation Unified Protector |
| OUP | Operation Unified Protector |

| | |
|---|---|
| PDPA | People's Democratic Party of Afghanistan |
| PRT | Provincial Reconstruction Teams |
| R2P | Responsibility to Protect |
| RCC | Revolutionary Command Council |
| SSR | Security Sector Reform |
| UN | United Nations |
| UNAMA | United Nations Assistance Mission in Afghanistan |
| UNDP | United Nations Development Program |
| UNHCR | United Nations High Commissioner for Refugees |
| UNICEF | United Nations Children's Emergency Fund |
| UNOCHA | United Nations Office for the Coordination of Humanitarian Affairs |
| UNSC | United Nations Security Council |
| UNSMIL | United Nations Support in Libya |
| US | United States of America |
| USAID | United States Agency for International Development |
| WAC | Warriors Affairs Commission |
| WASH | Water, Sanitation, and hygiene |
| WFP | World Food Program |
| WHO | World Health Organization |

# References

**Books**


Addison Tony (2000). *Aid During and After Conflict*. (In) Finn Tarp (ed). Foreign Aid and Development: Lessons Learnt and Directions for the Future. pp. 306-307, Routledge New York

Aksu, E. (2003). *The United Nations, intra-state peacekeeping and normative change.* Manchester, New York: Manchester University Press.

Almond, G & Coleman, J.S. (1960). *The politics of the developing areas*. Princeton, NJ, Princeton University Press.

Axelrod, Robert and Michael, D. Cohen. (2000). *Harnessing Complexity: Organizational Implications of a Scientific Frontier*. New York: Simeon & Schuster.

Barfield, Thomas (2010). *Afghanistan: A Cultural and Political History*. Princeton Studies in Muslim Politics, Princeton: Princeton University Press.

Betts Alexander et.al (2015). *Refugee Innovation: Humanitarian innovation that starts with communities*. Humanitarian Innovation Project, University of Oxford Refugees Studies Centre.

Binder, Leonard, James S. Coleman, Joseph LaPalombara, Lucian W. Pye, Sidney Verba, and Myron Weiner. (1971). *Crisis and Sequences in Political Development*. Princeton: Princeton University Press.

Boeke, Sergei & van Zuijdewijn Jeanine de Roy (2016). *Transitioning from Military Interventions to Long-Term Counter-Terrorism Policy: The Case of Libya (2011-2016).* Leiden University - Institute of Security and Global Affairs.

Breakey, Hugh (2012), 'The Responsibility to Protect: Game Change and Regime Change.' Chap. 1 (In) Charles Sampford, Angus Francis and Vesselin Popovski (eds). *Norms of Protection: Responsibility to Protect, Protection of Civilians and Their Interaction*. Geneva: United Nations University. p. 11-39.

Brooker P. (2010) The Motives of Insurgency. In: *Modern Stateless Warfare*. Palgrave Macmillan, London.

Buzan, B. (1991). *People, States and Fear: An Agenda for Security Analysis in the Post- Cold War Era.* Brighton: Weatsheaf.

Buzan, B., Weaver, O, de Wilde, J. (1998). *Security: A New Framework for Analysis*. Lynne Rienner Publishers, Boulder, London.

C.J. Friedrich (ed.) (1949). *The Philosophy of Kant*, New York: Modern Library.

Call, Charles T. (2007). Ending Wars, Building States. In: Call, Charles T. and Vanessa Hawkins Wyeth (eds). *Building States to Build Peace*. Lynne Rienner Publishers, Boulder.

Carbonell, Jaim & Minton Steven (1983). *Metaphor and Common Sense Reasoning*. Carnegie Mellon University. Pittsburgh.

Chesterman Simon. (2001). *Just War or Just Peace? Humanitarian Intervention and International Law*. Oxford University Press, Oxford, NewYork.

Clausewitz, Carl Von (1976). *On War*. Edited and translated by Michael Howard and Peter Paret (Princeton: Princeton University Press).

Corn, Geoffrey S. (2011). Extraterritorial Law Enforcement or Transnational Counterterrorist Military Operations. (In) Banks, William C. New Battlefields, *Old Law: Critical Debates on Asymmetric Warfare*. Columbia University Press, New York.

Cornelis, Elena Atanassova.(2006). Defining and Implementing Human Security: The Case of Japan. In Debiel Tobias & Werthes Sascha (Eds.) *Human Security on Foreign Policy Agendas: Changes, Concepts and Cases.* Institute for Development and Peace, University of Duisburg-Essen.

Dinstein, Y. (2005). *War, Aggression and Self-Defence*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Dye, T.R. (2000). *Top-Down Policy Making*. New York: Mc Graw-Hill.

Easton, David (1965). *A systems Analysis of Political Life*. New York: John Wiley.

Faber, Mient Jan (2008). Human Security from Below: Freedom from Fear and Lifeline Operations. In Boer Monica Den & Wilde Jaap De (Eds). *The Viability of Human Security*. Amsterdam University Press, Amsterdam.

Forte, M. (2013). *Slouching Towards Sirte*. Chicago: Baraka Books.

Frisch, Ethan (2011). Insurgencies are Organizations Too: Organizational Structure and the Effectiveness of Insurgent Strategy. *Peace and Conflict Review*. 6(1): 1-23.

Fukushima, Akiko (1999). *Japanese Foreign Policy: The Emerging Logic of Multilateralism*. Palgrave Macmillan UK.

Galula, David (1964). *Counter Insurgency Warfare: Theory and Practice*. Frederick Praeger NY.

Gildenhuys, J.S.H. (1988). *South African public administration: past, present and future*. Pinetown: Owen Burgess.

Ginty, Mac. *Routledge Handbook of Peacebuilding*. Routledge, USA.

Glaser, Charles L. (2010). Realism. In Collins Alan (Eds.) *Contemporary Security Studies*. Oxford University Press, Oxford.

Glaser, Charles L. (2016). Realism. In Collins Alan (Eds). *Contemporary Security Studies*. 4th ed. Oxford, University Press.

Gurr, T. R. (1971). *Why men rebel?* Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Gventer, Celeste (2014). Minting New COIN: Critiquing Counter-insurgency Theory. In Jones David (Eds) The New Counter-Insurgency Era in Critical Perspective, Palgrave Macmillan, London.

Haddad, Fanar (2014). Sectarian Relations and Sunni Identity in Post-Civil War Iraq. (In) Potter, Lawrence G. (ed) Sectarian Politics in the Persian Gulf. Oxford University Press, New York.

Hagger, Nicholas (2009). The Libyan Revolution: Its Origins and Legacy A Memoir and Assessment. O Books, John Hunt Publishing Ltd., UK.

Hampson, Fen Osler et. al.(2002). Madness in the Multitude: Human Security and World Disorder. Don Mills: OUP

Hearn, Roger (1999). UN Peacekeeping in Action: The Namibian Experience. Nova Science Publishers, Inc. New York.

Harsch, Michael F. (2015). The Power of Dependence: NATO-UN Cooperation in Crisis Management. Oxford University Press, Oxford.

Hobbes, Thomas. (2001). Of Man, Being the First Part of Leviathan. Vol. XXXIV, Part 5. The Harvard Classics. New York: P.F. Collier & Son, 1909–14; Bartleby.com

Hopf, Ted (2002). Social constructivism of International Politics: Identities & Foreign Policies, Moscow, 1995 and 1999. Cornell University Press, USA.

Ian Brownlie (1974). Humanitarian Intervention. (In) John N. Moore (ed). Law and Civil War in the Modern World. Baltimore, Maryland: John Hopkins University Press.

IPA (1984). *Peacekeepers Handbook*. International Peace Academy, Pergamon Press, USA.

Jackson, Robert & Sorensen, Georg (2006). *Introduction to International Relations Theories and Approaches*. 3rd edition. Oxford university press, 2006.

Jenne, Erin K. (2007). *Ethnic Bargaining: The Paradox of Minority Empowerment*. Cornell University Press: Ithaca & London.

Zoltán Jobbágy, Asymmetric Warfare - Evolutionary Roots. In: Álmos Péter Kiss (Ed) *Asymmetric Warfare Conflict of the Past, the Present, and the Future*. Proceedings of the Conference in Budapest, Hungary, 9-10 November 2016. NUPS Dialog Campus 2017. http://m.ludita.uni-nke.hu/repozitorium/handle/11410/10997

John, J. McCuen (1966). *The Art of Counter-Revolutionary War; The Strategy of Counter-Insurgency*. Harrisburg, PA: Stackpole Books.

Jones, Calvert (2009). Exploiting Structural Weaknesses in Terrorist Networks: Information Blitzkrieg and Related Strategies. (In) Jr. David & McKeldin T.R. (eds). *Ideas as Weapons: Influence and Perception in Modern Warfare*. Potomac Books, Washington D.C.

Kaldor, M. 1999. *New and old wars: Organized Violence in a Global Era*. Cambridge: Polity.

Katzenstein, Peter J. (1996). *Cultural Norms and National Security: Police and Military in Postwar Japan*. Cornell University, USA.

Kawczunski, Daniel (2011). *Seeking Gaddafi. Libya, the West and the Arab Spring*. Biteback Publishing Ltd. London.

Kilcullen, David J. (2001). *Counterinsurgency*. New York: Oxford University Press.

Kilcullen, David J. (2010). Counterinsurgency. New York: Oxford University Press.

Kiss, Peter A. (2014). Winning War amongst the People. Potomac Books: University of Nebraska Press.

Kott, Alexander & Skarin, Bruce (2010). *Approaches to Modeling Insurgency*. Kott, A., & Citrenbaum, G. (Eds.). Estimating Impact: A Handbook of Computational Methods and Models for Anticipating Economic, Social, Political and Security Effects in International Interventions. Springer.

Lacher, Wolfram (2020). *Libya's Fragmentation: Structure and Process in Violent Conflict*. London; New York, NY: I.B. Tauris

Lama, M. (2010). *Human Security in India*. Dhaka: The University Press Ltd.

Lui, Andrew (2012). *Why Canada Cares: Human Rights and Foreign Policy in Theory and Practice*. McGill-Queen's University Press, Montreal & Kingston.

Mabon, Simon. & Royle, Stephen. (2017). *The origins of ISIS: the Collapse of Nations and Revolution in the Middle East*. London; New York, NY: I.B. Tauris & Co. Ltd.

Matusitz, Jonathan (2015). *Symbolism in Terrorism: Motivation, Communication, and Behavior*. Rowman & Littlefield, London.

McCord, Geoffrey (1999). *Contemporary Contractarian Moral Theory: The Blackwell Guide to Ethical Theory*. Edited by Hugh Lafollette, 247-267. Accessed February 6, 2019 from: http://philosophy.unc.edu/files/2014/07/Contractarianism.pdf

Metz, Steven (1993). *The Future of Insurgency. Strategic Studies Institute*, US Army War College. Accessed March 3, 2019 from: http://www.au.af.mil/au/awc/awcgate/ssi/metz.pdf

Mezran, Karim & Varvelli, Arturo (2017). *Libyan Crisis: International Actors at Play*. (In) Foreign Actors in Libya's Crisis. Mezran, Karim & Varvelli, Arturo (Eds). Atlantic Council.

ISPI. Accessed November 9, 2019 from: https://www.ispionline.it/it/EBook/LIBIA_2017/LIBIA_WEB.DEF.pdf

Mills, C.W. (1959). *The Power Elite*. Oxford: University Press.

Møller, Bjørn (2000), National, Societal and Human Security: General Discussion with a Case Study from the Balkans. Ed.: *What Agenda for Human Security in the Twenty-First Century? Conference Proceedings 27-28 November*, UNESCO, Paris.

Nagl, John (2005). *Learning to eat soup with a knife. Counterinsurgency Lessons from Malaya and Vietnam*. Chicago University Press, Chicago.

Nef, Jorge (1999). *Human Security and Mutual Vulnerability: The Global Political Economy of Development and Underdevelopment*. 2nd ed. International Development Research Centre, Ottawa.

O'Neill, Bard (2005). *Insurgency &Terrorism: From Evolution to Apocalyps*. Potomac Books, Washington D. C. Potomac Book Inc. 2nd ed. pp 19-29.

Olson, Mancur. (1971). *The Logic of Collective Action: Public Goods and the Theory of Groups*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Otman, Waniss & Karlberg, Erling (2007). *The Libyan Economy: Economic Diversification and International Repositioning*. Springer, New York.

Paget, Julian (1967). *Counter-Insurgency Campaigning*. London: Faber and Faber.

Pareto, V. (1935). *The Mind and Society*. New York: Harcount, Brace and Company.

Paris, R. (2004). *At War's End: Building Peace after Civil Conflict*. New York: Cambridge University Press.

Peou, Sorpong (2014). *Human Security Studies: Theories, Methods and Themes*. World Scientific, Ryerson University, Canada.

Péter Rada: The Muslim Courtyard: the European Union in the Maghreb, In: Balázs, Péter (szerk.) The changing world order and its implications for the "wider Europe", CEU (2013) pp. 1-40.

Petrasek, David & Tiessen Rebecca (2016). The Shaping of a Conservative Human Rights Policy in the Harper Era. In Chapnick Adam & Kukucha Christopher J. (Eds) *The Harper Era in Canadian Foreign Policy: Parliament, Politics, and Canada's Global Posture*. UBC Press, Vancouver: Toronto.

Pye, Lucian W. (1966). *Aspects of Political Development*. Boston: Little, Brown and Company.

Romaniuk, Scott N. & Webb, Stewart (2015). The Haqqani Network: Keeping Insurgency in the Family. (In) *Insurgency and Counterinsurgency in Modern War*. CRC Press/Taylor & Francis, London, New York.

Rotberg, Robert. (2003). Failed States, Collapsed States, Weak States: Causes and Indicators. (In) Rotberg, Robert (Eds). *State Failure and State Weakness in a Time of Terror*. Brooking Institution Press, Washington.

Rufini, G., & Ozerdem, A. (2005). Humanitarianism and the Principles of Humanitarian Action in post-cold war context. In S. Barakat (Ed.), *After the Conflict: Reconstruction and Development in the Aftermath of Conflict* (pp. 51-66). I.B. Tauris.

Sadako, Ogata (2013). *Human Security: A new Response to Complex Threats*. The Huffington Post.

Schram, Stuart R. (1969). *The Political Thought of Mao Tse Tung*. New York: Praeger.

Sharan, Timor (2012). The Dynamics of Elite Networks and Patron Client Relations in Afghanistan. (In) Lane, David (Ed), *Elites and Identities in Post-Soviet Space*. (pp. 185-205). Routledge, New York.

Shroeder, Robin (2014). Not Too Little, But Too Late: ISAF's Strategic Restart of 2010 in Light of the Coalition's Previous Mistakes. In, Krause, Joachim & Mallory, Charles King (Eds). *Afghanistan, Pakistan and Strategic Change: Adjusting regional policy*. Routledge, London, New York.

Siddique, AbuBaker (2012). *Sources of Tension in Afghanistan and Pakistan: A Regional Perspective*. Barcelona Centre for International Affairs CIDOB.

Smith, M.L.R. (2014). *COIN and the Chameleon: The Category Errors of Trying to Divide the Indivisible*. In Jones David (Eds) The New Counter-Insurgency Era in Critical Perspective, Palgrave Macmillan, London.

Sulyok, Gábor (2013). Delimitation of Humanitarian Intervention and the Responsibility to Protect: A Conceptual Approach. (In) Sancin Vasilka & Dine Maša Kovič (Eds). *Responsibility to Protect in Theory and Practice*. Paper presented at the Responsibility to Protect in Theory and Practice Conference, Jjubljana April 2013.

Sulyok, Gábor (2015). Understanding the Responsibility to Protect: Textual Anomalies and Interpretative Challenges in the 2005 World Summit Outcome, in Láncos, Petra Lea – Varga, Réka – Molnár, Tamás – Szabó, Marcel (szerk.): *Hungarian Yearbook of International Law and European Law 2014*. Eleven International Publishing, The Hague, 2015: 207–221.

Tadjbakhsh, Shahrbanou (2014). In Defense of the Broad View. In Martin Mary & Owen Taylor (Eds) *Routledge Handbook of Human Security*. Routledge London.

Tadjbakhsh, Shahrbanou & Chenoy, Anuradha M. (2009). *Human Security: Concepts and Implications*. Routledge, London and New York.

Thompson, Robert (1966). *Defeating Communist Insurgency*. London: Chatto and Windus Ltd, 50-57.

Tilly, Charles. (1985). War Making and State Making as Organised Crime.(In) Peter Evans, Dietrich Rueschemeyer and Theda Skocpol (eds). *Bringing the State Back In*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press. pp. 169-191, available at http://globalization.qwriting.qc.cuny.edu/files/2010/09/warmaking3.pdf

Tolstoy, Leo (1962). *War and Peace.* Translated by: Pevear Richard & Volokhonsky Larissa (2007). Random House Inc. New York.

Trauthig, Inga Kristina (2019b). *Assessing the Islamic State in Libya: The Current Situation in Libya and its Implications for the Terrorism threat in Europe*. 3rd Conference of the European Counter Terrorism Center (ECTC) Advisory Network on Terrorism and Propaganda: 9-10 April 2019.

Tschirgi, Necla (2013). Securitization and Peacebuilding. In Ginty, Mac (Ed.) *Routledge Handbook of Peacebuilding*. Routledge, USA.

UN (1990). *Blue Helmets*. 2nd ed. United Nations New York.

UN (1991). *The Blue Helmets: A Review of United Nations Peacekeeping*, 2nd edition, New York: United Nations Department of Public Information.

Vandewalle, Dirk (2008). *Libya Since 1969*. Palgrave MacMillan, NewYork.

Vandewalle, Dirk (2012). *A History of Modern Libya*. Cambridge University Press, 2nd edition.

Vasiliki, Saranti (2013). *Pro-Democratic Intervention, Invitation, or Responsibility to Protect? Challenges to International Law from the Arab Spring.* (In) Panara Carlo & Wilson Gary (eds) The Arab Spring: New Patterns for Democracy and International Law. Martinus Nijhoff Publishers: Leiden.

Waltz, Kenneth (1979). *Theory of International Politics*. McGraw-Hill, New York.

Wang, Shaoguang (2007). Democracy and State Effectiveness. (In) Dinello, Natalia & Propov Vladimir (Eds). *Political Institutions and Development: Failed Expectations and Renewal Hopes.* Edward Elgar Pub. Accessed on May 3, 2019 from: www.cuhk.edu.hk/gpa/wang_files/JoD%20paper.doc

Williams, Paul (2008). *Security Studies: An Introduction*. London − New York: Routledge.

Zoltán Szenes (2018). Military Security Today. New Threats, New Wars, New Theories. In. Géza Finszter, István Sabjanics (Eds): Security Challenges of the 21th Century. *NUPS, Dialog Campus*.

**Journals**

Ades, Alberto & Chua, Hak (1997). Thy Neighbor's Curse: Regional instability and economic growth. *Journal of Economic Growth*, 2(3), 279-304.

Adnan, Sinan & Reese Aaron (2014). Beyond the Islamic State: Iraq's Sunni Insurgency. Middle East Security Report 24. *Institute for the Study of War*. Available at: http://www.understandingwar.org/sites/default/files/Sunni%20Insurgency%20in%20Iraq.pdf

Anaizi, Nader; Fredrick, Dotolo H. & Lakehal-Ayat, Merouane (2015). Confronting ISIS in Libya: The Case for an Expeditionary Counterinsurgency. *Small Wars Journal*, 7/2015. Accessed October 28, 2019 from: https://smallwarsjournal.com/jrnl/art/'confronting-isis-in-libya-the-case-for-an-expeditionary-counterinsurgency'

Axworthy Lloyd (1997). Canada and Human Security: The Need for Leadership. *International Journal*, 52(2): 183-196.

Axworthy, Lloyd (2001) 'Human Security and Global Governance: Putting People First'. *Global Governance*,7(1), pp. 19-23.

Azam, Jean-Paul (2006). Should You Arm Your Future Victims. *Economics and Politics*, 18(3): 237-397.

Aziemah, Nur & Huzaifah, Syed (2015). ISIS in Horn of Africa: An Imminent Alliance with Al-Shabaab? *RSIS* no 282. Accessed: https://www.rsis.edu.sg/wp-content/uploads/2015/12/CO15282.pdf

Bangerter, Olivier. (2011). Reasons Why Armed Groups Choose to Respect International Humanitarian Law or Not. *International Review of the Red Cross*. 93(882):353-384.

Barnett, Michael; Kim Hunjoon; O'Donnel, Madalene & Sitea, Laura (2007). Peacebuilding: What is in a name? *Global Governance*, 13(2007): 35-58. Accessed September 19, 2019 from: https://home.gwu.edu/~barnett/articles/2007_peacebuilding_gg.pdf

Berry, J. W. (1997). Immigration, Acculturation and Adaptation. *Applied Psychology*, 46, 5–68.

Beverland, M. (2005). Crafting Brand Authenticity: The Case of Luxury Wines. *Journal of Management Studies*, 42(5), 1003–1029.

Bilgin, Pinar (2010). The 'Western-Centrism' of Security Studies: 'Blind Spot' or Constitutive Practice?, *Security Dialogue* 41: 615

Bordas, Maria (2014). Current Issues of International Law in Regulating Counter-Insurgency and Counter-Terrorism. *AARMS*, 13(40): 571-591.

Bosold, David & Werthes, Sacha (2005). Human Security in Practice: Canadian and Japanese Experiences. *International Politics and Society*, 1: 84-101.

Bourhis, R. Y., Moise, L. C., Perreault, S., & Senecal, S. (1997). Towards an Interactive Acculturation Model: A social psychological approach. *International Journal of Psychology*, 32(6), 369–389.

Brooks, David (2010). What is Security: Definition through Knowledge Categorization. *Security Journal*, 23(3): 225-239.

Buntak, Antonija & Mikac, Robert (2011). The Political Dimension of Counterinsurgency Operations: A Comparison of Two Counterinsurgency Operations in Afghanistan. *Contemporary Issues* 4(1): 78-98.

Butenschøn, Nils (1985). Conflict Management in Plural Socieities: The Consociational Democracy Formula. *Scandinavian Political Studies*, 8(1-2). Accessed May 11, 2019 from: https://tidsskrift.dk/scandinavian_political_studies/article/download/32498/30445?inline=1

Chai, S. (1993). An Organizational Economics Theory of Antigovernment Violence. *Comparative Politics, 26*(1), 99-110.

Chandler, D. (2001) 'The Road to Military Humanitarianism: How the Human Rights NGOs Shaped a New Humanitarian Agenda', *Human Rights Quarterly,* 23(3).

Chandler, David (2008). "Human Security: The Dog That Didn't Bark", *Security Dialogue*. 39 (4): 427-438.

Collier, Paul & Hoeffler, Anke (2004). Greed and Grievance in Civil War. *Oxford Economic Papers*, 56: 563-595.

Conteh-Morgan, Earl (). Peacebuilding and Human Security: A Constructive Perspective. *International Journal of Peace Studies* 10(1): 69-86.

Corten, Olivier & Koutroulis, Vaios (2013). The Illegality of Military Support to Rebels in the Libyan War: Aspects of jus contra bellum and jus in bello. *Journal of Conflict and Security Law*, 18(1): 59-93. Accessed December 15, 2019 from: https://academic.oup.com/jcsl/article/18/1/59/812500

Cox, Daniel G. & Ryan, Alex (2017). Countering Insurgency and the Myth of "The Cause". *Journal of Strategic Security*, 8(1): 43-62. Accessed July 5, 2019 from: https://www.airuniversity.af.mil/Portals/10/ASPJ_French/journals_E/Volume-08_Issue-4/cox_e.pdf

Culp, Robert (2011). Strategy for Military Counter Drug Operations. *Small Wars Journal*, January 24, 2011. Accessed May 26 2019 from: https://smallwarsjournal.com/blog/journal/docs-temp/656-culp.pdf

Dağcı, Gül Tuba (2012). Turkey-US Relations in Justice and Development Party's Era. *Turkish Journal of International Relations*, 11(2). Accessed September 11, 2019 from: https://dergipark.org.tr/download/article-file/19287

De Groot, Olaf (2010). The spillover effects of conflict on economic growth in neighboring countries in Africa. *Defence and Peace Economies*, 21(2) 149-164.

Dixon, Paul (2009). Hearts and Minds? British Counterinsurgency from Malaya to Iraq. *Journal of Strategic Studies*, 32(3): 353-381.

Domaradzka, A. (2018). Urban Social Movements and the Right to the City: An Introduction to the Special Issue on Urban Mobilization. *VOLUNTAS International Journal of Voluntary and Nonprofit Organizations, 29*(4): 607–620.

Donini, A. and S. Gordon (2015). Romancing Principles and Human Rights: Are Humanitarian Principles Salvageable? *International Review of the Red Cross*, 97 (897/898): 77-109.

Doucouliagos Hristos & Paldam Martin (2009). The Aid Effectiveness Literature: The Sad Results of 40 Years of Research. *Journal of Economic Surveys*. 23 (3).

Dryden-Peterso, Sarah & Hovil Lucy (2003). Local integration as a durable solution: refugees, host populations and education in Uganda. *New Issues in Refugee Research*, Working Paper No 93.

Dulic, Dragana (2007). Peace Building and Human Security: Kosovo Case. *HUMSEC Journal*, 3(2007), 1-16. Accessed June 25, 2019 from: http://www.etc-graz.at/cms/fileadmin/user_upload/humsec/Workin_Paper_Series/WP_Dulic.pdf

Er, Lam Peng. (2006). Japan's Human Security Role in Southeast Asia. *Contemporary Southeast Asia*, 28(1), 141-159.

Fearon, James D. (2007). Economic Development, Insurgency, and Civil War. *Institutions and Economic Performance*, 292-328. Accessed February 14, 2019 from: https://pdfs.semanticscholar.org/69c9/daf6f76b72b5b5e1612799f8945a85f2c252.pdf

Ferenc Kaiser, Péter Tálas: Political Violence and Terrorism, Defence Review: The Central Journal of the Hungarian Defence Forces, 144 (1): 22-39.

Gartenstein-Ross, Daveed & Jensen, Sterling (2015). The Role of Iraqi Tribes after the Islamic State's Ascendance. *Military Review*, 102-110. Accessed September 22, 2019 from: https://www.armyupress.army.mil/Portals/7/military-review/Archives/English/MilitaryReview_20150831_art018.pdf

Gary, King and Christopher, Murray (2002). Rethinking Human Security. *Political Science Quarterly*. 116(4): 585-610. Accessed March 5, 2019 from: https://gking.harvard.edu/files/hs.pdf

Gasztold, Aleksandra (2017). A Feminist Approach to Security Studies. *Przegląd Politologiczny*, 3:179-189.

Gawthorpe, Andrew J. (2017). All Counterinsurgency is Local Counterinsurgency and Rebel Legitimacy. *Small Wars & Insurgencies*, 28(4-5):839-852. Accessed February 20, 2019 from: https://www.tandfonline.com/doi/full/10.1080/09592318.2017.1322330

Ghulam, Shams-ur-Rehman (2015). Ethnicity, Power and Authority: Emergence of Muslim Religious Elites in Afghanistan during the Socialist Regimes. *Pakistan Journal of Social Sciences PJSS*, 35(2): 825-837, Accessed September 19, 2019 from: https://www.bzu.edu.pk/PJSS/Vol35No22015/PJSS-Vol35-No2-25.pdf

Gilmore, Jonathan (2016). Counterinsurgency, human security and the War on Terror. *Security Dialogue*, 42(1): 21-37

Gitau, Lydia Wanja (2018). Trauma-Sensitivity and Peacebuilding: Considering the Case of South Sudanese Refugees in Kakuma Refugee Camp. *Centre for Peace and Conflict Studies*. Springer, Australia.

Goodfellow, T. (2015) Taming the "Rogue" Sector: Studying State Effectiveness in Africa through Informal Transport Politics. *Comparative Politics*, 47 (2): 127-147. Accessed August 13, 2019 from: http://eprints.whiterose.ac.uk/83394/3/WRRO_83394.pdf

Goodwin, Jeffrey, and Theda Skocpol. 1989. "Explaining Revolutions in the Contemporary Third World." *Politics and Society* 17(December): 489–509

Hammerstad, Anne (2000). Whose Security? UNHCR, Refugee Protection and State Security After the Cold War. *Security Dialogue,* 31(4).

Hammes, Thomas X. (2006). Countering Evolved Insurgent Networks. *Military Review*. Accessed April 19, 2019 from: http://www.au.af.mil/au/awc/awcgate/milreview/hammes.pdf

Hayden, Sally (2019). The UN is Leaving Migrants to Die in Libya. *Foreign Policy*, October 10, 2019. Accessed November 27, 2019 from: https://foreignpolicy.com/2019/10/10/libya-migrants-un-iom-refugees-die-detention-center-civil-war/

Hazel, D. (2008). British Count-Insurgency Doctrine and its Development since 2001. *Militaire Spectator*, 177(3): 155-165. Accessed August 28, 2019 from: https://www.militairespectator.nl/sites/default/files/uitgaven/inhoudsopgave/MS%203-2008%20Hazel%20British%20Counterinsurgency%20Doctrine.pdf

Hazen, J. (2007). Can Peacekeepers be Peacebuilders? *International Peacekeeping*, 14(3): 323–338.

Heinbecker, Paul (2000). The Concept of Human Security. *RUSI Journal*, 145(6): 27-32.

Heras, Nicholas A. (2014). The Tribal Component of Iraq's Sunni Rebellion: The General Military Council for Iraqi Revolutionaries. *Terrorism Monitor* 12(13). Available at: https://jamestown.org/program/the-tribal-component-of-iraqs-sunni-rebellion-the-general-military-council-for-iraqi-revolutionaries/

Hogg, M. A., & Adelman, J. (2013). Uncertainty–Identity Theory: Extreme Groups, Radical Behavior, and Authoritarian Leadership. *Journal of Social Issues, 69*(3), 436-454.

HRW (2004). "Enduring Freedom": Abuses by U.S. Forces in Afghanistan. *Human Rights Watch*, 16(3) C. Accessed November 5, 2019 from: https://www.hrw.org/sites/default/files/reports/afghanistan0304.pdf

HRW (2004). Claims in Conflict: Reversing Ethnic Cleansing in Northern Iraq. *Human Rights Watch Reports* 16(4E). Accessed October 15, 2019 from: https://www.hrw.org/reports/2004/iraq0804/iraq0804.pdf

HRW (2006). Libya: June 1996 Killings at Abu Salim Prison. *Human Rights Watch*, Accessed December 5, 2019 from: https://www.hrw.org/news/2006/06/27/libya-june-1996-killings-abu-salim-prison

HRW (2010). World Report 2011: Iraq – Events of 2010. *Human Rights Watch*. Accessed September 19, 2019 from: https://www.hrw.org/world-report/2011/country-chapters/iraq

HRW (2017). Libya: Discriminatory Restriction on Women. *Human Rights Watch*, February 23, 2017. Accessed December 5, 2019 from: https://www.hrw.org/news/2017/02/23/libya-discriminatory-restriction-women

HRW (2018). Libya: Events of 2018. Human Rights Watch, Accessed November 27, 2019 from: https://www.hrw.org/world-report/2019/country-chapters/libya

HRW (2019). Libya: New Wave of Attacks Against Sufi Sites. *Human Rights Watch*. Accessed December 5, 2019 from: https://www.hrw.org/news/2017/12/07/libya-new-wave-attacks-against-sufi-sites

Humphreys, M & Weinstein, J. (2008). Who fight? The determinants of participation in civil war. *American Journal of Political Science*, 52(2): 436-455.

Ihsanoglu, Ekmeleddin (2007). Assessing the Human Tragedy in Iraq. *International Review of the Red Cross*, 89(868): 915-927.

Ismail, Olawale (2008). The Dynamics of Post-Conflict Reconstruction and Peace Building in West Africa: Between Change and Stability. *Nordiska Afrikainstitutet, Upsala*. Accessed October 12, 2019 from: https://www.files.ethz.ch/isn/96544/41.pdf

Ivan, Arreguín-Toft, (2001). How the Weak Win Wars: A Theory of Asymmetric Conflict, *International Security*, 26(1): 93–128. ISI (1972). David Easton's Political Theory. Political Science Reviewer. Accessed January 2, 2020 from: https://home.isi.org/search?search_api_multi_fulltext=easton

Iyengar, Radha et.al. (2011). Building Peace: The impact of Aid on the Labor Market for Insurgents. *National Bureau of Economic Research*, Cambridge. Accessed April 7, 2019 from: https://www.nber.org/papers/w17297.pdf

Jacobsen, Karen (2001). *The forgotten solution: local integration for refugees in developing countries.* New Issues in Refugee Research, Working Paper No 45.

Johansen, Robert (1994). The Contribution of the World Order Models Project. *Alternatives* 19(2), 155-162.

John Mackinlay & Jarat Chopra (1992). Second generation multinational operations. *The Washington Quarterly*, 15(3): 113-131.

Johnson, Thomas H. & Mason, Chris (2006). Understanding the Taliban and Insurgency in Afghanistan. Orbis: *A Journal of World Affairs*, 51(1):71-89. Accessed October 18, 2010 from: https://apps.dtic.mil/dtic/tr/fulltext/u2/a593979.pdf

Jones, Seth G. (2008). The Rise of Afghanistan's Insurgency: State Failure and Jihad. *International Security*, 32(4): 7-40.

Jones, Seth G. (2008b). The Rise of Afghanistan's Insurgency: State Failure and Jihad. *International Security*, 32(4): 7-40. Accessed November 18, 2019 from: https://www.belfercenter.org/sites/default/files/files/publication/IS3204_pp007-040_Jones.pdf

Jost, John T. et. al. (2012). Why Men (and Women) Do and Don't Rebel: Effects of System Justification on Willingness to Protest. *Personality and Social Psychology Bulletin*, 38(2): 197-208.

József Padányi, Földi László: Lessons learned for the Hungarian Defence Forces from the deployment of engineer obstacles during the 2015 Europe-wide mass-migration emergency, *BILTEN SLOVENSKE VOJSKE* 18 (2): 51-58.

Khong, Y. F. (2001). Human Security: A Shotgun Approach to Alleviating Human Misery? *Global Governance*, 7(3): 231-236.

King, G., & Murray, C.J.L. (2002). Rethinking Human Security. *Political Science Quarterly*, 116(4), 585-610.

Krause, Keith (2004). The Key to a Powerful Agenda, If Properly Defined. *Security Dialogue*, 35(3): 367-368.

Kuperman, Alan J. (2013). A Model Humanitarian Intervention? Reassessing NATO's Libya Campaign. *International Security* 38(1): 105-136.

Kydd, Andrew H. & Walter, Barbara F. (2006). The Strategies of Terrorism. *International Security* 31(1), 49-80. Accessed May 9, 2019 from: https://law.ucla.edu/~/media/Assets/Negotiation%20and%20Conflict%20Resolution/Documents/Spring%202015%20Colloquium/Walter%20Paper%20-%2004-02-2015.ashx

Ladjal, Tarek (2016). Tribe and State in the History of Modern Libya: A Khaldunian Reading of the Development of Libya in the Modern Era 1711-2011. *Cogent Arts & Humanities* (3). Accessed December 10, 2019, from: https://cogentoa.com/article/10.1080/23311983.2016.1183278.pdf

Leeuwen, Mathijes Van; Verkoren, Willemijn. (2012). Complexities and Challenges for Civil Society Building in Post-Conflict Settings. *Journal of Peacebuilding & Development*, 7(1): 81-94.

Lischer, Sarah Kenyon (2006). Collateral Damage: Humanitarian Assistance as a Cause of Conflict. *International Security* 28(1): 79-109.

Lyall, Jason. (2009). Does Indiscriminate Violence Incite Insurgent Attacks? *Journal of Conflict Resolution*. 53(3): 331-362.

MacLean, George (2002). "Building on a Legacy or Bucking Tradition? Evaluating Canada's Human Security Initiative in an Era of Globalization", *Canadian Foreign Policy*, 9 (3): 65-84.

Massingham, Eve (2009). Military intervention for Humanitarian Purposes: Does the Responsibility to Protect Doctrine Advance the Legality of the Use of Force for Humanitarian Ends? *International Review of the Red Cross*. Vol 91, no 876, Dec. 2009.

Merari, A (1993). Terrorism as a strategy of insurgency. *Terrorism and Political Violence*, 5(4): 213-251.

MoD (2009). Countering Insurgency. *British Army Field Manual*, 1(10): Army Code 71876, October 2009, UK Ministry of Defence.

Moore, R. Scott (2007). The Basics of Counterinsurgency. *Small Wars Journal*, 1-24. Accessed April 5, 2019 from: http://smallwarsjournal.com/blog/small-wars-pleasures

Morone, Antonio M. (2017). Idris' Libya and the Role of Islam: International Confrontation and Social Transformation. *Oriente Moderno* 97(1): 111-132.

Montalvo, Jose & Renyal-Querol, Marta (2007). Fighting against Malaria: Prevent wars while waiting for the "Miraculous" Vaccine. *The Review of Economics and Statistics*, 89(1): 165-177.

Nascimento, Daniela. (2015). One Step Forward, Two Steps Back? Humanitarian Challenges and Dilemmas in Crisis Settings. *Journal of Humanitarian Assistance*. Accessed March 24, 2019 from: https://sites.tufts.edu/jha/archives/2126

Nasukawa, Toshiyuki (2017). Human Security in Japanese Foreign Policy: A challenge to Peacebuilding. PhD Dissertation, Waseda University Tokyo.

Ndulo, Muna (2011). United Nations Peacekeeping Operations and Security and Reconstruction. *Cornell Law Faculty Publications*. Paper 188. Accesses May 29, 2019 from: https://scholarship.law.cornell.edu/cgi/viewcontent.cgi?article=1187&context=facpub

Neumayr, Michaela (2009). The Role of Civil Society Organizations in Different Nonprofit Regimes: Evidence from Austria and the Czech Republic. *Comparative Social Research* 26:167-196.

Newman, Edward (2010). Critical Human Security Studies. *Review of International Studies*, 36(1): 77–94.

Nossal, Kim Richard (2007). Right and Wrong in Foreign Policy 40 Years on: Realism and Idealism in Canadian Foreign Policy. *International Journal*, 62(2): 263-277.

Nugrada, Aryanta & Madu, Ludiro (2013). Human Security: Contending Perspectives of Liberalism, Critical Theory and Postcolonial Theory. *Global Strategies*, January-Jun 2013.

Nurruzzaman, Mohammed (2015). Rethinking Foreign Military Interventions to Promote Human Rights: Evidence from Libya, Bahrain and Syria. *Canadian Journal of Political Science* 48(3):531-552.

Obo, Ugumanin Bassey & Coker, Maurice Ayodele (2014). The Marxist Theory of the State: An Introductory Guide. *Mediterranean Journal of Social Sciences*. 5 (4). Accessed March 13, from: http://www.mcser.org/journal/index.php/mjss/article/viewFile/2243/2229

Owen, Taylor (2004). Human Security – Conflict, Critique and Consensus: Colloquium Remarks and a Proposal for a Threshold-Based Definition. *SAGE Publications*, 35(3): 373-387. Accessed April 9, 2019, from: http://taylorowen.com/Articles/2004_SD.pdf

Owen, Taylor (2008). The uncertain future of human security in the UN. *UNESCO*, Blackwell Publishing, UK. Accessed April 3, 2019 from: http://www.taylorowen.com/Articles/2008%20Owen%20-%20UN%20and%20HS%20chapter.pdf

Paris, Roland (2001). Human Security: Paradigm Shift or Hot Air? *International Security*, 26(2): 87-102. http://nghiencuuquocte.net/wp-content/uploads/2014/03/Human-security-paradigm-shift-or-hot-air.pdf

Paris, Roland. (2014). The 'Responsibility to Protect' and the Structural Problems of Preventive Humanitarian Intervention. *International Peacekeeping*, 21(5): 569–603.

Pérouse, Marc-Antoine (2014). Boko Haram: Islamism, Politics, Security and the State in Nigeria. *West African Politics and Society Series*, vol 1.

Perrin Pierre (1998). The Impact of Humanitarian aid on conflict development. *International Review of the Red Cross*, no 323.

Phillips, Denise (2017). Hazaras Persecution Worsens: Will the New Government show Leadership by lifting the Suspension on Afghani Asylum Claims? *Australian Policy and History*. Accessed April 17, 2019 from: http://aph.org.au/hazaras-persecution-worsens-will-the-new-government-show-leadership-by-lifting-the-suspension-on-afghani-asylum-claims/#

Pommier, Bruno (2011). The Use of Force to Protect Civilians and Humanitarian Action: The Case of Libya and Beyond. *International Review of the Red Cross*, 93(884): 1063-1083. Accessed on April 15, 2019 from: https://www.icrc.org/en/doc/assets/files/review/2011/irrc-884-pommier.pdf

Rawaf, S. et.al. (2014). Living Conditions in Iraq: 10 Years After the US-Led Invasion. *Journal of the Royal Society of Medicine*, 107(5): 187-193.

Redfield, R., Linton, R., & Herskovits, M. (1936). Memorandum on the study of acculturation. *American Anthropologist*, 38, 149–152.

Rekkedal, Nils Marius (2012). Winds of Change: On Irregular Warefare. *National Defence University of Finland*, 2(18). Accessed on February 15, 2019, from: http://www.doria.fi/bitstream/handle/10024/149280/WindsOfChange_netti.pdf?sequence=1

Remacle, Eric (2008). Approaches to Human Security: Japan, Canada, and Europe in Comparative Perspective. *The Journal of Social Science* 66: 5-34

Reuveny, Rafael & Prakash, Aseem (1999). The Afghanistan War and the Breakdown of the Soviet Union. *Review of International Studies* 25(693-708). Accessed on October 29, 2019 from: https://faculty.washington.edu/aseem/afganwar.pdf

Rothschild, Emma (1995). What is Security? *Daedalus* 124(3), 53-98.

Saba, Arif & Akbarzadeh, Sharham (2017). The Responsibility to Protect and the Use of Force: An Assessment of the Just Cause and Last Resort Criteria in the Case of Libya. *International Peacekeeping*, 25(2): 242-265.

Salah, Hanan (2019). Justice, Delayed in Libya. *Human Rights Watch*. Accessed December 16, 2019 from: https://www.hrw.org/news/2019/09/11/justice-delayed-libya

Salehyan, Idean (2008). The Externalities of Civil Strife: Refugees as a Source of International Conflict. *American Journal of Political Science*. 52(4): 787-801.

Salehyan, Idean, et.al. (2011). Explaining External Support for Insurgent Groups. *International Organization*, 65(4): 709-744.

Schroden, Jonathan et.al. (2013). A New Paradigm for Assessment in Counterinsurgency. *Military Operations Research*, 18(3): 5-20.

Sevastik, Per (2019). Rule of Law, Human Rights and Impunity: The Case of Afghanistan. *Hague Journal on the Rule of Law*. Springer International Publishing.

Shamieh, Luna & Szenes, Zoltan. The Rise of Islamic State of Iraq and Syria (ISIS). *AARMS* 14(4): 363-378. Available at: https://folyoiratok.uni-nke.hu/document/uni-nke-hu/aarms-2015-4-shamieh.original.pdf

Simonsen, Sven Gunnar (2004). Ethicizing Afghanistan? Inclusion and exclusion in post-Bonn institution building. Third World Quarterly, 25(4): 707-729.

Stahn, Carsten (2007). Responsibility to Protect: Political Rhetoric or Emerging Lega Norm? *The American Journal of International Law*, 101(1): 99-120.

Stark, Alex (2011). The Responsibility to Protect: Challenges & Opportunities in Light of the Libyan Intervention. *E-International Relations*. Accessed April 10, 2019, from: https://www.files.ethz.ch/isn/181082/R2P.pdf

Stenersen, Anne (2016). Al-Qaida's Comeback in Afghanistan and its Implications. *CTC Sentinel*, Combating Terrorism Center at West Point, issue 100. Accessed August 20, 2019 from: https://ctc.usma.edu/app/uploads/2016/09/CTC-SENTINEL_Vol9Iss93.pdf

Stewart, Frances (2000). Crisis Prevention: Tackling Horizontal Inequalities. *Oxford Development Studies* 28(3): 245-62.

Sultan, Beenish & Akhtar Marium (2015). Insurgencies in South Asia: A Comparative Case Study of India's Maoists and Pakistan Taliban. *Margalla Papers, Special Edition*. Accessed November 7, 2019, from: https://ndu.edu.pk/issra/issra_pub/articles/margalla-paper/Margalla-Papers-SE-2015/04-Insurgencies-in-South-Asia-Beenish-&-Maryam.pdf

Tadjbakhsh, Shahrbanou (2010). Human Security Beyond Responsibility to Protect. *Revista Española de Desarrollo y Cooperación*, 26: 13-37.

Tanin, Zahir (2011). Ten Years of the United Nations in Afghanistan: A closer Look at Recent History and a Glimpse into What Lies Ahead. *Nacoa E Defesa*, 130(5): 55-67. Accessed November 1, 2019 from: https://comum.rcaap.pt/bitstream/10400.26/7641/1/NeD130_ZahirTanin.pdf

Thaemar, Maria & Tana, Camanag. Japan's Human Security Policy: New Pressures, New Responses. *East Asian Policy*, 7(4): 88-98.

Thier, Alexander J. (2006). The Making of a Constitution in Afghanistan. *New York Law School Law Review*, vol 51. Accessed November 3, 2019, from: http://www.nylslawreview.com/wp-content/uploads/sites/16/2013/11/51-3.Thier_.pdf

Tickner, Ann (2004). Feminist Responses to International Security Studies. *Peace Review*, 16(1): 43-48. Accessed February 21, 2019, from: https://www.tandfonline.com/doi/pdf/10.1080/1040265042000210148

Trauthig, Inga Kristina (2019a). Gaining Legitimacy in Post-Qaddafi Libya: Analyzing Attempts of the Muslim Brotherhood. *Societies* 9(56): 1-18. Accessed December 1, 2019 from: https://www.mdpi.com › pdf

Tsai, Yu-tai (2009). The Emergence of Human Security: A Constructivists View. *International Journal of Peace Studies*, 14(2): 19-33.

Ünal, Mustafa Coşar. (2016). Terrorism Versus Insurgency: A Conceptual Analysis. *Crime Law Soc Chang*, Springer. http://iusgentium.ufsc.br/wp-content/uploads/2017/03/1-3-Terrorism-versus-insurgency-a-conceptual-analysis.pdf

Van Ginkel, Hans and Newman Edward (2000). In Quest of Human Security. *Japan Review of International Affairs* 14(1).

Walt, Stephan (1991). The Renaissance of Security Studies. *International Studies Quarterly*, 35(2): 211-139.

Wan, Ming (1995). Spending Strategies in World Politics: How Japan Has Used its Economic Power in the Past Decade. *International Studies Quarterly*, 39(1): 85-108.

Weinbaum, Marvin G. & Babbar, Meher (2016). The Tenacious, Toxic Haqqani Network. Middle East Institute, *Policy Focus Series* 23. Accessed October 8, 2019, from: https://www.mei.edu/sites/default/files/publications/PF23_WeinbaumBabbar_Haqqani_web_0.pdf

Wendt, Alexander (1992). Anarchy is What States Make of it: The Social Construction of Power Politics. *International Organization*, 46(2): 391-425.

Whitaker, Elise (2002). Refugees in Western Tanzania: The Distribution of Burdens and Benefits Among Local Hosts. *Journal of Refugee Studies*, 15(4): 339-358.

Williams, Ryan T. (2011). Dangerous Precedent: America's Illegal War in Afghanistan. Penn Law: *Legal Scholarship Repository*, 33(2): 563-613. Accessed October 29, 2019 from: https://scholarship.law.upenn.edu/cgi/viewcontent.cgi?article=1060&context=jil

Wilner, Alex S. (2010). Targeted Killings in Afghanistan: Measuring Coercion and Deterrence in Counterterrorism and Counterinsurgency. *Studies in Conflict & Terrorism*, 33(4):307-329.

Wilson, Gregory (2006). Anatomy of a Successful COIN Operations: OEF-Philippines and the Indirect Approach. *Military Review*, Nov.-Dec. 2006. Accessed March 22 2019, from:

https://www.armyupress.army.mil/Portals/7/military-review/Archives/English/MilitaryReview_2008CRII0831_art009.pdf

Wood, David (2012). Libya Conflict Assessment: Literature Review. *Civil Society Dialogue Network CSDN*. Accessed November 25, 2019 from: http://eplo.org/wp-content/uploads/2017/02/CSDN_Early-Response_Libya_Agenda_Literature-Review.pdf

Zambernardi, Lorenzo (2010). Counterinsurgency's Impossible Trilemma. *The Washington Quarterly*, 33(3): 21-34

**International Reports and Manuals**

AI (2019). Afghanistan's Refugees: Forty Years of Dispossession. Amnesty International, Accessed July 27, 2019, from: https://www.amnesty.org/en/latest/news/2019/06/afghanistan-refugees-forty-years/

AJP 3.4.4. Allied Joint Doctrine for Counterinsurgency COIN. Edition A Version 1, July 2016. North Atlantic Treaty Organization, NATO.

JP 3-24 (2018). Counterinsurgency. 25 April 2018. Accesses 24 September, 2019 from: https://www.jcs.mil/Portals/36/Documents/Doctrine/pubs/jp3_24.pdf

Alterman, Jon B. (2007). *Iraq and the Gulf States: The Balance of Fear*. Special Report 189, United States Institute for Peace. Accessed August 3, 2019 from: https://www.usip.org/sites/default/files/sr189.pdf

Amnesty (2014). *Iraq Human Rights: Human Rights Concern.* Accessed October 12, 2019 from: https://www.amnestyusa.org/countries/iraq/

Amnesty International (2011). *Amnesty International Annual Report 2011-Iraq*. Accessed October 12, 2019 from https://www.refworld.org/docid/4dce1562c.html

Arraf, Sari (2017). *The War Report 2017, Libya: A Short Guide on the Conflict.* Geneva Academy. Available at: https://www.geneva-academy.ch/joomlatools-files/docman-files/Lybia%20A%20Short%20Guide%20to%20the%20Conflict.pdf

Ban Ki-moon (2016) *One Humanity; Shared Responsibility. Report of the Secretary-General for the World Humanitarian Summit*. New York: United Nations. Accessed January 29, 2019 from: http://sgreport.worldhumanitariansummit.org

Ben Lamma, Mohamed (2017). The Tribal Structure in Libya: Factor for Fragmentation or Cohesion? *Observatoire, du monde arabo-musulman et d Sahel, Foundation pour la Recherche Stratégique*. Accessed November 18, 2019 from: https://www.frstrategie.org/web/documents/programmes/observatoire-du-monde-arabo-musulman-et-du-sahel/publications/en/14.pdf

Bowman, Steve & Catherine, Dale (2009). *War in Afghanistan: Strategy, Military Operations, and Issues for Congress.* Congressional Research Service, CRS Report for Congress, Accessed November 18, 2019 from: https://www.refworld.org/pdfid/4b3217e82.pdf

Brandt, Willy (1980). *North-South: A programme for Survival*. The Report of the Independent Commission on International Development Issues under the Chairman of Willy Brandt. Pan World Affairs, London.

Brandt, Willy. (1978). Report of the Independent Commission on International Development Issues. 1st draft from scanned book 2002. Accessed September 12, 2019 from: http://files.globalmarshallplan.org/inhalt/psu_2.pdf

Brown, John (2003). *The United States Army in Afghanistan: Operation Enduring Freedom.* Accessed December 12, 2019, from: https://history.army.mil/html/books/070/70-83/cmhPub_70-83.pdf

Campbell, Jason et.al. (2009). Assessing Counterinsurgency and Stabilization Missions. Policy Paper, 14. *Foreign Policy at Brookings*. Accessed June 10, 2019, from: https://www.brookings.edu/wp-content/uploads/2016/06/05_counterinsurgency_ohanlon.pdf

Carney, Stephen A. (2011). *Allied Participation in Operation: Iraqi Freedom*. Center of Military History United States Army, Washington, D.C. Accessed July 1, 2019, from: https://history.army.mil/html/books/059/59-3-1/CMH_59-3-1.pdf

CCOE (2012). *CIMIC Field Handbook.* Civil-Military Cooperation Center of Excellence, version 3. Accessed April 25, 2019 from: http://www.cimic-coe.org/wp-content/uploads/2014/06/CIMIC-Handbook.pdf

CEOBS (2018). *Country Brief: Libya. Conflict and Environment Observatory*. Accessed November 28, 2019 from: https://ceobs.org/country-brief-libya/

CFR (2008). *Iran's Involvement in Iraq*. Council on Foreign Relations. Accessed May 15, 2019 from: https://www.cfr.org/backgrounder/irans-involvement-iraq

CFR (2019). *The US War in Afghanistan 1999-2019*. Council on Foreign Relations, Accessed May 15, 2019 from: https://www.cfr.org/timeline/us-war-afghanistan

CHS (2003). *Human Security Now*. Commission on Human Security. New York. Accessed February 10, 2019, from: https://reliefweb.int/sites/reliefweb.int/files/resources/91BAEEDBA50C6907C1256D19006A9353-chs-security-may03.pdf

CISAC (2018). Mapping Militant Organizations: "Afghan Taliban". Center for International Security and Cooperation, Stanford University. Accessed December 15, 2019 from: https://cisac.fsi.stanford.edu/mappingmilitants/profiles/afghan-taliban

CISAC (2019a). Mapping Militant Organizations: Jaysh Rijal al-Tariqa al-Naqshbandia (JRTN). Stanford University. Accessed December 15, 2019 from: http://web.stanford.edu/group/mappingmilitants/cgi-bin/groups/view/75

CISAC (2019b). 1920s Revolution Brigades. Mapping Militant Organizations. Center for International Security and Cooperation, Stanford University. Accessed December 15, 2019 from: https://cisac.fsi.stanford.edu/mappingmilitants/profiles/1920s-revolution-brigades

Clifford, Bob (2005). *The Marketing of Rebellion: Insurgents, Media, and International Activism.* Cambridge University Press, Cambridge. Accessed June 12, 2019 from: http://elastic.org/~fche/mirrors/www.cryptome.org/2013/01/aaron-swartz/Marketing-Rebellion.pdf

Cole, Peter & Mangan, Fiona (2016). *Tribe, Security, Justice, and Peace in Libya Today*. United States Institute of Peace. Accessed November 27, 2019 from: https://www.usip.org/sites/default/files/PW118-Tribe-Security-Justice-and-Peace-in-Libya-Today.pdf

Collier, Paul & Hoeffler Anke (2001). *Greed and Grievance in Civil War*. World Bank. Accessed November 27, 2019 from: http://web.worldbank.org/archive/website01241/WEB/IMAGES/28126.PDF

Collier, Paul, et al. (2003). *Breaking the Conflict Trap: Civil War and Development Policy*. The International Bank for Reconstruction and Development, The World Bank, Washington.

Condra, Luke N. (2010). *The Effect of Civilian Casualties in Afghanistan and Iraq.* National Bureau of Economic Research, Cambridge, MA. Accessed November 2, 2019 from: http://www.offnews.info/downloads/w16152.pdf

Connable, Ben (2012). *Embracing the Fog of War: Assessment and Metrics in Counterinsurgency*. RAND, National Defense Research Institute.

Connable, Ben & Libicki, Martin C. (2010). *How Insurgencies End. Marine Corps Intelligence Activity*. National Defense Research Institute, RAND. Accessed April 3, 2019 from: https://www.rand.org/content/dam/rand/pubs/monographs/2010/RAND_MG965.pdf

Cook, Joana & Vale Gina (2018). *From Daesh to Diaspora: Tracing the Women and Minors of Islamic State.* International Centre for the Study of Radicalization, Department of War Studies, King College London. Accessed May 5, 2019 from: https://icsr.info/wp-content/uploads/2018/07/Women-in-ISIS-report_20180719_web.pdf

Cooke, Jennifer & Richard Downie (2015). *Rethinking Engagement in Fragile States: A Report of the CSIS Africa Program*. Centre for Strategies & International Studies. Accessed May 9, 2019 from: https://www.ciaonet.org/attachments/27897/uploads?1439163785

Cordesman, Anthony H. (2017). *Global Trends in Terrorism Through 2016 and Relative Role of ISIS and Taliban.* Center for Strategic & International Studies. Accessed May 18, 2019 from:

https://www.csis.org/analysis/global-trends-terrorism-through-2016-and-relative-role-isis-and-taliban

Corinne, Delechat et al (2015). *Existing from Fragility in sub-Saharan Africa: The Role of Fiscal Policies and Fiscal Institutions*. IMF. Accessed May 18, 2019 from: http://www.imf.org/external/pubs/ft/wp/2015/wp15268.pdf

Crisis group (2019). *Afghanistan: Cause for Anxiety and Optimism. Watch List 2019*. International Crisis Group. Accessed October 10, 2019 from: https://d2071andvip0wj.cloudfront.net/Watch%20List%20Update%20-%20October%202019.pdf

CRS (2019). *Department of Defense Contractor and Troop Levels in Afghanistan and Iraq: 2007-2018*. CRS Report, Congressional Research Service. Accessed October 7, 2019 from: https://fas.org/sgp/crs/natsec/R44116.pdf

Davis, Paul K. et.al. (2012). *Understanding and influencing Public Support for Insurgency and Terrorism*. RAND, National Defense Research Institute. Accessed July 15, 2019 from: https://www.rand.org/pubs/monographs/MG1122.html

DFAT (2018a). *DFAT County Information Report Iraq*. Department of Foreign Affairs and Trade, Australian Government. Accessed August 8, 2019 from: https://dfat.gov.au/about-us/publications/Documents/country-information-report-iraq.pdf

DFAT (2018b). *DFAT Country Information Report Libya.* Department of foreign Affairs and Trade, Australian Government. Accessed December 2, 2019 from: https://dfat.gov.au/about-us/publications/Documents/country-information-report-libya.pdf

Dirsus, Marcel & Eaton, Tim (2019). *Instability in Libya: Assessing the Regional Impacts*. NATO Open Publications 3(1). Accessed November 27, 2019 from: https://www.act.nato.int/images/stories/media/doclibrary/open201901-instability-in-lybia.pdf

Divjak, Tina; Forbici, Goran (2017). *The Future Evolution of Civil Society in the European Union by 2030.* European Economic and Social Committee. https://www.eesc.europa.eu/sites/default/files/files/the_future_evolution_of_civil_society_in_the_eu_by_2030.pdf

Dobbins, J. et al. (2007). *The Beginner's Guide to Nation-Building.* Santa Monica: RAND.

Dobbins, James et.al. (2009). *Occupying Iraq: A History of the Coalition Provisional Authority*. RAND National Security Research Division. Accessed November 22, 2019 from: https://www.rand.org/content/dam/rand/pubs/monographs/2009/RAND_MG847.pdf

Dobbins, James; Campbell, Jason H.; Mann Sean; Miller Laurel E. (2019). *Consequences of a Precipitous U.S. Withdrawal from Afghanistan.* Perspective, Expert Insights on a Timely Policy Issue. RAND Corporation. Accessed November 5, 2019 from: https://www.rand.org/content/dam/rand/pubs/perspectives/PE300/PE326/RAND_PE326.pdf

Dressler, Jeffrey A. (2010). *The Haqqani Network: From Pakistan to Afghanistan.* Afghanistan. Institute for the Study of War, Military Analysis and Education for Civilian Leaders. Report 6. Accessed November 5, 2019 from: http://www.adh-geneve.ch/RULAC/pdf_state/haqqani-network-compressed.pdf

DuBois, Marc (2018). *The New Humanitarian Basics*. Humanitarian Policy Group HPG, Working paper. Accessed June 20, 2019 from: https://www.odi.org/sites/odi.org.uk/files/resource-documents/12201.pdf

DUPI (1999). *Humanitarian Intervention: Legal and Political Aspects*. Danish Institute of International Affairs. Copenhagen. Accessed June 28, 2019 from: https://www.diis.dk/files/media/publications/import/extra/humanitarian_intervention_1999.pdf

EASO (2019). *Afghanistan Security Situation: Country of Origin Information Report.* European Asylum Support Office. Accessed November 5, 2019 from: https://www.easo.europa.eu/sites/default/files/publications/Afghanistan-security-situation-2019-web.pdf

EC (2003). *European Security Strategy*. Brussels. Accessed July 3, 2019 from: https://europa.eu/globalstrategy/en/council-conclusions-implementing-eu-global-strategy-area-security-and-defence

EC (2019). Asylum Quarterly Report. Accessed July 3, 2019 from: https://ec.europa.eu/eurostat/statistics-explained/index.php/Asylum_quarterly_report

Edström, Bert (2011). *Japan and Human Security: The Derailing of a Foreign Policy Vision.* Institute for Security & Development Policy: Stockholm-Nacka. Accessed June 9, 2019 from: http://isdp.eu/content/uploads/publications/2011_edstrom_japan-and-human-security.pdf

Eisenstadt, Michael & White Jeffery (2005). Assessing Iraq's Sunni Arab Insurgency. The Washington Institute for Near East Policy. Accessed January 20, 2020 from: https://www.washingtoninstitute.org/html/pdf/PolicyFocus50.pdf.

El-Kamouni-Janssen, Floor & de Bruijne, Kars (2017). *Crisis Alert 3 – Entering the Lion's Den: Local Militias and Governance in Libya*. Clingendael Report. Accessed December 8, 2019, from: https://www.clingendael.org/sites/default/files/2017-10/crisesalert-3-entering-the-lions-den-local-militias-and-governance-in-libya.pdf

Eljarh, Mohamed (2018). The Libyan Crisis: Internal Barriers to Conflict Resolution and the Role of Multilateral Cooperation. In Dessi, Andrea & Greco Ettore (Eds) *Search for Stability in Libya: OSCE's Role Between Internal Obstacles and External Challenges*. New Med Research Network. Accessed January 25 from: https://www.iai.it/sites/default/files/iairs_1.pdf

ENACT (2019). *Africa: Organized Crime Index*. Institute for Security Studies ISS, Interpol, Global Initiative. Accessed February 15, 2019 from: https://ocindex.enactafrica.org/country/libya

EU (2019). *Common Security and Defence Policy*. EU Integrated Border Assistance Mission in Libya (EUBAM Libya). March 2019. Accessed December 28, 2019 from:: https://eeas.europa.eu/sites/eeas/files/20190319_eubam_libya_factsheet_march_2019_en.pdf

FAO (2019). *Afghanistan: Emergency Livelihoods Response Plan, 2019*. Food and Agriculture Organization of the United Nations, Rome. Accessed October 3, 2019 from: http://www.fao.org/3/ca4252en/ca4252en.pdf

FAS (2009). *Guide to the Analysis of Insurgency*. Federation of American Scientists. Accessed February 11, 2019 from: https://fas.org/irp/cia/product/insurgency.pdf

FEDC (2010). (French) *Doctrine for Counterinsurgency at the Tactical Level*. Forces Employment Doctrine Center, Paris, April 2010. Accessed May 18, 2019 from: https://info.publicintelligence.net/FR-TacticalCOIN.pdf

Fitzgerald, Mary & Toaldo, Mattia (2018). *A Quick Guide to Libya's Main Players*. European Council on Foreign Relations. Accessed November 30, 2019 from: https://www.ecfr.eu/mena/mapping_libya_conflict#

Flores, Ivan (2019). *Afghanistan's Air is Deadlier than its War.* Foreign Policy. Accessed October 27, 2019 from: https://foreignpolicy.com/2019/05/26/afghanistans-air-is-deadlier-than-its-war/

FMI 3-07.22 (2004). *Counterinsurgency Operations*. Accessed March 5, 2019 from: https://fas.org/irp/doddir/army/fmi3-07-22.pdf

FMI 3-24 (2009). Tactics in Counterinsurgency. https://fas.org/irp/doddir/army/fmi3-24-2.pdf

FOP (2019). Fragile States Index, Country Dashboard. Accessed June 17, 2019 from: https://fragilestatesindex.org/country-data/

Foschini, Fabrizio (2013). *The Social Wandering of the Afghan Kuchis: Changing patterns, perceptions and politics of an Afghan community*. Afghanistan Analysts Network, Accessed November 8, 2019 from: http://www.afghanistan-analysts.org/wp-content/uploads/2013/11/20131125_FFoschini-Kuchis.pdf

Frishta, Ali (2015). *Afghanistan: The Rise of Ethnic Consciousness Through History; A Comprehensive Overview of the Origin of the Afghan Conflict*. Accessed November 13, 2019 from: https://www.ssoar.info/ssoar/bitstream/handle/document/43832/ssoar-2015-ali-Afghanistan_the_rise_of_ethnic.pdf?sequence=1

General Assembly, UN (2005). *Res. 60/1: World Summit Outcome Document*, A/Res/1, 16 Sept. 2005.

Gha Admin (2010). *Humanitarian aid in conflict: More money, more problems?* Global Humanitarian Assistance. Accessed March 25, 2019 from: http://www.globalhumanitarianassistance.org/humanitarian-aid-in-conflict-more-money-more-problems-561.html

Ghanmi Elyes & Hakala, Pekka (2013). *Policy Briefing: Despite Obstacles, Libya's Transition Advances.* European Parliament, Policy Department, Directorate-General for External Policies. Accessed April 4, 2019, from: vailable at: http://www.europarl.europa.eu/RegData/etudes/briefing_note/join/2013/491442/EXPO-AFET_SP%282013%29491442_EN.pdf

Glen, Cameron (2017). *Libya's Islamists: Who They Are -And What They Want*. Wilson Center, Accessed December 12, 2019 from: https://www.wilsoncenter.org/article/libyas-islamists-who-they-are-and-what-they-want

Global Initiative (2019). *Predatory Economics in Eastern Libya: The Dominant Role of the Libyan National Army*. Global Initiative Against Transnational Organized Crime. Accessed December 12, 2019 from: https://globalinitiative.net/wp-content/uploads/2019/06/GITOC-Predatory-Economies-Eastern-Libya-WEB.pdf

GSDRC (2013). *International legal frameworks for humanitarian action: Topic* guide. Birmingham, UK: GSDRC, University of Birmingham

Hegedűs, István (2016). *The Refugee Crisis and the Reactions of the Visegrad Countries: Final Report*, Friedrich Naumann Stiftung. Accessed July 14 2019, from: https://www.europatarsasag.hu/sites/default/files/the_refugee_crisis_and_the_reactions_of_the_visegrad_countries_final_version_g.emma_.pdf

Holtom, Paul (2007). *United Nations Arms Embargoes: Their Impact on Arms Flows and Target Behaviour*. Case Study: The Taliban, 2000-2006. SIPRI Stockholm International Peace Research Institute. Accessed August 8, 2019, from: https://www.sipri.org/sites/default/files/files/misc/UNAE/SIPRI07UNAETal.pdf

Homan, Kees (2008). *The military and human security. Security and Human Rights*. Accessed March 20, 2019, from: https://www.clingendael.org/sites/default/files/pdfs/20080100_cscp_art_homan_security.pdf

HRI (2011). *NATO Bombs the Great Man-Made River*. Human Rights Investigations, July 27, 2011. Accessed December 18, 2019 from: https://humanrightsinvestigations.org/2011/07/27/great-man-made-river-nato-bombs/

HSC (2003). *Human Security Now Report.* New York: Commission on Human Security, Accessed March 20, 2019 from: https://reliefweb.int/sites/reliefweb.int/files/resources/91BAEEDBA50C6907C1256D19006A9353-chs-security-may03.pdf

https://cisac.fsi.stanford.edu/mappingmilitants/profiles/1920s-revolution-brigades

HSU (2015). Framework for Cooperation for the system-wide application of Human Security. Human Security Unit, accessed May 5, 2020 available at: https://www.un.org/humansecurity/wp-content/uploads/2017/10/h1.pdf

HSU (2016). Human Security Handbook: An integrated approach for the realization of the Sustainable Development Goals and the priority areas of the international community and the United Nations system. Accessed May 5, 2020. Available at: https://www.un.org/humansecurity/wp-content/uploads/2017/10/h2.pdf

IAGCI (2019). *Country Policy and Information Note. Libya: Ethnic Minorities*. Independent Advisory Group on Country Information, London. Accessed November 30, 2019 from: https://assets.publishing.service.gov.uk/government/uploads/system/uploads/attachment_data/file/777959/Libya_-_Ethnic_Groups_-_CPIN_-_v3.0__February_2019_.pdf

ICISS (2001). *The Responsibility to Protect*. Report of the International Commission on Intervention and State Sovereignty. Accessed May 18, 2019, from: http://responsibilitytoprotect.org/ICISS%20Report.pdf

ICRC (1994). *Code of Conduct for the International Red Cross and Red Crescent Movement and Non-Governmental Organizations (NGOs) in Disaster Relief*. Accessed May 18, 2019, from: https://www.icrc.org/en/doc/resources/documents/publication/p1067.htm

IEP (2016). *Global Terrorism Index: Measuring and Understanding the Impact of Terrorism*. Institute for Economics and Peace. Accessed May 20, 2019, from: http://visionofhumanity.org/app/uploads/2017/02/Global-Terrorism-Index-2016.pdf

IEP (2017). *Global Terrorism Index: Measuring and Understanding the Impact of Terrorism*. Institute for Economics and Peace, University of Maryland. Accessed May 20, 2019, from: http://visionofhumanity.org/app/uploads/2017/11/Global-Terrorism-Index-2017.pdf

IEP (2018). *Global Terrorism Index 2018: Measuring the Impact of Terrorism.* Institute for Economics and Peace. Accessed May 20, 2019, from: http://visionofhumanity.org/app/uploads/2018/12/Global-Terrorism-Index-2018-1.pdf

IEP (2019). Global Peace Index 2019: Measuring Peace in a Complex World. Institute for Economics and Peace. Accessed May 20, 2019, from: http://visionofhumanity.org/app/uploads/2019/07/GPI-2019web.pdf

IILHR (2016). *No Way Home: Iraq's Minorities on the Verge of Disappearance*. Minority Rights Group International, the Institute for International Law and Human Rights, No Peace Without Justice, the Unrepresented Nations and Peoples Organization and the Ceasefire Centre for Civilian Rights. Accessed September 22, 2019 from: https://minorityrights.org/wp-content/uploads/2016/07/MRG_CFRep_Iraq_Aug16_UPD-2.pdf

IMF & WB (1999). *The Economic Consequences of the Kosovo Crisis: A preliminary assessment of external financing needs and the role of the fund and the World Bank in the international response*, Washington DC. Accessed May 6, 2019, from: https://www.imf.org/external/pubs/ft/kosovo/041699.htm.

IPC (2019). *Afghanistan: Acute Food Insecurity Situation for August – October 2018 and Projections from November 2018 to February 2019*. Integrated Food Security Phase

Classification. Accessed October 17, 2019 from: http://www.ipcinfo.org/ipc-country-analysis/details-map/en/c/1151733/

IRIN (2010). *Gender-Based Violence in Iraq: The Effects of Violence – Real and Perceived- on the lives of Women, Girls, Men and Boys in Iraq*. Accessed September 22, 2019 from: http://lastradainternational.org/lsidocs/824%20gender%20violence%20in%20Iraq.pdf

IRIN (2013). *Iraq 10 years on: Human Security; More freedom but less security*?, 29 April 2013. Accessed October 13, 2019 from: https://www.refworld.org/docid/517f96f04.html

ISRT (2011). *International Stabilization Response Team (ISRT): Libya – 20 May – 30 June 2011*. Policy Review. Accessed November 30, 2019 from: https://assets.publishing.service.gov.uk/government/uploads/system/uploads/attachment_data/file/67470/libya-isrt-June2011.pdf

Kaiser Tania (2001). *A beneficiary-based evaluation of the UNHCR programme in Guinea*. Evaluation and Policy Analysis Unit, Geneva: UNHCR.

JICA (2010). Human Security Approach: Features and Case Studies. Japan International Cooperation Agency. Accessed March 3, 2019 from: https://www.jica.go.jp/english/publications/jica_archive/brochures/pdf/human.pdf

Jobbágy Zoltán (2016). Asymmetric Warfare - Evolutionary Roots. In: Álmos Péter Kiss (Ed) *Asymmetric Warfare Conflict of the Past, the Present, and the Future*. Proceedings of the Conference in Budapest, Hungary, 9-10 November 2016. NUPS Dialog Campus 2017. http://m.ludita.uni-nke.hu/repozitorium/handle/11410/10997

Jones, Seth G. (2008). *Counterinsurgency in Afghanistan*. RAND, National Defense Institute. Accessed October 12, 2019, from: https://www.rand.org/pubs/monographs/MG595.html

Katzman, Kenneth (2010). The Kurds in Post-Saddam. Congressional Research Service. Accessed September 24, 2019 from: https://fas.org/sgp/crs/mideast/RS22079.pdf

Katzman, Kenneth (2015). *Afghanistan: Post-Taliban Governance, Security, and US Policy. Congressional Research Service*. Accessed November 12, 2019 from: https://www.refworld.org/pdfid/56bb16de4.pdf

Katzman, Kenneth & Thomas, Clayton (2017). *Afghanistan: Post-Taliban Governance, Security, and US Policy*. Congressional Research Service. Accessed November 12, 2019 from: https://fas.org/sgp/crs/row/RL30588.pdf

Khadim, Ahmed Adnan & Khrassn, Basim Ali (2016). *Human Trafficking and Sexual Exploitation: Iraq as a Case Study*. Democratic Arab Center. Accessed September 24, 2019 from: https://democraticac.de/?p=36202#_ftn11

Kilcullen, David J. (2006). *Three Pillars of Counterinsurgency*. Remarks delivered at the U.S. Government Counterinsurgency Conference, Washington D.C., 28 September 2006. Accessed

May 6, 2019, from: http://www.au.af.mil/au/awc/awcgate/uscoin/3pillars_of_counterinsurgency.pdf

Kleinfeld, Rachel & Majeed, Rushda (2016). *Fighting Insurgency with Politics: The Case of Bihar*. Carnegie Endowment for International Peace, Washington. Accessed September 24, 2019 from: https://carnegieendowment.org/files/CP_272_Bihar_Final.pdf

Kofi, Annan (2000). *"Secretary-General Salutes International Workshop on Human Security in Mongolia."* Two-Day Session in Ulaanbaatar, May 8-10, 2000. Press Release SG/SM/7382.

Kofi, Annan (2000). We the People. Report of the secretary General. New York: United Nations.

Kofi, Annan (2005). *In Larger Freedom: Towards Development, Security and Human Rights for all*, Report of the Secretary general. Accessed March 6, 2019 from: http://www.un.org/en/events/pastevents/pdfs/larger_freedom_exec_summary.pdf

Krishnasamy, Kabilan (2015). *The Partnership for Peace in UN Peacebuilding: The Case of Indian Peacekeepers*. The ISA Global South Caucus Conference. Accessed April 25, 2019 from: http://web.isanet.org/Web/Conferences/GSCIS%20Singapore%202015/Archive/e103c2e4-46f0-4e6d-85c4-9999c53ad0b6.pdf

Lamani, Mokhtar (2009). *Minorities in Iraq: The other Victims*. The Centre for International Governance Innovation, CIGI. Accessed November 20, 2019 from: https://www.cigionline.org/sites/default/files/minorities_in_iraq_final.pdf

Larsen, Iselin Hebbert (2010). *UNAMA in Afghanistan: Challenges and Opportunities in Peacemaking, State-building and Coordination*. Norwegian Institute of International Affairs: Department of Security and Conflict Management, Security in Practice 3. Accessed June 16, 2019 from: https://pdfs.semanticscholar.org/cb1b/66ebf42ec229d8fa70c38b6a81a254304c63.pdf

Leaning, Jennifer & Arie, Sam. (2000). *Human Security: A Framework for Assessment in Conflict and Transition*. USAID Complex Emergency Response and Transition Initiative, directed by Tulane University, New Orleans, LA. Accessed February 16, 2019, from: http://citeseerx.ist.psu.edu/viewdoc/download?doi=10.1.1.561.874&rep=rep1&type=pdf

Lee, Jesse (2009). *A New Strategy for Afghanistan and Pakistan*. The White House, Accessed October 22, 2019 from: https://obamawhitehouse.archives.gov/blog/2009/03/27/a-new-strategy-afghanistan-and-pakistan

Leites, Nathan & Wolf, Charles (1970). *Rebellion and Authority: An Analytical Essay on Insurgent Conflict*. Arlington: RAND Corporation.

Livingston, Ian S. & O'Hanlon, Michael (2012). *Afghanistan Index*. Brookings, Accessed November 13, 2019 from: https://www.brookings.edu/wp-content/uploads/2016/07/index20120516.pdf

Livingston, Ian S. & O'Hanlon, Michael (2017). *Afghanistan Index*. Brookings. Accessed November 13, 2019 from: https://www.brookings.edu/wp-content/uploads/2016/07/21csi_20171002_afghanistan_index.pdf

LLLP (2016). *Integrating Refugees and Migrants through Education: Building Bridges in Divided Societies*. Life Long Learning Platform LLLP, European Civil Society for Education. Accessed April7, 2019 from: http://lllplatform.eu/lll/wp-content/uploads/2015/10/LLL-Platform-Policy-Paper-Refugees-and-migrants-and-inclusive-education-Sept-2016.pdf.

López-Claros, Augusto & Hidalgo Silvia (2007). *Humanitarian Response Index 2007: Measuring Commitment to Best Practice*. PalGrave MacMillan, New York

LPRD (2015). *From Conflict to State Building: Aims, Challenges and Opportunities* – LPRD Progress Report 2011 to 2015. The Libyan Programme for Reintegration and Development. Accesses December 12, 2019 from: http://www.libya-businessnews.com/wp-content/uploads/2015/07/LPRD-Progress-Report-2011-2015-English.pdf

Mahadevan, Prem (2014). *The Talibanization of Insurgency*. Center for Security Studies. Accessed October 8, 2019 from: http://www.css.ethz.ch/en/services/digital-library/articles/article.html/178192/pdf

Marsden, Peter (2002). *Afghanistan: Minorities, Conflict and the Search for Peace*. Minority Rights Group Report. Accessed October 8, 2019 from: https://minorityrights.org/wp-content/uploads/old-site-downloads/download-132-Afghanistan-Minorities-Conflict-and-the-Search-for-Peace.pdf

Marsh (2019). *2019 Terrorism Risk Insurance Report*. Marsh & McLennan Companies. Accessed March 9, 2019 from: https://www.mmc.com/content/dam/mmc-web/insights/publications/2019/may/2019-terrorism-risk-insurance-report.pdf

Mats R. Berdal (1993). *Whither UN Peacekeeping? An Analysis of the Changing Military Requirements of UN Peacekeeping with Proposal for its Enhancement*, Adelphi Paper 281: 12-23. Oxford and New York: Oxford University Press and the International Institute for Strategic Studies.

Matthews, Matt. M. (2010) *Operation Al-Fajr: A Study in Army and Marine Corps Joint Operations*. Combat Studies Institute Press, Fort Leavenworth, Kansas. Accessed March 13, 2019 from: https://www.armyupress.army.mil/Portals/7/combat-studies-institute/csi-books/matthews_fajr.pdf

MAU (2009). *Mandaean Human Rights Annual Report*. Mandaean Human Rights Group. Accessed November 12, 2019 from: http://www.genocidewatch.org/images/Syria_09_11_xx_Mandaean_human_rights_annual_report.pdf

McGregor, Andrew (2017). The Missing Military: Options for a New National Libyan Army. AIS Special Report, Aberfoyle International Security. Accessed May 18, 2019, from: https://www.aberfoylesecurity.com/?tag=bunyan-al-marsous

McNally, Lauren & Weinbaum, Marvin G. (2016). A Resilient Al-Qaeda in Afghanistan and Pakistan. Middle East Institute, Policy Focus Series 2016-18. Accessed November 22, 2019, from: https://www.mei.edu/sites/default/files/publications/PF18_Weinbaum_AQinAFPAK_web_1.pdf

MCWP (2006). Counterinsurgency. Marine Corps Warfighting Publication, FM 3-24, MCWP 3-33.5. Department of the Army, Washington DC. Accessed April 8, 2019 from: https://www.hsdl.org/?view&did=468442

Megerisi, Tarek (2019). Libya's Global Civil War. Policy Brief, European Council on Foreign Relations ECFR. Accessed December 14, 2019 from: https://www.ecfr.eu/page/-/libyas_global_civil_war1.pdf

Metz, Helen Chapin (1987). Libya: A Country Study. Federal Research Division, Library of Congress. Accessed November 5, 2019 from: http://www.memory.loc.gov/master/frd/frdcstdy/li/libyacountrystud00metz_0/libyacountrystud00metz_0.pdf

Metz, Steven (2007). *Learning from Iraq: Counterinsurgency in American Strategy*. Accessed November 7, 2019 from: https://ssi.armywarcollege.edu/pdffiles/PUB752.pdf

Metz, Steven & Millen Raymond (2004). *Insurgency and Counterinsurgency in the 21st Century: Reconceptualizing Threat and Response*. Strategic Studies Institute. Accessed May6, 2019 from: http://ssi.armywarcollege.edu/pdffiles/pub586.pdf

Michael, Sarah (2002). *The Role of NGOs in Human Security*. Hauser Center for Nonprofit Organizations Working Paper No. 12. Accessed March10, 2019 from: https://papers.ssrn.com/sol3/papers.cfm?abstract_id=351240

Mockaitis, Thomas R. (2011). *Resolving Insurgencies*. Strategic Studies Institute. Accessed March 17, 2019, from: http://ssi.armywarcollege.edu/pdffiles/PUB1072.pdf

MOD. (2009). *Countering Insurgency*. Army Code 71876, London. Accessed March 17, 2019, from: http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/shared/bsp/hi/pdfs/16_11_09_army_manual.pdf

MRG (2019). *World Directory of Minorities and indigenous Peoples: Afghanistan. Minority Rights Group International*. Accessed November 3, 2019 from: https://minorityrights.org/minorities/pashtuns/

MRGI (2018). *World Directory of Minorities and Indigenous Peoples. Minority Rights Group International.* Accessed November 3, 2019 from: https://minorityrights.org/minorities/tebu/

MSF (2013). Healing Iraqis: The Challenges of providing Mental Health Care in Iraq. Medecins Sans Frontières. Accessed October 13, 2019, from: https://www.msf.org/sites/msf.org/files/english_iraq_mental_health_final_report.pdf

Mueller, Karl P. (2015). *Precision and Purpose: Airpower in the Libyan Civil War*. RAND Corporation, Accessed December 3, 2019 from: https://www.rand.org/content/dam/rand/pubs/research_reports/RR600/RR676/RAND_RR676.pdf

Muwafaq, Ahmad (2018). *The Shabak minority of Iraq Pays the Price for Political Change*. Accessed September 25 2019, from: https://fanack.com/religions/shabak-minority/

NATO (2011a). *Allied Joint Doctrine for Counterinsurgency (COIN) - AJP-3.4.4*. North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, NATO Standardisation Agency (NSA). Accessed March 29, 2019 from: https://info.publicintelligence.net/NATO-Counterinsurgency.pdf.

NATO (2011b). *Operation Unified Protector Final Missions Stats*. Fact Sheet, 02 November 2011. North Atlantic Treaty Organization. Accessed March 27, 2019 from: https://www.nato.int/nato_static/assets/pdf/pdf_2011_11/20111108_111107-factsheet_up_factsfigures_en.pdf

NATO (2019). A Special Report on Child Soldiers in Afghanistan. NATO Association of Canada. Accessed May 10, 2020. Available at: https://natoassociation.ca/a-special-report-on-child-soldiers-in-afghanistan/

NATO Glossary of Terms and Definitions, AAP-06. Edition 2019. NATO Standardization Office (NSO) 2019. https://www.google.hu/search?sourceid=navclient&hl=hu&ie=UTF-8&rlz=1T4IRFA_enHU468HU468&q=AAP-06+Edition+2019#spf=1586780212419

NCA (2010). *Trafficking, Sexual Exploitation and prostitution of Women and Girls in Iraq*. Norwegian Church Aid. Accessed May25, 2019 from: https://www.kirkensnodhjelp.no/contentassets/c1403acd5da84d39a120090004899173/2010/report-trafficking-in-iraq-pdf.pdf

Neale, Erin A. (2018). *Timeline: How Libya's Revolution Came Undone*. Atlantic Council, Accessed December 29, 2019 from: https://www.atlanticcouncil.org/blogs/new-atlanticist/timeline-how-libya-s-revolution-came-undone/

Nemat, Orzala Ashraf; Werner, Karin (2016). *The role of Civil Society in Promoting Good Governance in Afghanistan*. Afghanistan Research and Evaluation Unit and Deutsche Gesellschaft für Internationale Zusammenarbeit (GIZ) GmbH. Accessed October 7, 2019 from: https://areu.org.af/wp-content/uploads/2017/01/1613-The-Role-of-Civil-Society-in-Promoting-Good-Governance-in-Afghanistan.pdf

Nesi, Giuseppe. (2011). *Recognition of the Libyan National Transitional Council: When, How and Why*. The Italian Yearbook of International Law Online. 21:45-59.

Nielsen, Thomas G.; Syed, Mahroona H; & Vestenskov, David (2015). *Counterinsurgency and Counterterrorism: Sharing Experience in Afghanistan and Pakistan*. Royal Danish Defence College. Accessed November 14, 2019 from:

http://www.fak.dk/publikationer/Documents/Sharing%20Experiences%20in%20Afghanistan%20and%20Pakistan.pdf

NRLS (2019). *Links Between the Turkish State (AKP) and (ISIS).* Rojava Center for Strategic Studies.

O'Hanlon, Michael E. & Albuquerque, Adriana Lins de (2005). *Afghanistan Index*. Brookings. Accessed November 14, 2019 from: https://www.brookings.edu/wp-content/uploads/2016/07/index20050223.pdf

O'Hanlon, Michael E. & Livingston, Ian (2013). *Iraq Index*: Tracking Variables of Reconstruction & Security in Iraq. Brookings. Accessed October 11, 2019 from: https://www.brookings.edu/wp-content/uploads/2016/07/index20130726.pdf

OECD. (2015). *States of Fragility 2015: Meeting Post-2015 Ambitions*. OECD Publishing, Paris. Accessed April 23, 2019 from: http://www.oecd.org/dac/governance-peace/publications/documentuploads/SOF2015.pdf

Office of the Press Secretary (2005). *Joint Declaration of the United States-Afghanistan Strategic Partnership*. US Department of State. Accessed October 28, 2019 from: https://2001-2009.state.gov/p/sca/rls/pr/2005/46628.htm

Oosterveld, Valerie (2018). *Canada and the Development of International Criminal Law: What Role for the Future?* Centre for International Governance Innovation. Accessed March 19, 2019 from: https://www.cigionline.org/sites/default/files/documents/Reflections%20Series%20Paper%20no.16web.pdf

OSAC (2019). *Afghanistan 2019 Crime & Safety Report*. Overseas Security Advisory Council, US Department of State. Accessed November 2, 2019 from: https://www.osac.gov/Country/Afghanistan/Content/Detail/Report/52cf16be-fad5-4821-adb2-15f4aebc1356

Oxfam (2013). *Civil Society in Fragile and conflict affected states*. Accessed March 28, 2019 from: https://www.oxfam.org/sites/www.oxfam.org/files/hpn-civil-society-fragile-states-260713-en.pdf

Pack, Jason (2019). *Kingdom of Militias: Libya's Second War of Post-Qadhafi Succession*. Italian Institute for International Political Studies ISPI. Accessed December 2, 2019 from: https://www.ispionline.it/sites/default/files/pubblicazioni/ispi_analysis_libya_pack_may_2019_0.pdf

Pankowski, Adam. *Wikileaks Project: The Taliban's Assets in the United Arab Emirates*. International Institute for Counter-Terrorism ICT. Accesses November 28, 2019 from: https://www.ict.org.il/ictFiles/0/IRI%20-%20Flags/wikileaks_UAE.pdf

Paul, Christopher, Colin P. Clark, and Beth Grill. Victory (2010). *Has a Thousand Fathers: Sources of Success in Counterinsurgency*. RAND. 2010. Accessed April7, 2019 from: http://www.rand.org/pubs/monographs/MG964.html

Pedneault, Jonathan (2019). *Afghanistan's Silent Mental Health Crisis*. Human Rights Watch. Accessed October 29, 2019 from: https://www.hrw.org/news/2019/10/07/afghanistans-silent-mental-health-crisis

Peinado, Manuela Mesa (n.d) *The Role Of NGOs and The Civil Society In Peace and Reconciliation Processes*. Accessed March 5, 2019 from: http://www.ceipaz.org/images/contenido/Role%20of%20NGOs%20and%20civil%20society%20in%20peacebuilding.pdf

Perry, Walter L. & Kassing David (2015). *Toppling the Taliban: Air Ground Operations in Afghanistan*, October 2001-June 2002. RAND Corporation. Accesses November 6, 2019 from: https://www.rand.org/content/dam/rand/pubs/research_reports/RR300/RR381/RAND_RR381.pdf

Pouw, E. H. (2013). *International human rights law and the law of armed conflict in the context of counterinsurgency: With a particular focus on targeting and operational detention*. PhD thesis, University of Amsterdam. Accessed April10, 2019, from: https://dare.uva.nl/search?identifier=1bd1879d-696c-4eeb-975e-eefa9c76ea18

Rahim, Mushtaq Muhammad (2018). *Peace Prevails: A Review of the Process to Peace and Reconciliation between the Afghan Government and Hezb-e-Islami. Berghof Transitions* Series no 13, Berghof Foundation, German Cooperation. Accessed October 29, 2019 from: https://www.berghof-foundation.org/fileadmin/redaktion/Publications/Papers/Transitions_Series/transitions13_afghanistan_english.pdf

Rijke, Niels (2014). *Intervention in Libya: A Crime of Aggression?* ICD Brief 4. International Crimes Database. Accessed December 16, 2019 from: http://www.internationalcrimesdatabase.org/upload/documents/20140916T170326-ICD%20Brief%204%20-%20Rijke.pdf

Sab, Randa (2014). *Economic Impact of Selected Conflicts in the Middle East: What can we learn from the past?* IMF Working Paper. International Monetary Fund. Accessed June 17, 2019 from: https://www.imf.org/external/pubs/ft/wp/2014/wp14100.pdf.

Salama, Hana (2018). *Counting Casualties: Operationalizing SDG Indicator 16.1.2 in Libya*, Briefing Paper. Security Assessment in North Africa, Small Arms Survey. Accessed May7, 2019 from: http://www.smallarmssurvey.org/fileadmin/docs/T-Briefing-Papers/SAS-SANA-BP-Counting-Casualties-Libya.pdf

Salame, Ghassan (2017). *Remarks of SRSG Ghassan Salame to the United Nations Security Council- 28 August 2017*. UNSMIL, accessed May 23, 2019 from:

https://unsmil.unmissions.org/remarks-srsg-ghassan-salamé-united-nations-security-council-28-august-2017

Salloum, Saad (2016). *Violence Against Minorities in Iraq: Factors, Indicators, Key Actors, Capacity-Building, and an Early Warning System*. Heartland Alliance International, MCMD. Accessed September 19, 2019 from: http://masaratiraq.org/wp-content/uploads/2016/10/vol-5-E.pdf

SC (2015). *Unanimously Adopting Resolution 2259 (2015), Security Council Welcomes Signing of Libyan Political Agreement on New Government for Strife-Torn Country*. United Nations SC/12185. Accessed May 18, 2019 from: https://www.un.org/press/en/2015/sc12185.doc.htm

SC (2019). *Stop the War on Children: Protecting Children in 21st Century Conflict*. Save the Children. Accessed December 13, 2019 from: https://www.stopwaronchildren.org/report.pdf

Scott Rachel (2014). *Imagining More Effective Humanitarian Aid: A Donor Perspective*. OECD Development Cooperation Working Paper. Accessed April 7, 2019 from: http://www.oecd.org/dac/Imagining%20More%20Effective%20Humanitarian%20Aid_October%202014.pdf

Scott, Rachel (2014). *Imagining More Effective Humanitarian Aid: A Donor Perspective*. OECD Development Co-operation Directorate. Accessed May 28, 2019, from: http://www.oecd.org/dac/conflict-fragility-resilience/docs/Imagining%20More%20Effective%20Humanitarian%20Aid_October%202014.pdf

Serena, Chad C.; Proche, Isaac R.; Predd, Joel B.; Osburg Jan, Lossing, Bradly (2014). *Lessons Learned from the Afghan Mission Network: Developing a Coalition Contingency Network*. RAND Corporation, Accessed September 28 2019, fom: https://www.rand.org/content/dam/rand/pubs/research_reports/RR300/RR302/RAND_RR302.pdf

Stewart, Megan A. (2015). Civil War as State-Building: The Determinants of Insurgent Public Goods Provision. International Studies Association. http://web.isanet.org/Web/Conferences/New%20Orleans%202015/Archive/d2a4ea56-309f-42b4-b2d1-74772af1f9b2.pdf

Shellito, K. (2016). *The Economic Effect of Refugee Crises on Host Countries and Implications for the Lebanese Case*, Joseph Wharton Research Scholars. Accessed May 11, 2019 from: http://repository.upenn.edu/cgi/viewcontent.cgi?article=1022&context=joseph_wharton_scholars

Siebens, James & Case Benjamine (2012). *The Libyan Civil War: Context and Consequences*. THINK International and Human Security. Accessed December 19, 2019, from: http://citeseerx.ist.psu.edu/viewdoc/download?doi=10.1.1.462.690&rep=rep1&type=pdf

Soeya, Yoshihide (2004). *Redefining Japan's Security Profile: International Security, Human Security, and an East Asian Community*. IIPS International Conference, A New Horizon for

Japan's Security Policy: Basic Concept and Framework. Accessed April 19, 2019, from: http://www.iips.org/publications/data/04asiasec_soeya.pdf

IAI (2018). *Stability in Libya: OSCE's Role Between Internal Obstacles and External Challenges*. IAI Research Studies, accessed December 5, 2019, from: https://www.iai.it/sites/default/files/iairs_1.pdf

Stern, Jessica & McBride, Megan K. (2013). Terrorism after the 2003 Invasion of Iraq. Accessed September 26, 2019 from: https://watson.brown.edu/costsofwar/files/cow/imce/papers/2013/Terrorism%20after%20the%202003%20Invasion%20of%20Iraq.pdf

Stewart, Frances & Brown, Graham. (2009). *Fragile States*, CRISE Working Paper no 51. CRISE Centre for Research on Inequality, Human Security and Ethnicity. Accessed March 27, 2019, from: http://r4d.dfid.gov.uk/PDF/Outputs/Inequality/wp51.pdf

Taha, Manal (2017). *Matriarchal and Tribal Identity, Community Resilience, and Vulnerability in South Libya*. United States Institute for Peace USIP, Accessed December 7, 2019, from: https://www.usip.org/sites/default/files/2017-12/sr416-matriarchal-and-tribal-identity-community-resilience-and-vulnerability-in-south-libya.pdf

Stockholm Initiative (1991). *The Stockholm Initiative on Global Security and Governance*, "Common Responsibility in the 1990s" a paper published by the Prime Minister's Office, Government of Sweden, Stockholm, pp 17-18.

Toaldo, Mattia (2017). *Libya Among Negotiations, Escalation and Chaos*. Dossier: Geopolitical Turmoil and its Effects in the Mediterranean Region. IEMed. Mediterranean Yearbook 117-121, accessed December 6, 2019, from: https://www.iemed.org/observatori/arees-danalisi/arxius-adjunts/anuari/med.2017/IEMed_MedYearbook2017_libya_escalation_chaos_Toaldo.pdf

Topalovic, Goran (2017). *How is Peace-Building Implemented Most Effectively*. Conflux Center, accessed April 27, 2019 from: https://www.confluxcenter.org/how-is-peace-building-implemented-most-effectively-2/

TRAC (2019). *Al-Zintan Revolutionaries' Military Council (ZMC).* Terrorism Research & Analysis Consortium, Accessed on May 17, 2019, from: https://www.trackingterrorism.org/group/al-zintan-revolutionaries-military-council-zmc

Trading Economics (2019). *Libya: Unemployment Rate.* Accessed December 8, 2019 from: https://tradingeconomics.com/libya/unemployment-rate

TRADOC. (2007). *A Military Guide to Terrorism in the Twenty-First Century*. US Army Training and Doctrine Command. Accessed May 5, 2019 from: https://fas.org/irp/threat/terrorism/guide.pdf

Ucko David & Egnell Robert (2014). *Options for Avoiding Counterinsurgencies*. On Military Interventions 44(1). Accessed March 17, 2019, from:

http://www.strategicstudiesinstitute.army.mil/pubs/Parameters/issues/Spring_2014/2_UckoEgnell.pdf

Ugarriza, Juan E. & Weintraub Michael (2015). *The effects of Ideology on Insurgent Targeting Decisions*. Accessed February 16, 2019, from: https://static1.squarespace.com/static/522fc0aee4b06bf96fa60e92/t/559fc222e4b06bf7f9d5f32a/1436533282283/Ideology+-+FINAL+-+not-anon.pdf

UN (1992). *Agenda for Peace Preventive Diplomacy, Peacemaking and Peacekeeping*. Report of the Secretary-General. para. 21. Accessed February 16, 2019 from: https://www.un.org/ruleoflaw/files/A_47_277.pdf

UN (1995). *Somalia UNOSOM II*. Accessed February 16, 2019 from: https://peacekeeping.un.org/en/mission/past/unosom2backgr2.html

UN (1995). *Supplement to An Agenda for Peace*, para 21. Accessed February 16, 2019 from: https://www.un.org/documents/ga/docs/50/plenary/a50-60.htm

UN (2000). *Report of the Panel on United Nations Peace Operations*. Accessed February 16, 2019 from: https://www.un.org/en/events/pastevents/pdfs/Brahimi_Report_Exec_Summary.pdf

UN (2001a). *Resolution 1378*. United Nations Security Council. Accessed February 17, 2019 from: http://unscr.com/en/resolutions/doc/1378

UN (2001b). *Resolution 1386*. United Nations Security Council. Accessed February 17, 2019 from: http://unscr.com/en/resolutions/doc/1386

UN (2004). *A more Secure World: Our Shared Responsibility: Report of the High-Level Panel on Threats, Challenges and Change*.

UN (2006). *The Rights of Non-Citizens*. United Nations: New York and Geneva. Accessed February 17, 2019 from: http://www.ohchr.org/Documents/Publications/noncitizensen.pdf

UN (2009a). *Human Security in Theory and Practice: Application of the Human Security Concept and the United Nations Trust Fund for Human Security*. Human Security Unit. Accessed Mary 19, 2019 from: https://www.unocha.org/sites/dms/HSU/Publications%20and%20Products/Human%20Security%20Tools/Human%20Security%20in%20Theory%20and%20Practice%20English.pdf

UN (2009b). *Human Security in Theory and Practice. Human Security Unit: Office for the Coordination of Humanitarian Affairs*, United Nations, New York, Accessed March 17, 2019 from: http://ochaonline.un.org/humansecurity

UN (2009c). *Implementing the Responsibility to Protect: Report of the Secretary General*, A/63/677. Accessed June 6, 2019 from: http://responsibilitytoprotect.org/SGRtoPEng%20(4).pdf

UN (2019). *Children and Armed Conflict in Afghanistan: Report of the Secretary General*. United Nations Security Council, Accessed September 22, 2019, from: https://reliefweb.int/sites/reliefweb.int/files/resources/N1927514.pdf

UN (2019). *Libya*. Office of the Special Representative on Sexual Violence in Conflict. Accesses January 3, 2020 from: https://www.un.org/sexualviolenceinconflict/countries/libya/

UN (2020a). *Children of Iraq Dramatically Impacted by ISIL's Extreme Violence and Counter-Military Operations*. Office of the Special Representative of the Secretary-General for Children and Armed Conflict. accessed May 10, 2020. Available at: https://childrenandarmedconflict.un.org/2020/01/children-of-iraq-dramatically-impacted-by-isils-extreme-violence-and-counter-military-operations/

UN (2020b). *Libya*. Office of the Special Representative of the Secretary-General for Children and Armed Conflict. accessed May 10, 2020. Available at: https://childrenandarmedconflict.un.org/where-we-work/libya/

UNAMA (2019). *Afghanistan: Protection of Civilians in Armed Conflict*, Annual Report 2018). United Nations Assistance Mission in Afghanistan. Accessed September 20, 2019 from: https://unama.unmissions.org/sites/default/files/afghanistan_protection_of_civilians_annual_report_2018_final_24_feb_2019_0.pdf

UNDP (1994). *Human Development Report 1994*. United Nations Development Programme, New York. Accessed March 7 2019 from: http://hdr.undp.org/sites/default/files/reports/255/hdr_1994_en_complete_nostats.pdf

UNHCR (2005). *Background Information on the Situation of Non-Muslim Religious Minorities in Iraq*. Accessed August 29, 2019 from: https://www.refworld.org/pdfid/4371cf5b4.pdf

UNHCR (2018). *Situation of Christians in Baghdad*. Accessed August 29, 2019, from: https://www.refworld.org/pdfid/5a66f80e4.pdf

UNHCR (2019). *Afghanistan*. Accessed September 27, 2019 from: https://www.unhcr.org/afghanistan.html

UNHCR (2019). *COI Note on the Situation of Yazidi IDPs in the Kurdistan Region of Iraq.* Accessed August 29, 2019, from: https://www.refworld.org/pdfid/5cd156657.pdf

UNICEF (2019). *Libya: Humanitarian Situation Report, July-September 2019*. Accessed November 27, 2019 from: https://reliefweb.int/sites/reliefweb.int/files/resources/UNICEF%20Libya%20Humanitarian%20Situation%20Report%20-%20July-September%202019.pdf

UNOCHA (2017). *Humanitarian Needs Overview*. Accessed April 10, 2019 from: https://www.unocha.org/sites/unocha/files/dms/afg_2018_humanitarian_needs_overview_0.pdf

UNOCHA (2019). *Libya - Humanitarian Needs Overview*. Accessed November 27, 2019 from: https://www.humanitarianresponse.info/sites/www.humanitarianresponse.info/files/documents/files/2019_lby_hno_draftv1.1.pdf

UNTFHS. www.un.org/humansecurity/

US Air Force (2005). *Operation Anaconda: An Air Power Perspective*. Headquarters United States Air Force AF/XOL. Accessed November 19, 2019 from: https://media.defense.gov/2014/Sep/17/2001329845/-1/-1/0/anaconda%20ADA495248.pdf

US Army (2014). *Insurgencies and Countering Insurgencies*. Headquarters: Department of the Army: Washington DC, June 2014

GAI (2012). *Guide to the Analysis of Insurgency*. US Government. accessed September 10, 2019 from: https://www.hsdl.org/?view&did=713599

Vallings, Claire & Moreno-Torres (2005). *Drivers of Fragility: What Makes States Fragile?* Department of International Development. PRDE Working Paper NO. 7. Accessed January 12, 2020, from: https://pdfs.semanticscholar.org/dc41/314b1c08b05cbbb2f90d0dd4f63f0fb04798.pdf

Watts, Stephen et.al (2014). *Countering Others' Insurgencies: Understanding U.S. Small Footprint Interventions in Local Context*. RAND Corporation https://www.jstor.org/stable/pdf/10.7249/j.ctt5vjvmn.10.pdf

WB (1999). *World Development Report 2000/1: Attacking poverty, Approach and Outline*. World Bank Report. Accessed February 24 2019, from: https://siteresources.worldbank.org/INTPOVERTY/Resources/WDR/approutl.pdf

Wehrey, Frederic & Arababa'h, Ala' (2015). *Rising Out of Chaos: The Islamic State in Libya.* Carnegie, Middle East Center. Accessed December 2, 2019 from: https://carnegie-mec.org/diwan/59268?lang=en

Wehrey, Frederic (2014). *Ending Libya's Civil War: Reconciling Politics, Rebuilding Security.* Carnegie Endowment for International Peace. Accessed December 2, 2019 from: https://carnegieendowment.org/files/ending_libya_civ_war.pdf

WFP (2018). *Libya MSNA (2018): Food Security.* World Food Programme, available at: https://docs.wfp.org/api/documents/WFP-0000102636/download/?_ga=2.68205201.1811097705.1576534501-874177804.1576534501

WHO (2011). *Country Statistical Profiles.* Annual Report of the Regional Director. Accessed December 18, 2019, from: http://applications.emro.who.int/docs/RD_Annual_Report_2011_country_statistics_EN_14587.pdf

WHO (2019). *Afghanistan: Attacks on Health Care in 2019 as of 22 October*. World Health Organization. Accessed November 16, 2019 from: https://reliefweb.int/sites/reliefweb.int/files/resources/afghanistan_attacks_on_health_care_in_2019_20191022.pdf

WHO (2019). *Health Sector Bulletin: Libya*. Accessed December 18, 2019 from: https://www.who.int/health-cluster/countries/libya/Lybia-Health-Sector-Bulletin-Sep-2019.pdf

Winer, Jonathan M. (2019). *Origins of the Libyan Conflict and Options for its resolution*. Middle East Institute, Policy Paper 2019-4. Accessed November 29, 2019 from: https://www.mei.edu/sites/default/files/2019-03/Origins_of_the_Libyan_Conflict_and_Options_for_its_Resolution.PDF

World Bank (2010). *The impact of refugees on neighboring countries: A development challenge.* World Development Report 2011. Accessed July 19, 2019 from: https://openknowledge.worldbank.org/bitstream/handle/10986/9221/WDR2011_0028.pdf.

World Bank (2019). *Building Confidence Amid Uncertainty: Afghanistan Development Update*, July 2019. The World Bank, Accessed November 8, 2019 from: http://documents.worldbank.org/curated/en/546581556051841507/pdf/Building-Confidence-Amid-Uncertainty.pdf

World Bank (2019). Progress in the Face of Insecurity: Improved Health Outcomes in Afghanistan. Accessed November 12, 2019 from: http://pubdocs.worldbank.org/en/240231520278716578/WorldBank-Afghanistan-DES-3-5-18-single-pages.pdf

World Bank. 2005. *Engaging Civil Society Organizations in Conflict-Affected and Fragile States: Three African Country Case Studies* (English). Washington, DC: World Bank. Accessed December 5, 2019 from: http://documents.worldbank.org/curated/en/525761468135010769/Engaging-civil-society-organizations-in-conflict-affected-and-fragile-states-three-African-country-case-studies

World Population Group (2019). *Afghanistan Population 2019*. Accessed 13, 2019 from: http://worldpopulationreview.com/countries/afghanistan-population/

WPF (2016). *Libya Short Brief. African Politics, African Peace,* World Peace Foundation. Accessed 28 December 2019 from: https://sites.tufts.edu/wpf/files/2017/07/Libya-brief.pdf

## News

Achakzai, Saeed Ali (2007, September 1), South Korea paid $20 million ransom: Taliban leader. *Reuters*, September 1, 2007. Retrieved February 18, 2020. Available at: https://www.reuters.com/article/us-afghan-koreans-ransom/south-korea-paid-20-million-ransom-taliban-leader-idUSCOL31793120070901

Applebaum, Anne (2008, September 23). *Fixing Failed Aid: The Chaos of Foreign Aid in Afghanistan*. Slate, accessed April 10, 2019 from: https://slate.com/news-and-politics/2008/09/the-chaos-of-foreign-aid-in-afghanistan.html

Azami (2018, December 22). How does the Taliban make money? *BBC News*, Accessed October 20, 2019 from: https://www.bbc.com/news/world-46554097

BBC (2016, January 11). Guide to Key Libyan Militias. *BBC News*, November 22, 2019 from: https://www.bbc.com/news/world-middle-east-19744533

Farmer, Ben (2019, July 17). Afghanistan's Health System Threatened as Taliban order 42 clinics to close. *The Telegraph*. Accessed October 27, 2019 from: https://www.telegraph.co.uk/global-health/terror-and-security/afghanistans-health-system-threatened-taliban-order-42-clinics/

Reuter (2017, May 28). Libyan Islamist Group Ansar Al-Sharia Says it is Dissolving. *Reuters*. Accessed November 28, 2019, from: https://uk.reuters.com/article/uk-libya-security-idUKKBN18N0YZ

**Websites and Other Online Sources**

Amirah-Fernandez, Haizam (2013). Libya and the problematic Political Isolation Law. *Real Instituto Elcano*. Accessed February 14, 2020, from: http://www.operationspaix.net/DATA/DOCUMENT/8026~v~Libya_and_the_problematic_Political_Isolation_Law.pdf

Bressan, Sarah (2020). *What's Left of the Failed States Debate? Putting Five Hypothesis to the Test.* Global Public Policy Institute. Accessed November 10, 2020 from: https://www.gppi.net/2020/05/13/whats-left-of-the-failed-states-debate

Chomsky, Naom (2011). *On Libya and the Unfolding Crisis*, Naom Chomsky interviewed by Stephen Shalom and Michael Albert, Znet, March 30, 2011. Accessed October 25, 2019 from: https://chomsky.info/20110330/

Luca, Jim (2019). *What are Centrifugal and Centripetal Forces*. Live Science, https://www.livescience.com/52488-centrifugal-centripetal-forces.html

Synovitz, Ron (2004). Afghanistan: Gender Taboos Keep Women From Seeking Medical Care. Radio Free Europe. Accessed January 2021, from: https://www.rferl.org/a/1051746.html

Rada, Péter (2011) *The Rubik's Cube of democratic development a normative model of statebuilding.* Doktori (PhD) értekezés, Budapesti Corvinus Egyetem, Nemzetközi Kapcsolatok Doktori Iskola. Available at: http://phd.lib.uni-corvinus.hu/531/

# List of Author's Publications

1. Shamieh Luna (2019). Women Support of Insurgency in Syria. (In) Hosseini Behnaz. (Ed) Women in Conflict and Post-Conflict Situations: An Anthropology of Cases from Iraq, Iran, Syria and other countries. LIT VERLAG GmbH & Co. KG, Wien. 95-118
2. Shamieh Luna (2019). ISIS Marketing Strategy to Recruit Members: ISIS Cognitive Dimensions in Information Operations. Available at: https://honvedelem.hu/wp-content/uploads/2019/12/Luna-SHAMIEH_ISIS-MARKETING-STRATEGY-TO-RECRUIT.pdf
3. Shamieh Luna (2019). The Impact of Asymmetric Warfare on Human Security. (In) Kiss Peter (Ed) Asymmetric Warfare: Conflict of the Past, the Present, and the Future: Conference Conclusions. Dialog Campus Kiadó, Budapest.
4. Shamieh Luna (2017). The Impact of Asymmetric Warfare on Neighboring Countries: Syria Crisis as a Case Study. Available at http://hvktkh.hm.gov.hu/kiadvanyok/dokumentumok/asymmetricwar.pdf
5. Shamieh Luna (2016). Human Security Providers in Fragile States Under Asymmetric War Conditions. International Journal of Social, Behavioral, Educational, Economic, Business and Industrial Engineering vol: 10 no: 6. http://iust.org/publications/10004627/human-security-providers-in-fragile-state-under-asymmetric-war-conditions

   Cited by:

   I) Onditi F. (2020). New Possibilities for a Peaceful Digital Society in Violence Prevalent Geographies. Journal of Peacebuilding & Development. September 2020. doi:10.1177/1542316620958673

6. Shamieh Luna & Szenes Zoltan. (2015). The Propaganda of ISIS using the virtual world. Defence Against Terrorism Review: DATR, vol 7, no 1. http://whww.coedat.nato.int/publication/datr/volume10/02-ThePropaganda_of_ISIS_DAESH_through_VirtualSpace.pdf

   Cited by:

   I) Abe, Kenji (2016). The Only Solution for the Human Civilization to Avoid the Future Apocalypse. European Journal of Academic Essays. 3(3): 121-130

II) Al Bayati, Umniah H. (2020). "Video Content Analysis of the Taliban, ISIS, and al-Qa'ida: Common Themes and the Utilization of Different Sonic Modes." Thesis, Georgia State University. https://scholarworks.gsu.edu/political_science_theses/76
III) Alqurainy, Sara Hamad; Adnan Hamedi M. & Abubakar, Abubakar Usman (2019). The Road to Slaughter: ISIS Process of Dehumanizing the Enemy. Serbiluz. Opcion, Año 35, Especial N 19: 2757-2774. Available at: https://www.researchgate.net/publication/335543107_The_Road_to_the_Slaughter_ISIS_Process_of_Dehumanizing_the_Enemy
IV) Anamarija Filipović. (2018). Aktivnost Islamske države na društvenim mrežama. Repozitorij Fakulteta hrvatskih studija. Repozitorij doktorskih, diplomskih, završnih i ostalih znanstvenih radova Fakulteta hrvatskih studija. Available at: https://repozitorij.hrstud.unizg.hr
V) Bolechow, Bartosz (2020). Słowa w cieniu mieczy. Dabiq i narracja Państwa Islamskiego", Wydawnictwo Uniwersytetu Wrocławskiego, Wrocław
VI) Culp Richard Bryant (2019). Expert Perspectives on How the Islamic State Potentially Shaped the Future of Islamic Transnational Terrorism: An Exploratory Study. Walden University (PhD Thesis). Available at: https://scholarworks.waldenu.edu/cgi/viewcontent.cgi?article=8164&context=dissertations
VII) Falode, Adwunmi J. (2018). Terrorism 4.0: A Global and Structural Analysis. Open Political /science 1(1): 12-31. Available at: https://www.degruyter.com/view/j/openps.2017.1.issue-1/openps-2018-0013/openps-2018-0013.xml
VIII) German, Kathleen and Pennington, Rosemary (2019) "Sisters of The Caliphate: Media And The Women Of ISIS," Journal of Vincentian Social Action: 4(2): 7. Available at: https://scholar.stjohns.edu/jovsa/vol4/iss2/7
IX) Godnick, William H. & Guenni David (2020). Social Media Use in the Venezuelan Defense and Security Sectors: Testing and Refining a Conceptual /framework. Perry Center Occasional Paper: April 2020. Available at: https://www.williamjperrycenter.org/sites/default/files/publication_associated_files/Social%20Media%20Use%20in%20the%20Venezuelan%20Defense%20and%20Security%20Sectors.pdf
X) José Manuel & Moreno-Mercado (2020). Analysis and effects of jihadist propaganda in the media in Spain (2016-2019). Revista española de ciencia política,(52): 37-58.
XI) Julian Droogan & Shane Peattie (2017). Mapping the thematic landscape of Dabiq magazine, Australian Journal of International Affairs, 71:6, 591-620, DOI:10.1080/10357718.2017.1303443
XII) Kis-Benedek, József (2016). Illegal Migration and Terrorism. Journal of Security and Sustainability Issues. 5(4): 455-464. Available at: https://jssidoi.org/jssi/uploads/journals/Journal_of_Security_and_Sustainability_Issues_Vol5_No4_print.pdf#page=7
XIII) Kiss Eszter (2019). Populizmus és terrorizmus-menedzsment. Betekintés a terrortámadásokat értelmező politikai beszédbe. Available at: https://www.mediakutato.hu/cikk/2019_02_nyar/06_populizmus_es_terrorizmus-menedzsment.pdf

XIV) Matusitz, Jonathan (2021). *Communication in Global Jihad*. Routledge: NewYork.
XV) Milton Daniel (2018). Fatal Attraction: Explaining Variation in the Attractiveness of Islamic State Propaganda. Conflict Management and Peace Science. Available at: https://doi.org/10.1177/0738894218759008
XVI) Moawad, Jad (2017). The Myth of the Clash Between Islam and the West Revisited: ISIL, Media and Adaptation. Politics Disinformation Culture. Available at: https://publicseminar.org/2017/09/the-myth-of-the-clash-between-islam-and-the-west-revisited/
XVII)Oro Hershtein, Lucas. (2018). Ḥākimiyyah 2.0: construyendo un khilāfah virtual: Un análisis de la narrativa de Dābiq, la revista de Dāʿish (julio del 2014 a junio del 2016). Master thesis. Available at: http://sedici.unlp.edu.ar/discover?filtertype=author&filter_relational_operator=authority&filter=http://voc.sedici.unlp.edu.ar/node/60171
XVIII) Osborne, Alethea; Mhadeen Barik & Bondokji Neven (2017). Towards More Effective Human Security Approaches in the Context of the Emerging Threat of Violent Radicalisation in Jordan, Lebanon, and Tunisia. The Wana Institute, Arab Center for Security Studies. http://wanainstitute.org/sites/default/files/files/Publication_NWODeskReview_English.pdf
XIX) Ozeren, Suleyman, Hekim Hakan, Elmas Salih M. & Canbegi Halil Ibrahim. (2018). An Analysis of ISIS Propaganda and Recruitment Activities Targeting the Turkish-Speaking Population. International Annals of Criminology, Special Issue on Female Migration to ISIS. 56(1-2): 105-121.
XX) Putri, S. D., & Wahyudi, F. E. (2019). Cyber Terrorism: Strategi Propaganda dan Rekrutmen ISIS di Internet Dan Dampaknya Bagi Indonesia Tahun 2014-2019. Journal of International Relations, 5(4), 827-833.
XXI) Ramešová, Kristina (2020). Public Provocation to Commit a Terrorist Offence: Balancing between the Liberties and the Security. Masaryk University Journal of Law and Technology, 14(1):123-147.
XXII)Reed, Alastair; Ingram, Haroro J. & Whittaker Joe (2017). Countering Terrorist Narratives. Directorate General For Internal Policies, Policy Department for Citizens' Rights and Constitutional Affairs. Available at: https://openaccess.leidenuniv.nl/bitstream/handle/1887/62312/Reed-Ingram-Whittaker-Narratives.pdf?sequence=1
XXIII) Russ Scott & Rodger Shanahan (2018). Man Haron Monis and the Sydney Lindt Café Siege – Not a Terrorist Attack, Psychiatry, Psychology and Law, 25(6): 839-901, DOI: 10.1080/13218719.2018.1479941
XXIV) Thomas, Amy (2016). Counterterrorim or Vigilantism? The Cyber War Between ISIS and Anonymous. NCUR UNC Asheville, 30th Annual Conference, April 7-9 2016. Available at: http://www.ncurproceedings.org/ojs/index.php/NCUR2016/article/view/1772

7. Shamieh, Luna (2016). Az „Iszlám Állam" kommunikációs stratégiája és taktikája. Nemzet és Biztonság 3:18–41.

Cited by:

I) Bene Gyula alezredes (2019). A KÖZÖSSÉGI MÉDIA HATÁSA A HADSEREGRE ÉS A KATONÁKRA. Honvédségi Szemle. 147(2): 86-98

8. Shamieh Luna (2015). The rise of Islamic State of Iraq and Syria (ISIS). AARMS, Academic and Applied Research in Military and Public Management Science, vol. 14 (4). http://uni-nke.hu/uploads/media_items/aarms-vol-14_-issue4_-2015.original.pdf

Cited by:

I) Aboo Talib, Kartini; Helmy Muhammad & Munawar Ahmad (2019). Extremism: The Meaning and Context of Violence. Malaysian Journal of History, Politics & Strategic Studies, 46(2): 150-177.
II) Alitabar, M., Niakooee, A., Motaghi, E. (2018). Trump and the Middle East strategy of the U.S with emphasis on Syrian crisis: continuation or discontinuation. *World Politics*, 7(2), 173-202. doi: 10.22124/wp.2018.3091
III) Ahmed S. (2020) ISIS: The Special Relationship Between the United States, United Kingdom and Saudi Arabia. In: The 'War on Terror', State Crime & Radicalization. Palgrave Studies in Risk, Crime and Society. Palgrave Macmillan, Cham.
IV) Bryant Culp, Richard (2019). Expert on How the Islamic State Potentially Shaped the Future of Islamic Transnational Terrorism: An Exploratory Study. PhD Thesis, Walden University. Available at: https://scholarworks.waldenu.edu/dissertations/6885/
V) Culp, Richard Bryant, "Expert Perspectives on How the Islamic State Potentially Shaped the Future of Islamic Transnational Terrorism: An Exploratory Study" (2019). *Walden Dissertations and Doctoral Studies*. 6885,https://scholarworks.waldenu.edu/dissertations/6885
VI) Dolo, Tiril Johnson (2018). A feminist Perspective on Jihadist Women: A case Study on the Female Members of Islamic State. Master Thesis. Available at: https://nmbu.brage.unit.no/nmbu-xmlui/handle/11250/2586589
VII) Helvali, Nuran (2020). The Emergence and Rise of ISIS. A Master Thesis in Middle East Technical University. http://etd.lib.metu.edu.tr/upload/12625248/index.pdf
VIII) Łopuszańska Urszula, Adrianna Gierszon, Marzena Samardakiewicz (2020). Atheism and discrimination in the face of contemporary changes in the world. Culture – Society – Education, No. 1 (17): 289-297.
IX) Okorie Nelson, Lanre Amodu, Ajibade Jegede, Evaristus Adesina & Olomola Martins (2019). Global Media, Digital Journalism and the Question of Terrorism. Media Watch 10(2): 212-224. DOI:10.15655/mw/2019/v10i2/49619
X) Salman, S. (2020). IŞİD'in İdeolojisi: Cihadi Selefilik. Lectio Socialis, 4 (2), 97-112. Retrieved from https://dergipark.org.tr/en/pub/lectio/issue/56045/656669
XI) Thomas, Amy (2016). Counterterrorism or Vigilantism? The Cyber War between ISIS and Anonymous. NCUR UNC Asheville, 30th Annual Conference, April 7-9 2016. Available at: http://www.ncurproceedings.org/ojs/index.php/NCUR2016/article/view/1772

9. Shamieh Luna (2015). Demographic change and Human Security of Syrian Refugees in Jordan and Lebanon. Magyar Rendészet. XV. évfolyam 6.

   Cited by:

   I) Al Munajed Dima, Elizabeth Ekren (2020). Exploring the impact of multidimensional refugee vulnerability on distancing as a protective measure against COVID-19: The case of Syrian refugees in Lebanon and Turkey. Journal of Migration and Health: 1–2.

10. Shamieh Luna (2014). Human Security of Palestinian Refugees in the Arab World. HADTUDOMÁNYI SZEMLE, VII. évfolyam, 4. szám
11. Shamieh Luna, Dóra Molnár: The Impact of Counterinsurgency on Human Security. The case Study of Iraq (2003-2011). Hadtudomány (Military Science), XXX. évf. 2020/ E.